

Martin Camaj

Albanian Grammar

with Exercises, Chrestomathy and Glossaries

Collaborated on and translated by Leonard Fox



1984

Otto Harrassowitz · Wiesbaden

CIP-Kurztitelaufnahme der Deutschen Bibliothek

Camaj, Martin:

Albanian grammar: with exercises, chrestomathy
and glossaries / Martin Camaj. Collab. on and
transl. by Leonard Fox. — Wiesbaden.

Harrassowitz, 1984.

ISBN 3-447-02467-4

© Otto Harrassowitz, Wiesbaden 1984

Alle Rechte vorbehalten

Photographische und photomechanische Wiedergabe

nur mit ausdrücklicher Genehmigung des Verlages

Satz und Druck: Imprimerie Orientaliste, Leuven

Buchbinderische Weiterverarbeitung: Hubert & Co., Göttingen

Printed in Belgium

CONTENTS

FOREWORD	VII
SUGGESTIONS FOR THE USE OF THIS GRAMMAR	X
INTRODUCTION	XV
BIBLIOGRAPHICAL ABBREVIATIONS	XVII
ACCENTS AND DIACRITICS	XVII
ABBREVIATIONS	XVIII
I. PHONOLOGY	
<i>Pronunciation of the sounds §§ 2-5; brief phonological description</i> §§ 6-10	1
PROSODY (§ 11).	8
READING EXERCISE.	9
II. MORPHOLOGY	
NOUNS (§§ 12-68)	10
<i>Gender §§ 12-18; postpositive articles §§ 19-25; indefinite plurals</i> §§ 26-39; definite plurals §§ 40-42; special noun types §§ 43-45; <i>irregular plurals 46-47; declensions (Class 1 and Class 2) §§ 48-68</i>	
ADJECTIVES (§§ 69-91).	47
<i>Adjective classes §§ 69-71; Class 1 (formation and declension)</i> §§ 72-73; <i>Class 2 (formation and declension) §§ 74-85; compara-</i> <i>tive and superlative forms of the adjective §§ 86-91</i>	
ADVERBS AND PREPOSITIONS (§§ 92-103)	63
<i>Adverb types §§ 92-98; comparative form of the adverb §§ 99-102;</i> <i>prepositions §§ 103</i>	
NOUN FORMATION (§§ 104-107).	74
NUMBERS (§§ 108-116)	82
PRONOUNS (§§ 117-160)	90
<i>Personal pronouns §§ 122-127; reflexives § 128; demonstratives</i> §§ 129-133; <i>possessives §§ 134-142; reflexive possessives §§ 143-</i> §§ 144; <i>syntactic use of possessives §§ 145-146; interrogatives §§ 147-</i> §§ 149; <i>relatives §§ 150-153; indefinites §§ 154-157; reciprocal pro-</i> <i>nouns § 158; indeclinable indefinites §§ 159-160</i>	

VERBS (§§ 161-284)	126
<i>The verbal categories and their functions §§ 161-170; conjugation of the auxiliary verbs jam 'I am' and kam 'I have' § 171; modal verbs §§ 172-174; tense and aspect §§ 175-180; analytical tense forms §§ 181-187; moods and their functions §§ 188-193; non-finite forms of the verb (Participle, Infinitive and Gerund) §§ 194-199; verbal classes §§ 200-204; synthetic conjugation forms (present and preterite systems) §§ 205-232; construction and conjugation of the Medio-Passive §§ 233-249; impersonals §§ 250-251; verb formation §§ 252-261; the full conjugation paradigm §§ 262-280; irregular verbs §§ 281-284</i>	
 III. SYNTAX	
SENTENCE STRUCTURE (§§ 285-294)	233
COORDINATE CLAUSES (§§ 295-303)	242
<i>Correlative clauses § 299; disjunctive clauses § 300; adversative clauses § 301; resultative clauses § 302; clauses of uncertainty § 303</i>	
SUBORDINATE CLAUSES (§§ 304-317)	245
<i>Subject clauses § 308; object clauses § 309; attributive clauses § 310; temporal clauses § 311; causal clauses § 312; the conditional sentence § 313; modal clauses § 314; subordinate concessive clauses § 315; purposive clauses § 316; comparative clauses § 317</i>	
INDIRECT SPEECH (§§ 318-320)	256
KEY TO THE EXERCISES	257
CHRESTOMATHY	272
GLOSSARY	303
Albanian-English	303
English-Albanian	325
SUBJECT INDEX	335

FOREWORD

The present *Albanian Grammar* was originally conceived as a second edition of my *Lehrbuch der albanischen Sprache* (Otto Harrassowitz, Wiesbaden, 1969), which is now out of print. During more than a decade's use of this latter work as a textbook for my classes in Albanian (in my capacity as Professor of Albanian Studies at the University of Munich), I came to recognize certain weaknesses and shortcomings in it, some of which were also drawn to my attention by the remarks of students and colleagues. The elimination of such inadequacies and the incorporation of new material led to a change in the arrangement and consequently in the methodological process involved. As a result of this new conceptual approach, a completely new work resulted in which I have incorporated grammatical forms derived from the literary tradition, as well as from older Albanian texts and grammars, which were omitted from the *Lehrbuch*.

In view of the fact, therefore, that the *Albanian Grammar* and the *Lehrbuch der albanischen Sprache* represent two different aims and modes of presentation, the publishing firm of Otto Harrassowitz, Wiesbaden, is preparing a second edition of the *Lehrbuch* which will include corrections and a few minor additions.

This restructuring was, to a certain extent, also influenced by the language reform in Albania, begun in 1952 and officially completed in 1972. The results of this reform are incorporated in the present work, without regard to the personal opinions of the author respecting certain aspects of the "unified language".

The aim of this *Albanian Grammar* is to present a complete picture of the language in its three most important variants: Geg, Tosk and Arbëresh. Viewed methodologically, the contrasts among the three are presented here not only in the lexicon, but in all elements of the grammar, in order that an insight into the basic structure of the language (here also termed Common Albanian) may be obtained. The formation of the standardized literary language has, of course, also been based upon this procedure.

The following are presented in **notes**:

- a) particulars of Arbëresh;
- b) older linguistic phenomena documented in early authors and in archaic or peripheral dialects.

The **notes** attempt to complete the presentation of Albanian grammar by giving a diachronic dimension which will be of undoubted interest to linguistic historians.

In this *Albanian Grammar*, the Tosk variants are given in parentheses (cf. the *Lehrbuch*), as the Geg variants are more numerous and have all been included herein. It should be noted, however, that the occurrence of a variant outside of parentheses or **notes** does not imply any priority on the level of the standardized forms of the language.

In the interests of completeness, I did not want to omit either Tosk or Geg lexical variants which frequently occur in both the spoken and written language; they are presented with the sign ~ between them. Such doublets often arise in the plural, as e.g.: sg. *kopsht-i* 'garden'—pl. *kopshte* ~ *kopshtije* (Tosk *kopshtinj* ~ *qipshite*) 'gardens'. From among these variants *kopshte* was finally chosen as the standard form—in the glossary of the present work it is given in *italic*.

Taking account of the process of standardization, the exercises are translated in the *Key* from English into the contemporary official, normalized form of the language whose foundation is Tosk.

This *Albanian Grammar* is divided into three basic sections, aside from the Introduction: (I) **Phonology**, (II) **Morphology** and (III) **Syntax**. In the **Phonemic Changes** part of Section (I), dialectal transformations are given as well, in order to facilitate learning the spoken language and also for those who happen to speak one or another Albanian dialect with which they wish to compare the standard variants.

The **Morphology** is divided systematically into 19 chapters. Form and function are conceived as a unity, based upon which rules are constructed and illustrated by examples. At the end of each chapter or 'Lesson', exercises and texts in the normalized language are presented (together with appropriate Geg and Tosk variants, if any), so that clear access to the results of the language reform as expressed in the contemporary literary language is made possible. An attempt has been made throughout to bind together all the parts and phenomena of the language by means of copious examples in order to explain typologically, as well, the correlations of the language. In the morphological section of the book, great care has been taken with the word order in syntagms, as the order of words and their linkage by means of prepositive and postpositive elements or articles are fundamental characteristics of the language. In this manner, one part of the syntax is *de facto* built into the morphology in order to elucidate the analytical mechanism of Albanian directly in the structure of the syntagms.

The **Syntax** is comprised in one chapter or 'Lesson' and provides the essential structure of **clause construction**. The **Chrestomathy** which follows includes samples of the three variants of Albanian, as well as of the contemporary literary language. Finally, there is a **Glossary** to the whole

book *exclusive* of the Chrestomathy, and an Index which refers to paragraph numbers, rather than page numbers.

The material, form and divisions of this *Albanian Grammar* are naturally geared to the practical requirements of students interested in the language. At the same time, this book is also intended for young people of Albanian ancestry in the United States, Australia and elsewhere who have perhaps learned Geg or Tosk at home and who wish to master the contemporary literary language; this applies, as well, to the Italo-Albanians (Arbëresh) of Southern Italy who, for the first time in any Albanian grammar, will be able to compare the particular characteristics of their written or spoken dialect with those of Common Albanian. The interests of specialists and university students have, of course, also been taken into account. The author has always been closely connected with the latter and without their collaboration this grammar would never have been written.

I wish to thank Mr. Leonard Fox for translating this work from German, for preparing the *Key* by translating directly all the Albanian exercises, and for adapting various grammatical rules, explanations and vocabulary definitions to accommodate the special requirements of English-speaking students.

I am gratefully obliged to the publishing firm of Otto Harrassowitz, with which I have worked for many years, and especially to its Director, Dr. Helmut Petzolt, for their continual harmonious cooperation. I would also like to thank the Otto Harrassowitz Verlag for its fine typographical work, as well as for the handsome appearance of this book.

Munich, October 1983

Martin Camaj

SUGGESTIONS FOR THE USE OF THIS GRAMMAR

This book contains the fundamentals of Albanian differentiated into two aspects: the **grammar** of the language and its **application**.

The **grammar** comprises twenty sections, each with a series of rules and paradigms, as well as examples to illustrate the rules. From the very outset, the variants should also be noted, together with the specific correlation between these variants, in order that the total structure of Albanian be viewed as a whole.

The **application** is represented by the **exercises** at the end of each section, which are given in the most recent normalized variant, and a text in literary Geg. These are a preparation for the subsequent mastery of the complicated texts of the chrestomathy and their various vocabularies.

Those who are only interested in the contemporary official variant of Albanian should concentrate on the exercises and their translation into English. Once this is accomplished, they should be retranslated into Albanian. The *Key* to the exercises should be used in an intelligent manner, i.e. only as a check on comprehension. It should be borne in mind that the current variant of the language being used in Albania is young and still in the process of formation, so that forms and variants presented in this grammar may well be reactivated.

In order to maintain the proper dynamic connection between grammar and application, particularly at the beginning, it will be necessary for the student to refer back frequently to material already studied. In order to find words and linguistic phenomena more rapidly, the vocabulary and the index, which refers to the paragraphs into which the book is divided, will be quite helpful.

In studying this grammar, it is of major importance to take note of the formal combinations of small and large parts of speech and their order in the syntagms. Through these, paradigmatic markings and semantic differentiations take place.

A note on the exercises. In working through the exercises, the student will notice that some words used in these have been omitted from the vocabulary which immediately precedes them. This has been done deliberately with a view to encouraging active memorization of the words employed, all of which are to be found in the **Glossary** at the end of the book. In many cases, words used to illustrate grammatical rules in the body of the lesson are utilized in the exercises, but not repeated again in the vocabulary. The author's intention at all times has been to stimulate an active, rather than a passive, participation in learning Albanian.

INTRODUCTION

I. The Albanian language (**gjuha shqipe**) is the language of the Albanians (**shqiptarë** as they call themselves). Albanian is spoken primarily in the Socialist People's Republic of Albania (**Shqipëria—Shqipnia**). This country extends along the western part of the Balkan peninsula on the south-east coast of the Adriatic Sea between Epirus and Montenegro, and borders Greece and Yugoslavia on the south, east and north, while the sea forms its western boundary. As of 1980, the estimated population of Albania (28,748 square km) was 2,670,400.

As may be seen from the map, the inner part of the country is mountainous (average altitude 708 meters) and on the coast, mostly level. The northern Alps are over 2,000 meters high (cf. Jezerca 2,693 meters).

The climate is mediterranean with hot summers (up to 44°C) and a great deal of sun; the winters are marked by abundant rainfall (1300 mm. per year).

The largest rivers are Drini, Buna, Mati, Shkumbini, Semani, Vjosa, etc. Drini (285 km. long) is particularly important, as three large hydroelectric stations Fierza, Komani and Vau i Dëjës have been built on it during the last decades.

In earlier times the major sources of the economy were products of cattle breeding (dairy products, wool and, especially, leather for export) and agriculture. Due to the configuration of the country with its rich pastures in the mountains (**bjeshka** = the Alps) and almost evergreen valleys in winter (**vërria** = the winter places), a combination of agriculture and cattle breeding was developed. The outline (skeleton) of this economic structure was partially retained even after total collectivization and the building up of light and heavy industry.

II. Outside of the Socialist People's Republic of Albania, Albanian is spoken in Yugoslavia, i.e. in the Kosova Autonomous Region, in the republics of Macedonia and Montenegro, and in the settlement of **Arbë-nësh** (Arbanasi) near Zadar. The Albanians of Yugoslavia (1,730,000 in 1981) are Gëgs and use their mother-tongue in schools, in literature and science, on the stage and in mass media. Albanian-speaking people live scattered in various areas of Greece, in approximately 60 communities spread from the Abruzzi to Sicily in southern Italy, as well as in Turkey and the USA. The Albanians of southern Italy and Greece speak an archaic form of Tosk. The Italo-Albanians call themselves **arbëresh** (the rhotacized form of **Arbë-nësh** 'Albanians') and many of them maintain their language, customs and dress. Important authors have written in this idiom,

e.g. Jul Variboba (1725-1788), Nikola Keta (1742-1803), Jeronim De Rada (1814-1903), Zef Schirò (1865-1927) and others.

III. Approximately until the invasion of the Turks, the differences between the two major dialects (Geg and Tosk) were not as marked as today, as may be seen from the old religious texts. The independent development of the dialects was strengthened by the lack of contact among the inhabitants during the period of Ottoman domination.

Geg is spoken in the north of the country and Tosk in the south. The river Shkumbini is considered as the approximate dividing line. The essential differences between Tosk and Geg are:

1. The presence of nasal vowels in Geg and their absence in Tosk: **zâ** G.: **zë** T. 'voice', **pê** G.: **pe** T. 'thread'.
2. Intervocalic **n** is retained in Geg and transformed into **r** in Tosk (rhotacism): **zani** G.: **zëri** T. 'the voice', **peni** G.: **peri** T. 'the thread', **vena** G.: **vera** T. 'the wine'.
3. The Geg diphthong **-ue-** corresponds to **-ua-** in Tosk: **grue** (**grua**) 'woman', **shkue** (**shkuar**) 'having gone'. Both **ue/ua** derive from a long **-ō-** (***grō**, ***shkō**).
4. Initial **vo** in Geg corresponds to Tosk **va**: **voṭër** G.: **vatër** T. 'hearth', **vorfën** G.: **varfër** T. 'orphan', **vofj** G.: **vaj** T. 'oil'.

There exist other differences too, particularly in the morphology, e.g. the different forms of the future: **kam me shkue** G. (auxiliary verb **have** + **infinitive**) and **do të shkoj** T. (**I want** + **subjunctive**) 'I will go'. These differences, however, are gradually diminishing in the literary language and common forms are progressively coming into use in both dialects.

Notes

1. Arbëresh, in its conservative elements, i.e. aside from innovations developed in the course of its history on Italian soil, belongs to the Southern Albanian dialect group. The differences between Arbëresh and literary Tosk in phonology (cf. the contrast short/long in vowels) and morphology are not inconsiderable.
2. Arbëresh has its own future form, constructed with *ket* ~ *kat* (*ke*, *ka* 'you (sg.) have, he, she, it has' + *të* conjunction) + *present subjunctive*. *ket* ~ *kat qell* 'I will bring'.
3. In many Arbëresh dialects (cf. Maschito and Ginestra in the province of Campobasso) there is also a periphrastic form of the infinitive constructed with *pet* (*për të*) + *participle*: *pet qellur* 'in order to bring', as the Tosk *per të sjelle* ~ *sjellur* 'in order to bring' with consequent function.

IV. Aside from glosses in various texts and documents of the Middle Ages, the oldest examples of Albanian known until now are two sentences from the second half of the 15th century: the **baptismal formula** of 1462 and a sentence from the comedy 'Epirota', written in Latin by Thomas Medius in 1483.

The first books in Albanian begin with *Meshari* (missal) of Gjon **Buzuku** (1555) in Geg, followed by *E mbsuame e Krështerë* of Luka **Matranga** (1592) in Sicilian Arbëresh. Next in chronological order come the works of Pjetër **Budi** (1618-21): *Rituali Roman* (Rituale Romanum) and *Pasëqyra e t'Rrëfyemit* (Speculum Confessionis); then the Latin-Albanian dictionary (Dictionarium latino-epiroticum) of Frang **Bardhi** (1635) and later the monumental work, *Cuneus Prophetarum*, by Pjetër **Bogdani** (1685). Documentation in the Tosk variant begins later, also with translations of ritual books and texts. From Theodoros A. **Kavalliotis'** book, *Protopiris* (1770), in which there is a trilingual glossary, Albanian - Modern Greek - Aromun, we learn that some of the aforementioned Geg books were also known in the South of the country. The same holds true for the Arbëresh authors. They were acquainted with Buzuku's *Meshari* and other Geg ritual books up to Bogdani and Bardhi, so that communication among the three written Albanian variants — although in only one direction — is documented.

Albanian literature traces its origin, together with its linguistic and stylistic forms, to the rich oral literature of the people. As indicated above, Albanian belletristic writing begins with Bogdani's work *Cuneus Prophetarum* (1685) and with folk-poetry of religious content in the works of Budi in the North of the country, as well as with *Gjella e S. Mëriis* (1762) by Jul **Variboba** in Calabria (Italy). The latter works, although religious in content, are original compositions, i.e. not translations, like Gjon Buzuku's great work *Meshari* (1555). Albanian was artistically developed in oral literary creations. In the oral tradition, particularly in folk-ballads with fixed linguistic forms and metrics, super-regional *komë* were developed in the course of time, e.g. the Geg of the epic songs in the Shkodra region, which later influenced belletristic writing. It should also be noted that the poets of the Arbëresh variant, especially Jeronim De Rada, who achieved recognition in Europe for the high quality of their work, proceeded from the form and language of the folk-poetry of the Albanian villages of Southern Italy.

Less well known is the literature of oriental character, written in Arabic script, which reached its high point at the end of the 18th-beginning of the 19th centuries, especially with **Nazim Berati** (d. 1760), **Hasan Zyko Kamberi**, **Muhamet Kuçyku** (1784-1844) and others. The centers of this literary movement were the then important trade and administrative cities of Berat, Korça and Shkodra, as well as the cultural centers of Kosova, such as Gjakova.

V. Albanian is an **Indo-European** language and forms a special branch within that family. In the earliest phase of research, it was classed with Balto-Slavic, due to its *satem* character. From the beginning, Albanian was connected with Illyrian, Thracian or Dacian, for which languages no

written records exist. Linguists and historians are, however, unanimous in believing that Albanian is descended from one of these languages, although two divergent opinions have appeared, one for the Illyrian theory, the other for the Thracian one. As a compromise solution, there is a third theory according to which Albanian is the result of a mixture of Illyrian and Thracian or Dacian elements.

The Illyrian thesis is winning more and more support. In its support it has been shown that the Doric borrowings are the oldest among those from Greek in Albanian. There is also the fact that the old denomination **arbënesh** ~ **arbëresh** 'Albanian', the name of an Illyrian tribe, is *albanoi* in modern Central Albania, and a number of ancient place names in former Illyrian districts may be explained by means of Albanian words. The ultimate proof of this thesis, however, is dependent upon the complex questions of the Illyrians in general and, in particular, upon the relationship of the Illyrian language, with the language of the Messapians (cf. E. Hamp, *Albanian and Messapic*. Studies presented to J. Whatmough, 1957). Research, especially in Italy, has proceeded apace with the decipherment of the remains of Messapian which have been discovered in the southwestern part of that country. There is unanimous agreement that Messapian belongs to Illyrian.

VI. Albanian, as a **Balkan language**, developed into its present form, with certainty, primarily in the western part of the Balkan peninsula. By means of earlier analytical research methods and current structural and typological methods, the conclusion has been reached that the language took over, with incredible integrative power, words from various phases of development of Romance and Greek. Borrowings from these languages were easily integrated and, perhaps through long practice with borrowings, changed from their original form to the point of unrecognizability according to the phonetic laws of Albanian. Cf., for example, **mbret** 'king' from Lat. *imperatorem*. Part of the lexical borrowings were given up, according to requirements, or replaced with words from Slavic or Oriental languages. From an examination of the lexicon, scholars who did not know Albanian often had the impression that the language was a hybrid without an individual system. Students of Albanian immediately -- and justifiably -- notice the uniqueness of its phonological and morphological system. One of the basic features of Albanian, as a typical Balkan language, is its analytical character, exhibited in the declension system with its prepositive and postpositive articles, as well as the combination of synthetic and analytic in the verbal system.

VII. **Literary Albanian** has a tradition of more than 500 years. Scholars are of the opinion that the development process of the modern structure of

Albanian had been completed by the period of documentation (cf. Buzuku, 1555). This does not imply, however, that Albanian has not developed further since that period. The main focus of diachronic differentiations (16th century structure - 20th century structure), on the one hand, and the reason for the further separation of the dialects, on the other, was the rise of the periphrastic system in the verbal area. The periphrastic constructions, first of all on the syntactic level, brought about changes in other parts of the grammar, such as the pronominal system, and also caused the disappearance of the old verbal classes which had been constructed synthetically with functions of aspect and modality (cf. the traces in verb formation, Lesson 18).

The further development of Common Albanian since the 16th century has also hindered agreement among Albanians from the beginning of this century until today on the correct methods for normalizing the literary language. Decisive roles were frequently played in discussions on this issue by emotional factors of an extra-linguistic nature, which cannot be detailed here. Certainly, a thorough knowledge of the older texts, particularly those in Geg which are close to the structure of Tosk, would have helped to solve many problems in the standardization of the literary language easily and painlessly. The texts, however, remained unknown until quite late.

The lack of knowledge regarding the earlier phase of Albanian in general through texts and conservative dialect branches was recognized by the ideologues of the Albanian renaissance (*Rilindja*); everyone, though, spoke of the necessity for a unified literary language and everyone had his own ideas about it (cf. the periodical "Albania", 1897-1908). The concrete initiative in this direction was taken in 1908 at the *Congress of Manastir*, where it was decided to accept the Latin alphabet. Some years later, the *Albanesische Grammatik im südgegischen Dialekt* (Durazzo, Elbasan, Tirana) by Prof. Dr. Gustav Weigand appeared in Leipzig (1913). Weigand wished to suggest that the dialect of this zone (with Elbasan as the center) should serve as the basis for the construction of "the national language". In 1916, the society *Komisia letrare shqipe* was founded in Shkodra. One of the members was Aleksandër Xhuvani from Elbasan, a pioneer in the area of language standardization and Albanian linguistics. It was decided by this society that the dialect of Elbasan, which was the closest of the Geg dialects to Tosk, should be the foundation for the future national language. The problem was also viewed from the practical standpoint and a seminar for teachers was started whose first director was Luigj Gurakuqi (author and statesman). The teachers trained there contributed to a better understanding of both dialects in their written and spoken forms. *Komisia letrare shqipe* published a brochure in 1918 which indicated the common features of both language variants and also fixed logical orthographic rules for them.

“The convergent rapprochement” of the two dialects remained a principle until 1952, when an administrative decision was made in Tirana that the unified national language would be based on the Tosk variant. A conference was organized at the then existing Institute of Sciences regarding the ways and means to be employed in the realization of the program. There was considerable opposition from the members of the Institute (cf. parts of the speeches and discussions in *Buletin i Institutit të Shkencave*, IV, 1952). “People’s Teacher” Aleksandër Xhuvani, on the other hand, did not openly oppose the precedence of one dialect over the other, but suggested that the change should be made in an evolutionary manner over three generations. After the scholarly and practical argumentation, the old master recalled the words of Stalin: “Marxism does not accept a sudden explosion in the development of language.” Xhuvani added that one cannot “cast off like an old coat (*si gunë të vjetër*) or consign to a museum” the language of a large part of the people.

The Albanologist Max Lambertz (University of Leipzig) also disapproved of these measures (cf. *Lehrgang des Albanischen*, II, Berlin, 1955) and was tireless in his appeals until it was made clear to him from the highest authority that the decision was a political one.

Even after 1952, Geg was utilized as a literary language, although this is not officially recognized today; since 1972, however, no new literary texts in Geg have been published in Albania.

The official language took over from Geg part of the vocabulary and patterns of word-formation, as well as a good deal of phraseology and other features, so that in its present state, it cannot be identified with pre-1952 literary Tosk. Geg developed further not only in Kosova, but also in Albania on the basis of the southern Geg dialects and even more under the strong influence of the new language variant called the *national language*. Many today — including the recently deceased linguist Eqrem Çabej, who had never accepted the methods of this language reform — are of the opinion that the two language variants have come so close to each other that they differ only in about five phonological and morphological characteristics (see above, p. XII). It is possible that these may eventually become free variants.

For someone who writes an Albanian grammar today, it is not easy if — like the author of the present work — he also wishes to make a scholarly contribution to the subject. In order to understand the special character of Albanian, one must bear in mind that the language was reduced to writing quite late in its history, that it is, in fact, a “natural language” which developed in spoken form, from which its tradition arose.

The structure of this book (*grammar* with old and new variants which find *application* in various ways in texts) was dictated by these circumstances.

BIBLIOGRAPHICAL ABBREVIATIONS

- Buzuku** (1555) – **Gjon Buzuku**. *Meshari* (Missale). 1555. (Unique copy in the Biblioteca Apostolica Vaticana.) 1. Reproduction and transcription by **Namik Ressuli**. *Il "Messale" di Giovanni Buzuku*. Roma, 1958. 2 **Eqrem Çabej**. "Meshari" i Gjon Buzukut - 1555 - *Botim kritik*. Vols. I-II Tirana, 1968.
- Da Lecce** (1716) = **Francesco Maria Da Lecce**. *Osservazioni grammaticali nella lingua albanese*. Roma, 1716.
- Vilará** (1801) = **J. Vilará**. "Greek-Albanian Grammar" 1801 (MS in the Bibliothèque Nationale, Paris, here, in the transcribed text by Titos Jochalas)
- De Rada** (1871) = **Giuseppe De Rada**. *Grammatica della lingua albanese* Firenze, 1871.
- Kristoforidhi** (1882) = **Konstantin Kristoforidhi**. *Γραμματική της Ἀλβανικῆς γλώσσης* Constantinople, 1882.

ACCENTS AND DIACRITICS

- (á) = indicates the stress in polysyllabic words **máleve** 'to the mountains'; indicates vowel length in monosyllabic words. **dét** – phonetically [dēt] 'sea'
- (â) = indicates nasality and, simultaneously, in polysyllabic words marks the stress: **katallâ** 'cyclops', long nasals are indicated phonetically by [˘] [gǰâ] 'thing'
- ā = phonetic diacritic indicating length: [kā] 'ox'
- ă = phonetic diacritic indicating brevity [păt] 'he had'
- ~ = variant. **njeri** ~ **njëri** (Geg) 'person'
- > = becomes
- < = derives from (diachronically)
- [] = brackets for phonetic transcription
- ∅ = zero morpheme
- * = reconstructed form
- = = used between two forms which may be substituted for each other
- √ = root

Notes

1. The stress /' / is not marked in Albanian texts as a rule. It has been marked in this *Albanian Grammar* (including the texts in the *Chrestomathy*) for didactic purposes, except for paroxytonic words (stressed on the penultimate syllable) which are most frequent in Albanian. Monosyllabic words have been marked with a stress sign whenever the stressed vowel is long: *pá* [pā] 'seen'. In words such as these stress and vowel length coincide.
2. Geg writers have used the stress sign /' / to mark vowel length not only in monosyllabic but also polysyllabic words: *qeveri* [qeverī] 'government'. In modern Geg texts vowel length and stress coincide as a rule. This did not always occur in old Geg texts. In Buzuku's 'Missal' (1555), unstressed vowels occur that are long *te penđuom* [te penđuom] 'penitence'

ABBREVIATIONS

Abl.	Ablative	Indic.	Indicative
Acc.	Accusative	Inf.	Infinitive
adj.	adjective	Ital.	Italian
Adm.	Admirative	Lat.	Latin
adv.	adverb	lit.	literal, literally
Alb.	Albanian	m.	masculine
Aor	Aorist	Med.-Pass.	Medio-Passive
Arb	Arbëresh	n.	neuter
coll.	collective	Nom.	Nominative
		No.	Note
		Opt.	Optative
Com. Alb.	Common Albanian	Part(ic).	Participle
cf.	compare	part.	particle
Dat.	Dative	Pass.	Passive
def.	definite	Perf.	Perfect
Eng.	English	pers.	person
exp.	expressive	Plupf.	Pluperfect
f	feminine	pl.	plural
Fut	Future	prep.	preposition
G.	Geg	Pres.	Present
Gen	Genitive	refl.	reflexive
Ger.	German	sg.	singular
idem	the same	Subj.	Subjunctive
Imp.	Imperative	T.	Tosk
Imperf.	Imperfect	vb.	verb
indef.	indefinite	Voc.	Vocative

I. PHONOLOGY

1. Due to various cultural influences, the Albanians obtained a common alphabet only in 1908. Until then, those with western culture had used Latin letters, while the Orthodox of southern Albania had used Greek letters, mostly with certain alterations. There are also many Albanian works written in the Arabic alphabet, derived through Ottoman. At the Congress of Monastir (Bitola) in 1908, in which Albanian scholars and writers took part, the Latin alphabet was accepted as the common one. In contrast to this, Albanologists used the transcription system of Gustav Meyer in scholarly literature. This system is given in parentheses below, following the official one, while the IPA transcription is given in square brackets wherever there is a divergence.

Pronunciation of the Sounds

Vowels

2. a e ě i o u y

Geg nasalized vowels: **â ê î û ŷ** (ą ç etc.): **zâ** 'voice', **pê** 'thread', **hî** 'ashes', **û** 'hunger', **sŷ** 'eye'. Tosk has no nasal vowels: Geg **â** corresponds to Tosk **ë**, cf. **zâ** G. **zë** T. 'voice'. **ë** (ɛ) [ə] is the 'indistinct vowel' (Alb. **e-ja e pazane** = lit. voiceless e). It sounds like *u* in Eng. *but* or *a* in *sofa*: **i vogël** 'small', **punë** 'work', **dorë** 'hand', **shtëpi** 'house', **këndóĵ** 'sing'. In Geg, particularly in final position, **-ë** disappears and the preceding stressed syllable is lengthened: **hanë** [hān] 'they eat'. **y** sounds like German **ü** or French **u**: **gjysmë** 'half', **ylberi** 'rainbow'.

Diphthongs

3. Albanian has many diphthongs. The most important are **ie ye ue (ua)**. Other diphthongs result from combinations of **a e o** with **i** (pronounced as **j**): **ai ei oi**. Still others result from combinations of **a e** with **u**: **au eu**.

Consonants

4. **Nasals**: **m** (m) — a voiced bilabial nasal: **dam** 'harm', **tym** 'smoke'.
n (n) — a voiced alveolar nasal: **natë** 'night', **janë** 'they are'.
ñj (ń) [ɲ] — a voiced palatal nasal, cf. Eng. *new*: **njoh** 'I know', **nji** 'one'.
Laterals: **l** (l) — a voiced alveolar lateral: **lule** 'flower', **lopë** 'cow'.
ll (l) — a voiced dental-velar lateral, approximately Eng. *hill*: **mulli** 'mill', **mollë** 'apple'.

Vibrants: alveolar **r** (r): **urë** 'bridge', and strongly trilled **rr** (r̄): **rrugë** 'street', **burrë** 'man'.

Stops: **p** (p) — voiceless bilabial stop unaspirated (Eng. *spot*): **popull** 'people', **patë** 'goose'.

b (b) — a voiced bilabial stop: **borë** 'snow', **bir** 'son'.

t (t) — a voiceless post-dental stop, unaspirated (Eng. *stop*): **Tirana**, **tra** 'beam, rafter'.

d (d) — a voiced post-dental stop: **dritë** 'light', **dam** 'harm', **det** 'sea'.

k (k) — a voiceless velar stop, unaspirated (Eng. *score*): **bukë** 'bread', **tokë** 'land'.

g (g) — a voiced velar stop: **gur** 'stone', **larg** 'far'.

q (k̠) [c] — a voiceless palatal stop, approximately k¹, but also pronounced as a weak palato-alveolar affricate in many Geg-speaking areas: **qafë** 'throat', **qytët** 'city'.

gj (ġ) [j] — a voiced palatal stop, approximately g², but also pronounced as a weak palato-alveolar affricate in many Geg-speaking areas: **gjumë** 'sleep', **gjanë** 'broad'.

Affricates and fricatives: **c** (ts) — a voiceless alveolar stop (cf. Eng. *cats*): **dac** 'tomcat', **cucë** 'girl'.

x (d͡z) — a voiced alveolar affricate (cf. Eng. *adze*): **xehë** 'mine', **nxxanës** 'pupil'.

ç (t͡ʃ) [t͡ʃ] — a voiceless palato-alveolar medial affricate (Eng. *church*): **çerdhë** 'nest', **çorbë** 'soup'.

xh (d͡ʒ) [d͡ʒ] — a voiced palato-alveolar affricate (Eng. *job*): **xhadë** 'street', **xhakue** 'deacon'.

s (s) — a voiceless post-dental fricative: **sanë** 'hay', **sot** 'today'.

z (z) — a voiced post-dental fricative: **zojë** 'woman', **zog** 'bird'.

sh (ʃ) [ʃ] — a voiceless palato-alveolar fricative: **shumë** 'much', **sharrë** 'saw'.

zh (ʒ) [ʒ] — a voiced palato-alveolar fricative (Eng. *azure*): **zhur** 'gravel'.

f (f) — a voiceless labio-dental fricative: **kafë** 'coffee', **kufi** 'border'.

v (v) — a voiced labio-dental fricative: **votër** 'hearth', **vjet** 'year'.

th (θ) [θ] — a voiceless apico-dental fricative (Eng. *think*): **thikë** 'knife', **thom** 'I say'.

dh [ð] [d̪] — a voiced apico-alveolar fricative (Eng. *that*): **dhomë** 'room', **dhetë** (**dhjetë**) 'ten'.

h (h) — a weak voiceless glottal fricative: **hollë** 'thin', **kohë** 'time'.

j (j) — a voiced palatal fricative (Eng. *young*): **jetë** 'life', **jashtë** 'outside'.

Summary of the Sounds

5. Vowels:

i y u
e ë o
a

Diphthongs:	ai ei oi au eu ie ye ua (ue)
Nasals:	m n nj
Laterals:	l ll
Vibrants:	r rr
Stops:	p b t d k g q gj
Affricates and fricatives:	c x ç xh s z sh zh f v th dh h j

Brief Phonological Description

The Consonant System

6. Albanian has 29 consonant phonemes: b c ç d dh f g gj h j k l ll m n nj p q r rr s sh t th v x xh z zh.

It should be noted that no special considerations are made here for either the dialect richest in phonemes or that poorest (coincidence of ç and q in northeast Geg).

7. In the consonant system the following correlations may be established:

I. Correlation of voice:

p	t	k	q	c	ç	s	sh	f	th	voiceless
b	d	g	gj	x	xh	z	zh	v	dh	voiced

The sonants (**j**, **l ll**, **r rr**, **m**, **n**, **j**) do not take part in the voice correlation, as they occur only as voiced sounds; **h** occurs only as a voiceless sound.

II. Correlation of palatalization:

n	ç	xh	ll	unpalatalized
nj	q	gj	l	palatalized

According to the dialect, **l** and **r** are more strongly or more weakly softened. In the Arbëresh dialects (Italy), **l** attains a high degree of palatalization (l').

III. Correlation of nasality:

d	b	gj	oral
n	m	nj	nasal

In his section on the correlation of *approximates* or *stops*, Trubetzkoy (*Grundzüge der Phonologie*) considers also Albanian:

IV. c x ç xh affricates
s z sh zh fricatives

To the correlation of approximates belong too:

V. p b bilabials
f v labiodentals

and

VI. t d postdentals
th dh apico-dental fricatives

Phonemic Changes

8. Phonemic changes (assimilations) frequently occur as dialectal distinguishing features. Naturally, these differences do not appear in the Albanian literary language where the tendency is to select and promote one particular form. For example:

I. The union of the phonemes **t** and **sh** in Geg yield the single phoneme **ç**: **i motshëm** = **i moçëm** 'old', **vjetsh** Abl. usually yields **vjeç** (cf. **ai âsht njëzét vjeç** 'he is 20 years old').

II. The union of the nasal **n** and the stop **g** (**ng**) in several northern Geg dialects is pronounced as the single phoneme [ŋ], i.e. as a velar nasal: **nga** [ŋa] 'from', **kangë** [kaŋə] 'song'.

In the combination **n + gj** there is a slight initial palatalization: **ngj** > **njj** [ɲj]: **ngjalë** [ɲjalë] 'eel'. In the northern Geg dialects **n + gj** > **nj**: **njalë** 'idem.', **ungjill** 'Evangel' > **unjill** 'idem.'.

In Shkodra **n + d** is pronounced with a unitary articulatory movement. In articulation the tip of the tongue covers the upper teeth, while breath is expelled through the nose. Earlier authors from this city wrote this phoneme as **nn**. It can be denoted as an apico-dental nasal. In eastern Geg this reductive process goes further still and ends with the total disappearance of the dental: **nd** > **n**: **ndera** 'honor' > **nera** 'idem.', **ndrikulla** 'the godmother' > **nríkulla** 'idem.'.

n + x [n+ǰz] (postdental nasalized affricate) represents originally the adaptation of the sounds **n + z** (nasal + alveodental fricative) where a (**d**) has disappeared in the meantime — **n(d) + z** > **nx**: **n(d)-zâ** > **nxâ** 'I learn' (**zâ** 'grasp'), **nxij** 'I blacken' (**n[d]-zij**).

III. **mb** [mb] (nasalized bilabial) is, on the evidence of the old authors (cf. among others Buzuku, 1555), the result of **n + p** or **n + b**: **npasi** (**n + pasi**) > **mbasi** 'afterwards', **nbaston** > **mbastón** 'it is enough' (from Ital. *bastare*).

In eastern Geg **mb** becomes **m**: **mbasi** > **masi** 'afterwards', **mbastón** > **mastón** 'it is enough'.

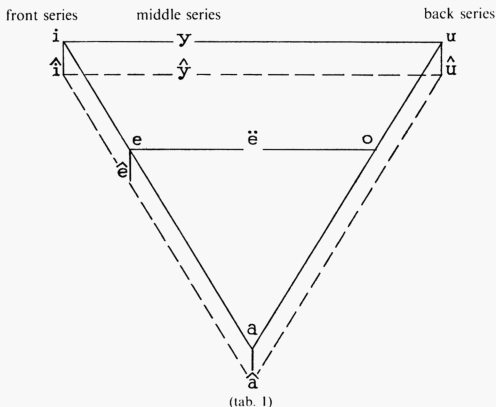
IV. The change of the cluster **gt** to **kt** may be termed a facultative reflective phonemic alteration: **shteg-tar** > **shtek-tár** 'traveller', **treg-tar** > **trek-tár** 'merchant'. Voiceless **s**, **sh** are always pronounced **z**, **zh** before voiced phonemes: **skuq** 'blush', **zbath** 'remove shoes or socks', **shkul** in contrast with **zhgul** 'free, pull out', **shgun** > **zhgun** 'woollen material', **shgjetë** > **zhgjetë** 'arrow'.

The Vowel System

9. Because Geg has nasal vowels as well as oral vowels, it has more minimal pairs than Tosk. For that reason, the vowel system of each is presented separately.

I. There are 12 vowel phonemes in Geg:

i e ë a o u y oral
 î ê â û ÿ nasal



It should be noted that nasalization is never present in the rounded vowel **o** and very seldom in the rounded sound **y**. In the last decades, the nasal vowels of the Geg literary variant are almost never indicated by means of the diacritic except in cases where there is a question of relevant meaning:

âsht 'he, she, it is' — **asht** 'bone'. In this grammar nasalization will also be indicated in those forms where **n** has dropped out, but has left its nasal quality on the foregoing vowel: **zâ** 'voice' — **zani** 'the voice', **gjâja** 'the thing' (< **gjanja**).

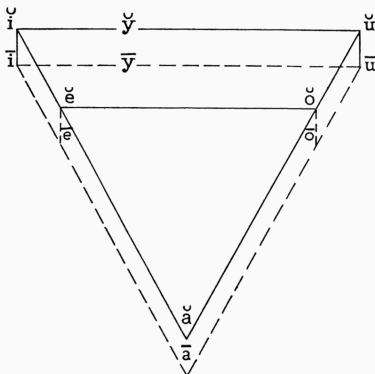
The older Geg authors indicated nasality by **-n-** (vowel + **n**): **anshtë** 'he, she, it is'.

In contrast to Tosk, Geg has long and short vowels which are functionally relevant: participle **rrit** (**rritë**) 'grown': imperative **rrit** 'grow!', **dhë** 'earth': **dhë** 'and', **lë** 'born': **lë** 'let!', **ju pāt** 'you (pl.) saw': **ai pāt** 'he had' (aorist), **dÿ** m.: **dÿ** f. 'two', sg. **gūr** 'stone': pl. **gūr** 'stones', **drōn** (**dronë** T.) 'they fear': **drōn** 'he fears', **shūm** (**shumë** T.) 'sum': **shūm** 'much', **i frÿt** (**frytë** T.) 'thick': **frÿt** 'fruit' (cf. tab. 2).

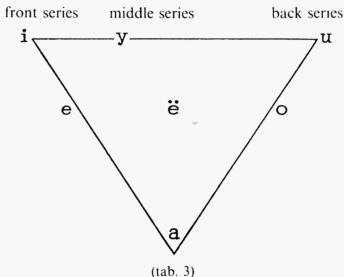
II. In Tosk there are 7 vowel phonemes:

i e ë a o u y oral (cf. tab. 3)

In the current Albanian official language in Albania and in Kosova this system is used.

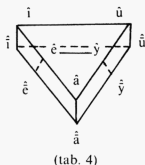


(tab. 2)



Notes

1. In Old Albanian, all vowels had both long and short values. The long vowels were represented graphically in old texts by a doubling of the respective letter *syy* 'eye'. Based upon Vilará's orthography (1801), such examples of long vowels are also attested in Tosk until the beginning of the 19th century: *kam raar* [rār] 'ἔχω πέση'
2. Correlative to the short and long oral vowels, there are still infrequent cases of phonological relevance involving short and long nasal vowels: *vê* 'place' (imperative 2 sg.) *vễ* 'I place'.



The Diphthong Phonemes

10. In contemporary grammars published in Tirana, diphthongs are not registered, since the combination of two vowels in the current official language is considered as two vocalic phonemes.

Notes

1. *Phonemic changes* with semantic function will be treated in the appropriate morphological sections of the *Albanian Grammar*. These include, among others,

diphthongization ($o > ua ue, e > ye$) and monophthongization ($ua'ue > u, ye > e, ie > i$).

2. Characteristic of the dialect branch of Dibra, Mati and Mirdita (Middle Eastern Geg) is the diphthongization of accented vowel i : $i > ai \sim ei$ (*mirë > mar ~ mëir* 'good').

Prosody

11. The stress is expiratory, immovable and rests on the same syllable. Exceptions: sg. **gjarpën** (**gjarpër**) m. 'snake' pl. **gjarpinj** (**gjarpinj**), sg. **shkop** m. 'stick' pl. **shkopij** (**shkopinj**), sg. **madh** 'large' pl. **mëdhëj** (**mëdhënj**). In the construction of nouns, the stress moves to the suffix: **punë** 'work' - **punëtór** 'worker', **katúnd** 'village' - **katundár** 'peasant'. Proceeding from the definite form (**katundári**, **punëtóri**), it may be said that in general the stress lies on the penultimate syllable. In several word pairs, the stress may be relevant: **bári** 'the grass' - **barí** 'herd', **móri** 'took' (Aor.), **mori** 'quantity'. Arbëresh. **náni** 'still more' - **nani** 'just now'.

Notes on the phonological system of Arbëresh

1. Taking the consonant system of Common Albanian as a basis, the following consonants are in evidence in the written dialects of Arbëresh.

Nasals: m n nj

Laterals: l (> ð in Falconara) lj /ʎ/ ll (> gh γ)

Vibrants: r rr

Stops: p b t d k g q/ǰ (as in Tosk)

Affricates and fricatives: c/x ç/xh s z sh/zh f v th/dh h (> gh γ) hj j

In many Arbëresh dialects there is an instability, i.e. a tendency toward substitution of a) *gh γ* for *ll* (cf. *Piana e Arbëreshëvet* near Palermo, *velar fricative* or simple *postvelar molla > mogha* 'the apple'); after stressed *u* there is even a disappearance of *ll*, as in *Greci: uthull > uthu* 'vinegar', b) *h* becomes voiced *gh γ'* (voiced fricative) in *S. Demetrio Corone, Macchia* (dialect of the poet *Jeronim De Rada*).

2. In contrast with common Albanian, the vowel system of Arbëresh lacks the phoneme y , which is replaced with i : $sy > sí$ 'eye'. Thus Arbëresh has 6 vocalic phonemes:

i				u
e		ë	o	
		a		

The difference between stressed \bar{e} (*hëna* 'moon') and unstressed \acute{e} (*nënë* 'mother') is striking, older Arbëresh authors frequently used two distinct graphemes for these

3. As in Geg, the Arbëresh vowels in stressed position may be *short* or *long* with consequent semantic relevance:

\bar{u} 'I' - \acute{u} 'hunger'

Reading Exercise

Ujku e poçari

The Wolf and the Potter

GEG

Ujku i malit kishte ngranë shumë dele të katundit.

The wolf of the mountain had eaten many of the village's sheep.

U mblodhën baritë e katundit e shkuen në mal

The shepherds of the village gathered and went to the mountains

të vrasin ujkun. Bashkë me bari vojtë edhe një poçar

to kill the wolf. Together with the shepherds also went a potter

me vrá ujkun. Tue ikë, i tha ujku poçarit:

to kill the wolf. Fleeing, the wolf said to the potter:

— **Njeri i mirë, këtyne njërzëve u kam faj, por ty çka të bana?**

“Good man, I am guilty before these people, but what have I done to you?”

A të ngrana ndonji poç?

Have I eaten any pot of yours?”

TOSK

Ujku i malit kishte ngrënë shumë dele të fshatit.

U mblodhën barinjte e fshatit e shkuan në mal

të vrasin ujkun. Bashkë me barinj vajti edhe një poçar

për të vrarë ujkun. Duke ikur, i tha ujku poçarit:

— **Njeri i mirë, këtyre njërzëve u kam borxh, por ty ç' të bëra?**

A të hëngra ndonjë poç?

II. MORPHOLOGY

Lesson I — Leksioni i parë

Noun

12. Contemporary Albanian has two **genders**, masculine and feminine; the neuter gender has almost disappeared.

13. Those nouns are masculine which, in the indefinite form,

a) end in a *consonant*:

gjak	blood	vesh	car
dreq	devil	gur	stone
fis	race, stock	zjarm (zjarr)	fire

b) Some masculine nouns end in a stressed vowel. As stated in the explanation of accents and diacritics (p. xvii), the accent marks the stress in polysyllabic words; in monosyllabic words, however, such as those below, it also marks the length of the vowel. Final stressed vowels are also mostly long (cf. § 16):

ká	ox	shí	rain
vëllá	brother	vá	ford
dhé	earth	dét	sea

To this group also belong nouns in a stressed vowel whose stem (e.g. in the definite form) exhibits an **n** which has disappeared in final position. The Tosk variants without nasals and with their rhotacized forms behave in the same manner (as illustrated by the forms in parentheses).

indef.		def.	
hî (hi)	ashes	hîni (hiri)	the ashes
mulli (mulli)	mill	mullini (mulliri)	the mill
zâ (zë)	voice	zâni (zëri)	the voice
brî (bri)	horn	brîni (briri)	the horn
gjû (gju)	knee	gjûni (gjuri)	the knee
frê (fre)	bridle	frêni (freri)	the bridle
drÿ	lock bolt	drÿni	the lock bolt

The basic rule holds true that gender is known from the definite form. This explains the many exceptions to the (b) rule, as discussed in the following lesson. It should be noted that from this point on, the final nasal vowel is marked as such only in the indefinite form, since generally if the morpheme **n** appears, as here in the definite form, it marks nasality by itself: **zâ** — **zani**, **hî** — **hîni**, etc. The same holds for nasal vowels followed by **m**: **bâ** 'done', but **bame** '(we) did'.

14. The old neuter occurs very seldom in Modern Albanian. It may be recognized only in the definite form, i.e. by the ending **-të, -ët**:

indef.		def.	
mish	meat	mishtë	the meat
miell	flour	mielltë	the flour
djathë	cheese	djathët	the cheese
gjalpë	butter	gjalpët	the butter
drithë	grain	drithët	the grain
ballë	forehead	ballët	the forehead

This category of neuters, denoting names of substances (originally also parts of the body, etc.) is found in older texts and still today in dialects. In the course of time, they have become masculines: **mish-i** m., **djathë-i** m., **drithë-i** m.

Vocabulary

(Because it is frequently difficult to predict the plural of many nouns in Albanian, the following system will be used in each lesson's vocabulary: the noun in its indefinite form followed by the appropriate definite affix, the Tosk variant, if any, in parentheses, the English meaning and finally, the pluralizing suffix or special plural form of the word.

Example. **dimën** indef., **dimni** def. (**dimër, dimri**) Tosk variant, indef. and def. 'winter' **dimna** indef. pl. (**dimra**) Tosk variant. Although the definite forms are not introduced until Lesson 3 and the plurals until Lesson 4, all forms given in the vocabularies should be memorized from the outset.)

<i>vatër-votra</i> (<i>vatër-vatra</i>)	hearth	<i>kush</i>	who?
<i>votra</i> (<i>vatra</i>)		<i>tjetër</i>	other
<i>shi-u</i>	rain	<i>sitë-a</i>	sieve -a
<i>breshën-breshni</i> (<i>breshër-breshri</i>)		<i>pa</i>	without
hail		<i>rë-ja</i>	cloud -∅
<i>borë-a</i>	snow	<i>çka</i>	what
<i>bie shi</i>	it is raining	<i>muse-nusja</i>	bride, girl -∅
<i>bie breshën</i> (<i>breshër</i>)	it is hailing	<i>nji</i> (<i>një</i>)	one
<i>bie borë</i>	it is snowing	<i>tre</i>	m. three
<i>diell-i</i>	sun <i>diej</i>	<i>as</i>	not even
<i>bie dielli</i>	the sun is shining	<i>sot</i>	today
(lit. 'the sun falls)		<i>a</i>	interrogative particle
<i>qytët-i</i>	city -e	<i>po</i>	yes
<i>durim</i>	patience -e	<i>atjë</i>	there
<i>mëngjës-i</i>	morning -e	<i>këtu</i>	here
<i>Zoja</i>	woman's name	<i>në</i>	in, at

<i>e</i> and	<i>s'</i> not
<i>por</i> but	<i>me</i> with
<i>gjâ-ja</i> (<i>gjê-ja</i>) thing <i>gjana</i> (<i>gjëra</i>)	<i>brez-i</i> belt - <i>a</i>
<i>gjâ e gjâzë</i> (<i>gjê e gjëzë</i>) riddle	<i>ylbër-i</i> rainbow - <i>e</i>
<i>gjâ e gjâza</i> (<i>gjê e gjëza</i>)	<i>faqekuqe</i> f. red-cheeked
<i>ha</i> eats	<i>mollë-a</i> apple $\emptyset \sim a$
<i>qet</i> puts out, produces	

Present Indicative

<i>(unë) kam</i> I have	<i>(unë) jam</i> I am
<i>(ti) ke</i> you (sg.) have	<i>(ti) je</i> you (sg.) are
<i>(ai, ajo) ka</i> he, she has; there is	<i>(ai, ajo) është</i> (<i>është</i>) he, she is
<i>(na~ne) kemi</i> we have	<i>(na~ne) jemi</i> we are
<i>(ju) kem~kimi</i> you (pl.) have	<i>(ju) jeni</i> you (pl.) are
<i>(ata, ato) kanë</i> they (m. & f.) have	<i>(ata, ato) janë</i> they (m. & f.) are
<i>a ka?</i> does he, she have?; is there?	<i>a je?</i> are you? (sg.)
<i>nuk ka, s'ka</i> there is no	

Exercise 1

A është ky dhë? Jo, ky është hi. Ti ke djathë e unë kam gjalpë. A është ky djathë? Jo, ky nuk është djathë, ky është një gur. Në vatër ka zjarr e hi. A ka gjë tjetër në vatër? Jo, nuk ka gjë tjetër. Në mulli ka drithë e miell. A bie sot borë? Jo, sot nuk bie borë, as breshër, sot kemi diell. Zoja ka një vëllá këtú, një tjetër vëllá është në qytét. Kush është në qytét?

Exercise 2

Does it rain in winter? Yes, in winter it rains, it snows and it hails. We are here and you are there. Do you have patience? We have patience, but they do not have patience. Today I am in the city. Who is in the city today?

Text 1

Gjâ e gjâza

Asht një gjâ e gjâzë: ha breshën e qet borë: çka është? (Asht mullini)
 Asht një gjâ e gjâzë: bie shi pa rê: çka është? (Asht sita me miell)
 Asht një nuse me tre breza: kush është? (Asht ylberi)
 Asht një nuse faqekuqe: kush është? (Asht molla)

Lesson 2 — Leksioni i dytë

15. Feminine nouns end in -ë (neutral vowel) or unstressed -e:

sg.		pl.	sg.		pl.
nanë (nënë)	mother	-a	nuse	bride, young woman	-Ø
zgjë (zonjë)	woman	-a	lule	flower	-Ø
barrë	load	-Ø	lagje	neighborhood	-Ø
kambë (këmbë)	foot	-Ø	visë	pl. places	

16. There also exist feminine nouns ending in a stressed vowel, such as **bë** 'oath', **prë** 'booty, loot'. Most feminine nouns of this category, however, end in -i and have a collective or abstract meaning:

sg.		sg.	
njerëzi	people, mankind	malësi	mountains
mori	quantity	bukuri	beauty

17. Many foreign words and names of countries are included in this category:

sg.		pl.		
qershí	cherry, cherry tree (Lat. cerasium)	-Ø	Gjermaní	Germany
shtëpi ~ shpi	house (Lat. hospi- tium)	-Ø	Italí	Italy
terezi	tailor (Turk.)	-Ø	Greqí	Greece
kalá	castle (Turk.)	-Ø	Shqipni	Albania (Shqipëri)

18. Feminine nouns also end in **ll m n r rr** with foregoing unstressed **ë** or **u** (-ël, -ull, etc.):

sg.		pl.	sg.		pl.
vegël	tool	vegla	lakën	cabbage	lakna
sjetull	armpit	-a	(lakër)		(lakra)
vetull	eyelash	-a	zemër	heart	zemra
gogël	ball	gogla	andërr	dream	andrra
dasmë	wedding	dasma	(ëndërr)		(ëndrra)

There are exceptions in all of the groupings presented thus far:

- a) **burrë** m. 'man', **ballë** m. 'forehead' (and in most other original neuters that have become masculines), **dhë** m. 'earth', **shë** m. 'brook';
- b) **barí** m. 'herdsman', **njerí** 'person' **mi** m. 'mouse';
- c) **dimën (dimër)** m. 'winter', **emën (emër)** m. 'name', **drapën (drapër)** m. 'sickle', **gjarpën (gjarpër)** m. 'snake', **pluhun (pluhur)** m. 'dust', **avull** m. 'steam, vapor', **popull** m. 'people'.

The rule is therefore confirmed whereby the gender of the noun may be positively known only in the definite form.

There is a small number of new loanwords in **-o** which are feminine, such as **radio** f. 'radio', **kabllo** f. 'cable'.

Note

For purposes of correct reading, it should be noted that weak *ê* was clearly pronounced in Old Albanian even in final position. Final *ê* is barely pronounced today, but the stressed vowel in the word is lengthened instead. This compensatory lengthening occurs also in Arbëresh, as may be seen in De Rada (1871). *kaan* [kân] < *kanê* 'they have'

Vocabulary

<i>qumështore-qumështorja</i>	dairy -∅	<i>shatòrr-i</i>	tent -e, tent-shaped
<i>pranverë-a</i>	spring -a	<i>shkallë-a</i>	balcony -∅
<i>thertore-thertorja</i>	butcher shop -∅	<i>erë-a</i>	odor <i>erna</i> (<i>érëra</i>)
<i>qoshe-qoshja</i>	corner -∅	<i>nuk bën</i>	does not make
<i>qumësht-i</i>	milk	<i>nuk vjen</i>	does not come
<i>rrugë-a</i>	street -∅	<i>ku</i>	where
<i>të holla</i>	pl. money	<i>nën</i>	under
<i>karafil-i</i>	carnation -a	<i>për bukuri</i>	for beauty
<i>tubë-a</i>	bunch -a, <i>me tubë</i> in a bunch	<i>bukë-a</i>	bread
<i>derë-a</i>	door <i>dyer</i>	<i>këtù afër</i>	nearby

Present Indicative

<i>(unë) blej</i>	I buy	<i>(ne ~ na) blejmë</i>	we buy
<i>(ti) blen</i>	you (sg.) buy	<i>(ju) bleni</i>	you (pl.) buy
<i>(ai, ajo) blen</i>	he, she buys	<i>(atá, ató) blejnë</i>	they (m. & f.) buy
		<i>(unë) nuk blej</i>	I do not buy

Exercise 3

Çka blejmë në thertore? Në thertore blejmë mish. Ku ka qumështore në lagje? Një qumështore është këtù nën shtëpi, një tjetër është në qoshe. Sot nuk blej mish, por qumësht. Kush ka të holla ha lakra me mish, kush nuk ka të holla ha bukë me qumësht. Në Shqipëri, në Itali dhe në Greqi ka vise për bukuri.

Exercise 4

Is there dust on the street? On the street there is much dust. Where are (is) there flowers nearby? There are (is) no flowers nearby. Where is Zoja?

Zoja is not here, Zoja is at a wedding. Is Zoja the (a) bride? No, Zoja is not the (a) bride, the bride is another.

Text 2

Nusja në rrugë,	Nusja në obórr,
Karafil me tubë;	Karafil shatórr;
Nusja në derë,	Nusja në shkallë,
Karafil me erë;	Karafil në ballë.

Lesson 3 — Leksioni i tretë

19. Albanian, like Romanian, Bulgarian and Macedonian, has a **post-positive article** which makes the noun definite in precisely the same way as the English prepositive article 'the'. Thus, every word in Albanian has an indefinite form (without article: **zjarm** 'fire') and a definite form (with article: **zjarmi**). Masculine nouns which, in their indefinite form, end in a consonant (other than **k, g, h**) or in a nasal vowel (in Geg) construct the definite form with the article **-i**:

indef.		def.	
vend	place	vendi	the place
rrush	grape	rrushi	the grape
korp	body	korpi	the body
plesht	flea	pleshti	the flea
gjû (gju)	knee	(√gjun-) gjuni (gjuri)	the knee
zâ (zë)	voice	(√zan-) zani (zëri)	the voice
brî (bri)	horn	(√brin-) brini (briri)	the horn

20. Masculine nouns ending in **k g h** or in a stressed vowel take the article **-u** in the definite form instead of **-i**:

indef.		def.	
mik	friend	miku	the friend
plak	old man	plaku	the old man
zog	bird	zogu	the bird
krah	arm	krahu	the arm
ká	ox	kau	the ox
vëllá	brother	vëllau	the brother
shí	rain	shiu	the rain
dhé	earth	dheu	the earth

Note

In the northern Geg dialects, nouns in *h* construct the definite form with *-i* instead of *-u*.

indef.		def.	
krah	arm	krahı	the arm
pleh	garbage	plehı	the garbage
moh	denying, lying	mohı	the denying, the lying

cf. the idiom *ı ra mohıt* (for *ı ra mohut*) 'he denies it'

In eastern Geg, the article has become *-ı* even after *k g*: *mik-ı* 'the friend', *breg-ı* 'the shore'.

21. Feminine nouns in *-ë* construct the definite form with the postpositive article *-a*, while the final *-ë* drops:

indef.		def.	
derë	door	dera	the door
hanë (hënë)	moon	hana (hëna)	the moon
dorë	hand	dora	the hand
punë	work	puna	the work
rrugë	street	rruga	the street

Several masculine nouns ending in *-ë* which were originally neuters form an exception to this rule (cf. § 14); they construct the definite form with *-ı*:

indef.		def.	
djathë	cheese	djathi	the cheese
drithë	grain	drithi	the grain
ballë	forehead	balli	the forehead
djalë	boy	djali	the boy

22. Feminine nouns ending in the stressed vowels *a*, *e* and *o* (unstressed) in their indefinite form construct the definite form with *-ja*:

indef.		def.	
kalá	castle	kalája	the castle
fë	faith	fëja	the faith
radio	radio	rádioja	the radio
kablo	cable	kábloja	the cable

23. Feminine nouns in stressed *-ı* construct the definite form simply through the addition of the feminine article *-a*:

indef.		def.	
shtëpi	house	shtëpia	the house
trimni (trimëri)	bravery	trimnia (trimëria)	the bravery

24. Unstressed *e* in feminine nouns is replaced by *-ja* in the definite form:

indef.		def.	
nuse	bride, young woman	nusja	the bride

lule	flower	lulja	the flower
qoshe	corner	qoshja	the corner

25. In the definite form, **-ë** drops before **l m n r rr**:

indef.		def.	
vegël	tool	vegla	the tool
parzëm	breast	parzma ~ parzmi	the breast
lakën (lakër)	cabbage	lakna (lakra)	the cabbage
zemër	heart	zemra	the heart
andërr (ëndërr)	dream	andrra (ëndrra)	the dream

Vocabulary

<i>kuvënd-i</i>	conversation -e	<i>dy</i>	two
<i>kile-kilje</i>	kilogram -∅	<i>tri</i> (f.), <i>tre</i> (m.)	three
<i>shqiptár-i</i>	Albanian -ë	<i>nga</i>	prep. with Nom. from
<i>vajzë-a</i>	girl -a	<i>te</i>	prep. with Nom. near, at
<i>kusí-a</i>	kettle -∅	<i>po</i>	now, but
<i>sëpatë-a</i>	axe -a	<i>thotë</i>	he, she, it says
<i>realitët-i</i>	reality -e	<i>thonë</i>	they say
<i>pupël-pula</i>	feather <i>pupla</i>	<i>gjenden</i> ~ <i>gjinden</i>	find oneself, be found
<i>elemént-i</i>	element -e	<i>nuk gjen</i>	does not find
<i>bagëti-a</i>	animal -∅	<i>pyet</i>	asks
<i>mace-macja</i>	cat -∅	<i>merr</i>	he takes
<i>grue-grúeja</i> (<i>grua-grúaja</i>)	woman	<i>peshón</i>	weighs
<i>gra</i>		<i>mish qengji</i>	lamb meat
<i>trýezë-a</i>	table -a	<i>e poqi</i>	roasted it
<i>mal-i</i>	mountain -e	<i>bukë thatë</i>	dry bread
<i>betejë-a</i>	fight -a	<i>del plot</i>	comes out exactly
<i>i, e bukur</i>	beautiful	<i>plot</i>	full
<i>i zi m., e zezë f.</i>	black	<i>qe</i>	look!
<i>femnorë</i> (<i>fëmërorë</i>)	feminine	<i>shpejt</i>	soon
<i>disá</i>	several, some	<i>do me thanë</i> (<i>do me thënë, d.m.th.</i>)	means, i.e.
<i>ashtú</i>	thus, so, in that way	<i>i bie</i>	he brings her
<i>vetëm</i>	only, alone	<i>u, mor burrë</i>	oh, you husband/man!
<i>deri</i>	until, up to, to	<i>hangri</i>	he, she ate
<i>mirë e mirë</i>	very good		
<i>pra</i>	therefore, hence, thus, so		
<i>dhe</i>	and		

Present Indicative

(unë) <i>shkoj</i>	I go	(na ~ ne) <i>shkojmë</i>	we go
(ti) <i>shkon</i>	you (sg.) go	(ju) <i>shkoni</i>	you (pl.) go

<i>(ai, ajó) shkon</i>	he, she goes	<i>(atá, ató) shkojnë</i>	they (m. & f.) go
<i>(unë) nuk shkoj</i>	I do not go	<i>(unë) shkoj kambë</i>	(<i>këmbë</i>) I go
<i>(unë) po shkoj</i>	I am going		on foot

Exercise 5

Sëpata është një vegël, jo dora. Vëllau vjen nga shtëpia. Ku është qumështi? Qumështi është në kusí. Djali e vajza blejnë nga plaku bukë e djathë. Ku po shkoní ju? Ne po shkojmë në qytét, atjë kemi një mik. A është rrushi i zi? Korbi është i zi. Kau ha bår. Endrra nuk është realitét: në ëndërr shkon këmbë deri në hënë. Zogu ka në krah pupla. Çka do me thënë: pranvera është te dera? Pranvera është te dera d.m.th.: pranvera vjen shpejt. Si është vendi, ashtú është kuvendi - thotë shqiptari.

Exercise 6

Fire, earth and water are three elements. The house does not have only one door. Is the axe a tool? Yes, the axe is a tool. Trimëria (bravery), zemra (heart), beteja (battle), feja (religion), radioja (radio) and dera (door) are feminine nouns. The herdsman goes to the mountain with cattle. Albania is a beautiful place. Money is not found in the street - some say.

Text 3

Mishi është këtë, po ku është macja?

Shkon burri në qytét e blen dy kile mish qengji, i bie në shtëpi të grúeja e shkon në punë. Grúeja e poqi mirë e mirë mishtë dhe e hangri vetëm. Vjen burri nga puna e nuk gjen mish në trýezë, por vetëm bukë thatë. Pyet burri:

— Ku është mishi?

— U, mor burrë, e hangri macja! - Thotë grúeja.

· · · Ku është macja? — Pyet burri.

· · · Qe, këtë është macja!

Burri merr macjen, e peshón e ajó del plot dy kile.

— Mirë — thotë burri — mishi është pra këtë, po ku është macja?

Lesson 4 — Leksioni i katërt

26. In the **construction of the indefinite plural**, it is important to pay attention not only to the external form, as has been done until now, but particularly to the groups of meaning as well.

27. Masculine nouns generally denoting locality usually construct the plural with **-e**:

indef. sg.		indef. pl.
livádh	meadow	livadhe
obórr	courtyard	oborre
drom	road	drome
qytét	city	qytete
shesh	place (in a city)	sheshe
vend	place, locality	vende
katúnd	village	katunde

These nouns become feminine in the plural, like the feminine nouns in -e sg. and pl.: **nuse** 'bride', pl. **nuse**; **lule** 'flower', pl. **lule**.

Note

Those nouns that change gender (sg m pl f.) may also be called *ambigeneric*, meaning that the formation of the plural is not distributed according to gender categories. The plural formants of contemporary Albanian are probably the remains of archaic and decomposed plural word categories which were also defined according to their meaning. Nouns denoting locality and natural phenomena constructed the plural with collective formants such as **-e** (< *-iã), **-ëz** (< *-d + iã), **-ën (-ër) -na** (< *-an-a)

sg.		pl
hyll (yll)	star	hyjez (yje)
kall	ear of grain	kallëz
mbret	king	mbretën (mbretër)
dët	sea	detna ~ dete

28. The ending **-e** of the indef. pl. is used also with: (1) abstracts in **-im** (m.) and (2) foreign words ending in **-et** and **-on**:

indef. sg.		indef. pl.
gëzim	joy	gëzime
këndim	reading, singing	këndime
krijim	creation	krijime
fitim	winning	fitime
shtet	state	shtete
fakultét	faculty	fakultëte
misióh	mission	misióne
zakón	law, custom	zakóne

The typical feminine plural suffix is **-e** (unstressed), in contrast with the ending **-a** (cf. §30) which is used for masculines as well as feminines. It is primarily a matter of feminines ending in **-e** in the indef. sg. which remain unchanged in the pl.:

indef. sg.		indef. pl.	
lule	flower	lule	-∅

valle	line dance	valle	-∅
nuse	bride	nuse	-∅

29. Nouns in **-ák, -ók, -ár, -án, -ór** construct the indef. pl. with **-ë**:

indef. sg.		indef. pl.	
moták	yearling (lamb)	motakë	
bajrák	flag	bajrakë	
binják ~ binjók	twin	binjakë ~ binjokë	
katundár	peasant	katundarë	
banór	inhabitant	banorë	
dibrán	native of Dibra	dibranë	
shkodrán	native of Shkodra	shkodranë	

Patronymics in **-ot** are also included in this category: indef. sg. **suljót** 'native of Suli' - indef. pl. **suljotë**

The ending **-ë** constructs feminine plurals, but not always: there are also feminines that end in **-ë** in the indef. sg. which remain unchanged in the plural:

indef. sg.		indef. pl.	
punë f.	work	punë	-∅
fjalë f.	word	fjalë	-∅
valë f.	wave	valë	-∅

30. The plural ending **-a** is one of the most common for both masculines and feminines. Several applicable rules for these may be formulated:

a) Nouns in **-éc, -íc, -úç, -éq, -iq, -ól, -nt** (all masculines):

indef. sg.		indef. pl.	
spec	pepper	spec	
karkaléc	grasshopper	karkaleca	
kaciq	kid	kaciqa	
përpëq	omelet	përpeqa	
lakuriq	bat	lakuriqa	
krahól	bodice	krahola	
studént	student	studenta ~ studentë	

b) Masculines and feminines in **-ën, -ër**, feminines in **-ël** (in the plural, **ë** drops out) **-ur, -ull** and **-ëz** (cf. § 25):

indef. sg.		indef. pl.	
dimën (dimër) m.	winter	dimna (dimra)	
mjeshtër m.	master	mjeshtra	
ministër m.	minister	ministra	
minestër f.	soup	minestra	
zemër f.	heart	zemra	
vepër f.	work (of art, etc.)	vepra	

vegël f.	tool	vegla
mjegull f.	fog	mjégulla
flutur f.	butterfly	flútura
mollëz f.	cheek	möllëza

To this group also belong sg. **parzëm** (f.) 'breast' — pl. **parzmë** and Geg **darzëm** (f.) 'wedding' — pl. **darzma**.

c.) There are a number of nouns for which no rules can be formulated, e.g.:

indef. sg.		indef. pl.	
vajzë f.	girl	vajza	
burrë m.	man	burra	
hap m.	step	hapa	
pulë f.	hen	pula	
dardhë f.	pear, pear tree	dardha	

31. Masculine nouns in **-ës, -as** (usually denoting *nomina agentis* or natives of a city or region) remain unchanged in the indef. pl.:

indef. sg.		indef. pl.	
vjedhës	thief	vjedhës	-∅
nëpunës	official	nëpunës	-∅
nënshtetas	citizen	nënshtetas	-∅
tiranas	native of Tirana	tiranas	-∅

32. Many nouns in stressed vowels, regardless of gender (m. or f.), remain unchanged in the indef. pl., e.g.:

indef. sg.		indef. pl.	
thi m.	pig	thi	-∅
bari m.	herdsman	bari ~ barij	-∅
sý m.	eye	sy	-∅
dhí f.	nanny goat	dhí	-∅
shtëpi f.	house	shtëpi	-∅
kopë f.	herd	kopë	-∅
kalá f.	castle	kalá	-∅
bukuri f.	beauty	bukuri ~ bukurina (Geg)	

Vocabulary

<i>banór-i</i>	inhabitant -ë	<i>korçár-i</i>	inhabitant of Korça -ë
<i>qytetar-i</i>	city dweller -ë	<i>vlonjak-u</i>	inhabitant of Vlora -ë
<i>katundár-i</i>	villager -ë	<i>Elbasán-i</i>	(Albanian city)
<i>elbasanas-i</i>	inhabitant of Elbasan -∅	<i>Durrës-i</i>	(Albanian city)
<i>durrësák-u</i>	inhabitant of Durrës -ë	<i>Vlorë-a</i>	(Albanian city)

<i>Korçë-a</i> (Albanian city)	<i>mbramë</i> (<i>mbrëmë</i>) last night, last evening
<i>Shkodër-Shkodra</i> (Albanian city)	<i>dikur</i> once
<i>Shtetet e Bashkuara</i> United States	<i>sa</i> now much
<i>kukull-a</i> doll -a	<i>edhé</i> also
<i>gojë-a</i> mouth -∅	<i>tash</i> now
<i>dhamb-i</i> (<i>dhëmb-i</i>) tooth -ë	<i>shumë sish</i> many of them
<i>rrājë-a</i> ~ <i>rranjë-a</i> (<i>rrënjë-a</i>) root -ë	<i>gjithkund</i> everywhere
<i>themël-i</i> basis, foundation -e	<i>dje</i> yesterday
<i>petë-a</i> layer, fillo pastry dough -∅	<i>gjithmonë</i> always
<i>bisht-i</i> tail, handle -a	<i>mâ parë</i> (<i>më parë</i>) earlier
<i>musták-u</i> moustache -ë ~ <i>musteqe</i>	<i>bashkë</i> together
<i>i, e vjetër</i> old	<i>kur</i> when
<i>i, e bardhë</i> white	<i>banojmë</i> we live
<i>i kuq m., e kuqe f.</i> red	<i>banojnë</i> they live
<i>zoti</i> Mr.	<i>i qúanin</i> they were called
<i>sivjët</i> this year	<i>marr mësimë</i> takes lessons
<i>shumë</i> much	<i>burrëc s'është</i> is not a little man
<i>tona</i> our	<i>me djegë, djeg</i> to burn, it burns
<i>kryesisht</i> mainly, essentially, principally	<i>këpurdhë-a</i> mushroom -a
<i>andáj</i> therefore	<i>qepë-a</i> onion -∅

Imperfect Indicative

(unë) isha	I was	kisha	I had
(ti) ishe	you (sg.) were	kishe	you (sg.) had
(ai, ajo) ishte	he, she was	kishte	he, she had; there was
(na ~ ne) ishim	we were	kishim	we had
(ju) ishit	you (pl.) were	kishit	you (pl.) had
(atá, ató) ishin	they (m.&f.) were	kishin	they (m.&f.) had
(unë) nuk isha	I was not	(unë) nuk kisha	I did not have

Exercise 7

Sivjët kishim shumë gëzime. Zoja e Gjergji ishin binjakë. Në malësi tona kishte dikur shumë banorë, kryesisht barinj. Ju banoni në qytete, andáj jeni qytetarë, ne banojmë në katunde, andáj jemi katundarë. Mbrëmë kishte shumë yjëz në qiell. Në Shqipëri dikur ishin qytete kryesore Elbasani, Durrësi, Vlora, Korça; ató kishin shumë banorë e i qúanin elbasanas, durrësakë, korçarë, vlonjakë. Sot Tirana ka banorë sa Durrësi e Shkodra bashkë. Një fjalë e vjetër thotë: edhé mali ka sy e veshë. Një dardhë bën shumë dardha, dy këmbë - - shumë hapa.

Exercise 8

How are you, Mr. Duraku? Fine, thank you. Were you in New Orleans yesterday? No, no, yesterday I was in New York. Once Boston had many Albanians; today, many of them live in Detroit and everywhere in the United States. How many colleges did this city have earlier? Who takes lessons in (lit. from) Albanian? (He) who has many words has few deeds: it was always so.

Text 4

Dy gjázë e gjáza

Nji kukull me nji kambë	E bardhë, e kuqe, petë petë,
Pa gojë, pa dhambë,	Petë nuk ásht,
Pa rrájë, pa themël	Bisht ka, mí s'ásht,
Kur bie shí, del.	Mustakë ka, burrëc s'ásht,
Çka ásht?	Me djegë, djeg, zjarm nuk ásht.
(<i>këpurdha</i>)	Çka ásht? (<i>qepa</i>)

Lesson 5 — Leksioni i pestë

33. An ealier plural ending **-i* (m.) had a palatalizing effect on the preceding consonants **k g ll n r** (k > q, g > gj, ll > j, n > j [nj], r > j):

indef. sg.		indef. pl.
mik	friend	míq
fik	fig	fiq
peshk	fish	peshq
ujk	wolf	ujq
zog	bird	zogj
akull	ice	akuj
kërmill	snail	kërmij
kapruell (kaprúall)	roebuck	kaprój
çakáll	jackal	çakáj ~ çakéj
popull	people	popuj
hell	spear, spit	hej ~ heje
hyll (yll)	star	hyj (yje) ~ hyjës
drû-druni (druri)	wood	druj (drunj ~ drurë)
mullî-mullini (mullî-mulliri)	mill	mullij (mullinj)
ftue-ftoni (ftua-ftoi)	quince	ftoj (ftonj)
thue (thua)	nail	thoj (thonj)
nye-neni ~ nyje-nyja	knot	neje ~ nyje
langue (langua)	hunting dog	langoj (langonj)

qen	dog	qej (qenj ~ qenë)
hû (hu)	pole	hûj (hunj)
kêrcû	stump	kêrcûj (kêrcunj)
drÿ	bolt (of a lock)	drÿj (drynj)
bir	son	bij
lepur	hare	lepuj
flamur	flag	flamuj

Notes

1. In several dialects of the Arbëresh of southern Italy there is an exchange of *r/ʕ* (l) for the contrast sg. pl.: sg. *bir* 'son' pl. *bi.ʕ* 'sons'.
2. In the word *ka* (sg.) 'ox' -- *qe* (pl.), a regressive palatalization exists

34. In nouns ending in **k** or **g**, there is a stem vowel change in the plural from **a** to **e** and from **e** to **i**: indef. sg. **plak** 'old man' — indef. pl. **pleq**, indef. sg. **shteg** 'path' — indef. pl. **shtigje**.

35. A great many nouns which undergo vowel change also receive (in addition to palatalization and vowel change) plural suffixes. These nouns belong to the category of words denoting place (cf. **male**), as well as to that denoting names of materials with a collective meaning:

indef. sg.		indef. pl.
shteg	path	shtigje f.
bark	belly	barqe f.
lug	trough	lugje f.
burg	prison	burgje f.
breg	shore	brigje f.
lak	loop, noose	leqe f.
krue (krua)	source (√/kron-)	kroje (kronje) f.
përrue (përrua)	brook (√/prron-)	përroje (përronje ~ përrenje) f.
pyll	forest	pyje f.
fill	thread	fije f.
lang (lëng)	juice; liquid	langje (lëngje) f.

In this group too are nouns without vowel change, such as sg. **gji** 'bay' — pl. **gjije**, etc.

36. Nouns in **-at**, **-ap** also undergo vowel change and attach the plural endings **-ën (-ër)** and **-na (-ra)**, **-në (-rë)**:

indef. sg.		indef. pl.
shat	hoe	shetën (shetër)
krap	carp	krepën (krepër)
kunát	brother-in-law	kunetën (kunetër)

frat	friar	fretën (fretër)
trá	beam	trenë (trerë)

To this group belong too sg. **mbret** 'king' — pl. **mbretën (mbretër)**, sg. **prift** 'priest' pl. **prihtën (prihtër ~ prihtërinj)**, as well as others without vowel change.

37. There are nouns whose vowel changes constitute the contrast between sg. and pl.:

	indef. sg.		indef. pl.
	dash	ram	desh
	natë	night	net
	kaç	weaver	keç
	sjap (cjap)	billy-goat	sjep (cjep)
	kulác	flatbread	kulëç
	shqá	Slav	shqe
	vllah	Aromun, Vlach	vllëh
	lugát	ghost, vampire	lugët
	shqarth	marten	shqerth

38. Many original collectives and names of materials, as well as masculine nouns in stressed **-e**, take the plural ending **-na (-ra)**. It should be noted that the plurals in **-na**, like the plural forms of the word category sg. **ma!** (m.) pl. **male** (f.), are feminine. In addition, their meaning is changed or modified in the plural:

	indef. sg.		indef. pl.
	drithë m.	grain	drithna f. (drithëra) kinds of grain
	miell m.	flour	miellna f. (miellëra) types of flour
	ujë m.	water	ujna f. (újëra) waters
	mish m.	meat	mishna f. (mishëra) kinds of meat
	shi m.	rain	shina f. (shira) rainfalls
	bar m.	grass	barna f. (bárëra) medicine
	dhé m.	earth	dhena f. (dhera) districts
	shé m.	brook	shena f. (shera) brooks
	krye m.	head (√kre-)	krena ~ krenë f. heads, tribal chiefs
			(krera ~ krerë)
	drû (dru) m.	wood	druje (drunje) kinds of wood

In this group are also included nouns which do not change or modify their meaning in the plural, e.g.:

	indef. sg.		indef. pl.
	asht	bone	eshтна (eshtra)
	brí	horn	brina (brira ~ brirë)

39. A small number of nouns change their stress so that it is carried by the plural ending, as with affixes of word formation (**fshat** 'village' -- **fshatár** 'peasant'). These endings are **-ej (-enj)**, **-ij (-inj-e)**:

indef. sg.		indef. pl.
lumë	river	lumëj (luménj)
lamë (lëmë)	threshing-floor	lamij (lëminj ~ lëménj)
gjarpën (gjarpër)	snake	gjarpj (gjarpinj)
shkamb (shkëmb)	rock	shkambj (shkëmbinj)
shkop	stick	shkopj (shkopinj)
kopsht	garden	kopshtj-e (kopshtinje ~ kopshte ~ qipshte)

A great many nouns ending in a stressed vowel have the same stress:

indef. sg.		indef. pl.
mi	mouse	mij (minj)
turi	snout	turij (turinj)
purri	leek	purrij (purrinj)
brë	fir	brej

40. The definite form of the plural for both masculine and feminine nouns is constructed by adding a **-t** to the indefinite plural:

indef. sg.		def. pl.
male	mountains	malet
lule	flowers	lulet
hapa	steps	hapat
vajza	girls	vajzat
pula	hens	pulat

41. Nouns in **-ës** and **-as**, however, have the ending **-it** in the definite plural:

indef. sg.		def. pl.
nëpunës	official	nëpunësit
tiranas	native of Tirana	tiranasit

42. Nouns that are stressed on the final syllable in the indefinite plural take the ending **-të** in the definite plural:

indef. sg.		def. pl.
shtëpi	houses	shtëpitë
kalá	castles	kalatë
grá	women	gratë

43. There are a number of nouns which have **only a singular form**, e.g.:

a) **Abstracts**

djelmëni-a (djemuri-a)	youth
guxim	courage, bravery
gjini-a (gjiri-a)	relationship
vëllazni-a (vëllezëri-a)	brotherly relationship

b) **Names of substances and materials**

borë-a (dëborë-a)	snow
breshën-breshni (breshër-breshri)	hail
vesë-a	dew
thekën-thekna (thekër-thekra)	rye
benzinë-a	gasoline
çement-i ~ çimento-ja	cement
dhallë-i	buttermilk
voj-i (vaj-i)	oil
uthull-a	vinegar

It should be noted that when such abstracts or names of substances occur in the plural, their meaning is different:

plural

gjini-të (gjiri-të)	relatives
vëllazni-të (vëllezëri-të)	brotherhoods
vojna-t (vájëra-t)	kinds of oil (cf. § 38)

c) Proper nouns occur only in the singular, as do the directions of the compass:

veri-u	north
jug-u	south
lindje-a	east
perëndim-i	west

44. A number of disease terms have only either a singular or a plural form:

a) *sg.*

lëngim	typhus
li-a	smallpox
fruth-i	measles

b) *pl.*

ethe-t	f.	fever
priqe-t	f.	joint inflammation
prime-t	f.	folk medicine

45. Albanian has many nouns that occur only in the plural. These are frequently designations of materials and substances or their types (cf. §§ 38 and 43), collective concepts and place names:

të lana-t ~ tëlanat (të lëna-t) f.	food remains
krunde-t f.	bran
argjande-t (ergjënde-t) f.	silver jewellery
të holla-t f.	money
të korra-t f.	crops, harvested grain
të vjela-t f.	harvested fruit, vintage
të lashta-t f.	grain (only on the stalk)
thërmaqe-t f.	broken rice
Alpe-t (place name)	northern Albanian alps
Rranxa-t (place name)	district in the area of Shkodra

Note

A few nouns which designate pairs occur only in the plural; these are, in all likelihood, remains of an old grammatical category, i.e. the *dual*.

duqe-t f.	saddle-bags
pranga-t f.	handcuffs, fetters
verza-t f.	(pair of) gills
vathë-t (vëthë-t) m.	earrings
herdhe-t ~ loqe-t f.	testicles
leqe-t f. e kambës	calves of the legs
syza-t f.	eyeglasses
ijet-t f.	loins
vithe-t f.	flanks
brekushe-t f.	a kind of wide trousers
ski-të m.	skis
vegje-t ~ vekë-t f.	weaver's loom

46. The so-called irregular plurals given at the end of this lesson are remains of plural categories which have otherwise disappeared, e.g. the affix *-ëz* (sg. **njeri** — pl. **njerëz**) or the construction of the plural by means of diphthongization of the root vowel: sg. **dorë** 'hand' — pl. **duer/duar** (contrast of sg. *-o-*, written *-uo-* by the older writers; pl. *-ue-*, *-ua-*'), sg. **derë** 'door' — pl. **dyer** (contrast of sg. *-e-*; pl. *-ye-*).

It should also be noted that umlaut in the plural (cf. sg. *man* — pl. *men*) also occurs in Albanian: sg. **plak** 'old man' — pl. **pleq**; and the reverse: sg. **rreth** 'circle' — pl. **rrathë**.

47. The following are irregular plurals of some nouns in frequent use:

indef. sg.	indef. pl.	def. pl.
<i>njeri</i> person	<i>njerëz</i>	<i>njerëzit</i>
<i>vëllà</i> brother	<i>vëllazën (vëllezër)</i>	<i>vëllazënit (vëllëzërit)</i>

<i>djalë</i>	boy	<i>djelm</i> (<i>djem</i>)	<i>djelmhtë</i> (<i>djemhtë</i>)
<i>kalë</i>	horse	<i>kual</i> (<i>kuaj</i>)	<i>kualt</i> (<i>kuajt</i>)
<i>thes</i>	sack	<i>thasë</i>	<i>thasët</i>
<i>rrreth</i>	district	<i>rrrethe</i>	<i>rrrethet</i>
<i>rrreth</i>	wheel, circle	<i>rrathë</i>	<i>rrathët</i>
<i>dorë</i>	hand	<i>duer</i> (<i>duar</i>)	<i>duert</i> (<i>duart</i>)
<i>derë</i>	door	<i>dyer</i>	<i>dyert</i>
<i>vjetë</i> (<i>vit</i>)	year	<i>vjet</i>	<i>vjetet</i> ~ <i>vjetët</i>

Vocabulary

<i>ujë-i</i>	water	<i>ujna-t</i> (<i>ujëra-t</i>)	<i>që</i>	which, that
<i>ullë-ni</i> (<i>ullë-ri</i>)	olive	<i>ullij</i> (<i>ullinj</i>)	<i>apo</i>	or
<i>caqe themelore</i>	points of the compass		<i>sëmundje-a</i>	illness -∅
<i>vajguri</i>	m. petroleum		<i>qen-t</i>	dog -∅
<i>askush</i>	no one		<i>këndëj</i>	on this side
<i>trupshkurtë</i>	small in stature		<i>bëjmë</i>	we make, do
<i>krenar</i>	proud		<i>duhet</i>	one must, it is necessary
<i>rrëshiq-t</i>	goatskin bottle	<i>rrëshekë</i>	<i>krahaqafë</i>	shouldered, on the shoulder
<i>famë-a</i>	fame		<i>shtie mbrendë</i>	pour in, insert, inject
<i>gjeth-i</i>	leaf, foliage	<i>-e</i>	<i>i njuh</i>	knows them
<i>torbë lëkure</i>	leather bag		<i>si me pasë</i>	as though he had
<i>bimësi-a</i>	vegetation	-∅	<i>i vjen era</i>	it smells
<i>barnatâr-i</i>	herbalist	-ë	<i>mund të jetë</i>	it may be, it is possible
<i>mjek-u</i>	physician	-ë	<i>shërojnë</i>	they heal
<i>në të vërtetë</i>	in truth, actually		<i>mbahet bestytës</i>	pretends to be superstitious
<i>si njeri magjik</i>	as a magician		<i>shitës barnash</i>	herb seller
<i>për shembull</i>	for example, e.g.		<i>emna sëmundjesh</i>	disease names
<i>tesha-t</i>	clothes		<i>punojnë</i>	they work
<i>i, e urtë</i>	intelligent, wise		<i>gjindet</i>	finds oneself, is found
<i>zyrë-a</i>	office	<i>-a</i>	<i>fluturojnë</i>	they fly
<i>kripë-a</i>	salt		<i>rriten</i>	they grow
<i>farmaci-a</i>	pharmacy	-∅	<i>tri a katër</i>	three or four
<i>pije-a</i>	drink	-∅	<i>duert e tij</i>	his hands
<i>industri-a</i>	industry	-∅	<i>verë e vjeshtë</i>	in summer and fall
<i>alkool-i</i>	alcohol			

Exercise 9

A jeni miq? Po, ne jemi miq dhe ishim. Dikur ishit djem e tash jeni pleq. Gjergji ka dy kuaj e pesë thasë. Shtëpitë kanë tri a katër dyer. Minjtë gjenden edhe në livadhe, atë në dimër janë nën dhë. Livadhet kanë bar.

Këtò dhera kanë shumë zogj. Zogjtë fluturojnë në qiell. A kanë pyjet lepuj? Po, lepujt banojnë në pyje, por lepuj ka edhe në brigje e lugje, por jo pula. Në thertoret tona blejmë mishëra për njerëz dhe ështra për qen. Në farmaci gjenden bërëra. Nga shirat rriten lumenjtë. Lëngjet janë pije pa alkoól. Újërat në dët kanë shumë kripë.

Exercise 10

The employees work in offices. We make oil with olives. The points of the compass are north, south, east and west. Is this way east or west? Measles is a disease. Petroleum is necessary for industry, but not for our waters and our rivers.

Text 5

Barnatari i urtë

Luka, një plak trupshkurtë e i thatë, ka te barijtë ndër Alpe famë njeriu magjik dhe një emën krenár që nuk e ka askúsh: *barnatari*. Verë e vjeshtë gjindet në mal, me një torbë lëkure krahaqafë, e vjetër e që dikúr ishte rrëshiq, ku tash shtie mbrendë lule e barna të thata, rranjë e gjethe. Edhe duert e tij janë si rranjë e teshat si gjethe e u vjen era bimësi si me pasë një pyll në krah.

Barnat shërúese Luka i njuh me emën. Ai thotë: çdo njeri apo mal ka një emën si unë, për shembull, *barnatár*! Ky, si njeri magjik, mbahet si bestytës e thotë: vetëm barnat që kanë një emën shërojnë, sidomòs ethet! Andáj disá sosh kanë edhe emna sëmundjesh: bar lie, bar fruthi, bar lëngimi. Mjekët thonë: barnatari áshnt njeri fantastik!

Mund të jetë ashtú, por Luka në të vërtetë si shitës barnash malore áshnt edhe një reklamist!

Lesson 6 — Leksioni i gjashtë

Declension

48. Every noun in Albanian has an indefinite as well as a definite declension. Definiteness is expressed through the article, which has a referential, i.e. determinative function (approximately like *ky* 'this' m. — *kjo* f. 'this').

Because there exist in the language both postpositive and prepositive articles which occur both after and before the noun in inflected forms, it is expedient to divide the noun declension into two classes:

Class I comprises those nouns having only a postpositive article, i.e. a declension particle:

def. Nom. sg.	mal-i
def. Dat. sg.	mal-it
def. Nom. sg.	motr-a
def. Dat. sg.	motr-ēs

Class 2 comprises those nouns having a postpositive *and* a prepositive article, the inflected forms of which serve as case morphemes:

def. Nom. sg.	i nip-i
def. Dat. sg.	tē nip-it
def. Nom. sg.	e mir-a
def. Dat. sg.	sē mir-ēs

It should also be noted that the *postpositive* article has a double function: a) it defines the noun and b) simultaneously marks the case of the declension. The *prepositive* article has this double function only in the category of terms of relationship (cf. § 56).

49. The declension class 1, in contrast to class 2 (with prepositive and postpositive declension morphemes) may be termed a synthetic declension. Class 1 is divided into **4 types**, two for masculines and two for feminines:

Type I. -i	: mali (m.)
Type II. -u	: plaku (m.) (for nouns in k g h in the indef. sg.) dheu (m.) 'earth', vau 'fort' (nouns in a stressed vowel in the indef. sg.).

To this group also belong the neuters in

-t ~ tē	: djathēt
---------	-----------

which are declined like **mali**, except Nom. and Acc. -t ~ tē, if they have not been totally transformed into this type.

Type III. -a	: vajza
Type IV. -ja	: lulja (indef. lule)

Note

There are still controversies regarding the division of the declension. In the latest grammars, for example, in order to group all feminines in one declension, an attempt is made to integrate Type IV with Type III, whereby the -j- in -ja and -je is interpreted as an epenthetic element arising between two vowels — certainly a correct interpretation from the diachronic standpoint. Synchronically, however, the case endings -ja and -je are integral morphemes, as is evident from the following synopsis.

In the dialects and in older texts the neuter occurs as an independent declension type for reasons of syntax as well, i.e. in agreement with the adjective: *djathēt tē mirē*.

50. Synopsis of the case endings of declension class I

	Type I		Type II		indef. pl. for all types
	indef.	def.	indef.	def.	
Nom.	∅	-i ~ t(ë)	∅	-u	∅
Gen.	-i	-it	-u	-ut	-ve
Dat.	-i	-it	-u	-ut	-ve
Acc.	∅	-in(ë) ~ t(ë)	∅	-un	∅
Abl.	-i	-it	-u	-ut	-sh

	Type III		Type IV		def. pl.
	indef.	def.	indef.	def.	
Nom.	∅	-a	∅	-ja	-t ~ të ~ it
Gen.	-e	-ës ~ së	-je	-s ~ së	-vet
Dat.	-e	-ës ~ së	-je	-s ~ së	-vet
Acc.	∅	-n ~ në	∅	-n ~ në	-t ~ të ~ it
Abl.	-e	-ës ~ së	-je	-s ~ së	-vet

Notes

- In practice, the morpheme *-sh* (Abl indef pl) alternates freely with *-ve*; the indef pl. is thus reduced to two values ∅ *ve*.
- There is an old Albanian Acc sg. ending *-në* which occurred with nouns ending in consonants: Nom. sg. *djalë* 'boy' Acc. sg. *djalne* Many stem consonants in combination with *-ne* underwent changes:
 - Nom. sg. *moti* 'year, time, weather'
 - Acc. sg. *monë* < *motnë* (from which *gjuhmone* < *gjuhmotnë*)
 where *-t-* has dropped out before *-n*. In the next case *r + n* yielded as a rule *rr*
 - Nom. sg. *i biri* 'son'
 - Acc. sg. *të burrë* < *bir-në*
- In Old Albanian and in several peripheral dialects, among others that of the Arbëresh of southern Italy, there is also a *Locative* sg. in *-t ndë malt* 'on the mountain'. The plural counterpart is the combined ending *-shut (-sh-it)*: *male-shut* (cf Gjon Buzuku, 1555). The function of this case has not as yet been syntactically investigated. (Cf. § 55, No 1) In Arb. also *-shu- zôgjeshtu* 'from birds' (De Rada 1871), seldom with fem in *-ç* (cf § 52, No.)
- In Old Albanian and in some contemporary archaic dialects there are two formations for the Gen and Dat. pl.
 - e* after plural endings in a consonant
 - Nom pl. *priftën* 'priests'
 - Gen pl *i priftëne*
 - ve* after plural endings in a vowel.
 - Nom. pl. *udhe* 'streets'
 - Gen. pl. *i udhëve*
 that is, an epenthetic *-v-* occurs between two vowels and a formant *-ve* arises which then is used generally.

51. Examples of the masculine and neuter declensions (Types I and II):

Singular

	indef.	def.	indef.	def.	indef.	def.
Nom.	mal	mali	djathë	djathët	plak	plaku
Gen.	i mali	i malit	i djathi	i djathit	i plaku	i plakut
Dat.	mali	malit	djathi	djathit	plaku	plakut
Acc.	mal	malin	djathë	djathët	plak	plakur
Abl.	mali	malit	djathi	djathit	plaku	plakut

Plural

	indef.	def.	indef.	def.	indef.	def.
Nom.	male	malet	djathna	djathnat	pleq	pleqtë
Gen.	i máleve	i málevet	i djáthnave	i djáthnavet	i pleqve	i pleqve
Dat.	máleve	málevet	djáthnave	djáthnavet	pleqve	pleqvet
Acc.	male	malet	djathna	djathnat	pleq	pleqtë
Abl.	malesh	málevet	djáthnash	djáthnavet	pleqsh	pleqvet

Mal 'mountain', **djathë** 'cheese' — pl. **djathna (djáthëra)** 'kinds of cheese', **plak** 'old man'.

The following are declined according to this pattern: **vend-i** 'place', **korp-i** 'body', **plesht-i** 'flea', **mish-të** 'meat', **mik-u** 'friend', **zog-u** 'bird', **dhé-u** 'earth'. Nouns of the type **dhé-u** have two variants in the def. Acc. sg.: **dhenë** ~ **dheun**.

52. Examples of feminine declensions (Types III and IV):

Singular

	indef.	def.	indef.	def.
Nom.	vajzë	vajza	lule	lulja
Gen.	i vajze	i vajzës	i lúleje ~ lulje	i lules
Dat.	vajze	vajzës	lúleje ~ lulje	lules
Acc.	vajzë	vajzën	lule	lulen
Abl.	vajze	vajzës	lúleje ~ lulje	lules

Plural

	indef.	def.	indef.	def.
Nom.	vajza	vajzat	lule	lulet
Gen.	i vájzave	i vájzavet	i lúleve	i lúlevet
Dat.	vájzave	vájzavet	lúleve	lúlevet
Acc.	vajza	vajzat	lule	lulet
Abl.	vajzash	vájzavet	lulesh	lúlevet

Note

Arbëresh variant Abl. indef. -ç: *vashaç*.

The following are declined like **vajzë-a** 'girl': **hanë-a** (**hënë-a**) 'moon', **pulë-a** 'hen', **dardhë-a** 'pear', etc. Like **lule-lulja** 'flower': **nuse-nusja** 'bride, young woman', **dele-delja** 'sheep', **Tereze-Terezja** woman's name, **grue-grúeja** (**grua-grúaja**) 'woman'.

Naturally, feminines ending in a stressed vowel belong to this declension type too. The examples of these follow: **shtëpi-a** 'house' and **rrufë-ja** 'lightning'.

Singular

	indef.	def.	indef.	def.
Nom.	shtëpi	shtëpia	rrufë	rrufeja
Gen.	i shtëpie	i shtëpisë	i rrufeje	i rrufesë
Dat.	shtëpie	shtëpisë	rrufeje	rrufesë
Acc.	shtëpi	shtëpinë	rrufë	rrufenë
Abl.	shtëpie	shtëpisë	rrufeje	rrufesë

Plural

Nom.	shtëpi	shtëpitë	rrufë	rrufetë
Gen.	i shtëpive	i shtëpivet	i rrufeve	i rrufevet
Dat.	shtëpive	shtëpivet	rrufeve	rrufevet
Acc.	shtëpi	shtëpitë	rrufë	rrufetë
Abl.	shtëpish	shtëpivet	rrufësh	rrufevet

53. A number of masculines of declension class I demonstrate stem changes in the Nom. sg. indef. and def. They are divided into two groups as follows:

a) Masculines in nasal **-â**, **-ê**, **-î**, **-û**, **-ÿ** in the indef. Nom. sg. expand the stem with **-n-** (**-r-**) in the def. inflected forms:

zâ-zani (zë-zëri)	voice
pê-peni (pe-peri)	thread
mullî-mullini (mullî-mulliri)	mill
drû-druni (dru-druri)	tree, wood
sÿ-syni (sy-syri)	eye

b) Masculines with the stem vowels **o** and **e** (*unnasalized*) have **-ue** (**-ua**) and **-ye** in the indef. Nom. sg. These nouns have doublets (variants not divided according to Geg/Tosk) involving the presence or absence of **-n-** (**-r-**) in the def. Nom. sg. and other inflected forms:

thue-thoni ~ thoi (thua-thoi)	nail	√thon-
krue-kroni ~ kroi (krua-kroi)	fountain	√kron-
katue-katoni ~ katoi (katua-katoi)	cellar	√katon-
nye-neni (nyje-nyja)	knot, joint	√nen-

The examples that follow for both groups are given only in the sg., as their plurals do not demonstrate any special characteristics:

	indef.	def.	indef.	def.
Nom.	zâ (zë)	zani (zëri)	nye	neni
Gen.	i zani (zëri)	i zanit (zërit)	i neni	i nenit
Dat.	zani (zëri)	zanit (zërit)	neni	nenit
Acc.	zâ (zë)	zanin (zërin)	nye	nenin
Abl.	zani (zëri)	zanit (zërit)	neni	nenit

Note

Krye-kryet 'head' is the only neuter that diphthongizes the *e-* stem of \surd *kre-*. *Kre-* remains in the oblique cases of the sg. and in all cases in the plural.

	indef.	def.
Nom., Acc.	krye	kryet
Gen.	i kreje	i kresë
Dat.	kreje	krese
Abl.	kreje	krese

Pl. *krenë* (*krerë*) is declined regularly.

54. Variants of the type **krue-** (**krua-**) **kroi** are placed in a special category of nouns belonging to the *o-* stem. This category includes a few foreign words which have not diphthongized final *-o* in Albanian, e.g. **jatró-jatroi** 'physician' (Gk. ἰατρός), **spanó-spanoi** 'beardless'. These loanwords also demonstrate two different types of inflection: **jatró-i** (among the Arbëresh of southern Italy **jatrua-jatroi** as well) declined like **krua-kroi**, while the loanwords with unstressed final *-o* have become feminine: **spángo-spángoja** 'string', **této-tétoja** 'aunt'. Examples follow for **krua-kroi** (m.) 'fountain' and **této-tétoja** (f.):

	indef.	def.	indef.	def.
Nom.	krua	kroi	teto	tétoja
Gen.	i kroi	i kroit	i tétoje	i tetos
Dat.	kroi	kroit	tétoje	tetos
Acc.	krua	kroin	teto	teton
Abl.	kroi	kroit	tétoje	tetos

55. There is a group of particles and other parts of speech which are used with the indef. forms and mark the function of the case.

a) The indef. forms of the noun are marked by **nji** (**një**) 'one' in the sg. and **disá** (**ca**) 'several' in the pl.:

	sg.		pl.	
Nom.	nji (një)	mur 'wall'	disá (ca)	mure
Gen.	i nji (një)	muri	i disá (ca)	mureve

The indef. form of the neuter is marked (in traditional grammars) by **këta** (demonstrative pronoun n. sg.) or **shumë** 'many, much':

këta/shumë miell

In order not to overburden the paradigms, these parts of speech are omitted.

b) To formally differentiate the Genitive from the Dative, one of the articles **i, e, të, së** is prefixed. In the paradigms, **i** will be used throughout: **i malit** 'of the mountain'.

c) The *Vocative* omitted from the paradigms – is expressed by the prepositive or postpositive exclamatory particle **o**:

o Artan! Artan-o! 'O (you) Artan!'

The case of the Vocative is the indef. Nom. If the noun in the Vocative is qualified by a pronoun or attributive, then the noun stands in the def. Nom.:

O ju lisat e gjatë! 'O, you tall trees!'

d) The preposition of the *Ablative* is **prej**: indef. **prej nji (një) mali** – def. **prej malit** 'from a mountain – from the mountain'. Functionally, this form may be constructed by **nga** + Nom. in the def.: **nga mali** 'from the mountain'.

The function of the *Locative* is fulfilled today by the preposition **në** + Acc.: **në mal** 'on a mountain' **në malin e gjatë** 'on the high mountain'.

Notes

1. The old form of the *Locative without preposition* has been retained only in a few expressions: *shetit mali(t)* 'he walks in the mountain(s). Far more striking are the constructions with the Loc. pl. in *-sh*. *më bie terr sysh* 'darkness falls on my eyes'; *atá rrijnë gjithditën hijesh* 'they sit in the shadows all day'. In formulaic expressions such forms without preposition have also an Ablative sense: *i dolën mendje fjalët e mikut* 'he forgot the words of the (i.e. his) friend' (lit. the words of the friend left his mind *mendje* instead of *prej mendje*).
2. The Common Albanian Vocative preposition is *morë* (m) – *moj* (f.) 'o, you!' Cf. also Arbëresh *moi* ~ *mori* (De Rada 1871):

moi ~ *mori* zog 'o bird!'

Vocabulary

bletë-a bee - \emptyset
fshat-i village *fshatra*
pushim-i pause, rest -*e*
ditë pushimi holiday
letër-letra letter *letra*
vizitë-a visit -*a*
kuzhinë-a kitchen -*a*
makinë-a car, machine -*a*
kat-i storey -*e*
fëmijë-a child - \emptyset
artikull-i article *artikuj*

fjalë-a word - \emptyset
fjali-a sentence, clause - \emptyset
rregull-a rule -*a*
gramatikë-a grammar -*a*
pjesë-a part -*ë*
lakim-i declension -*e*
stacion radioje radio station -*e*
konóp-i string, cord -*ë*
pop-i pope (Orthodox priest) -*a*
mjekër-mjekra beard *mjekra*
sixhim-i rope -*a*

trim-i brave man, hero -a
femnór (femërór) feminine
mashkullór masculine
asnjanës neuter
mue (mua) më to me (Dat.)
pakëz a little
pas (prep. with Dat.) after
shkoj mirë am on good terms, get
 along well
u pëlqën they like

ju pëlqën you (pl.) like
flitet shqip Albanian is spoken
a kuptoni? do you (pl.) understand
kape catch!, seize!
kapja catch him!, seize him!
lidhe tie!
preja cut him!
Kel-i Michael
gjysagjël-i half-chicken -a
mbaja mjekrën grab his beard!

Present Indicative

(unë) di	I know	(na ~ ne) dimë	we know
(ti) di(n)	you (sg.) know	(ju) dini	you (pl.) know
(ai, ajo) di(n)	he, she knows	(ata, ato) dinë	they (m., f.) know

Exercise 11

Qeni shkon pas barinjve dhe bleta pas erës së luleve. Zoja shkon mirë me teton e Gjergjit. Kroi i fshatit ka ujë shumë sivjët. Sot kemi ditë pushimi. Banorëve të fshatit u pëlqën uji i kroit. Prej djalit të Gjergjit nuk kemi letra. Terezja vjen nesër në vizitë; me Terezën vjen edhe Zoja. Zëri i zogjve u pëlqën qytetarëve. Dardhat janë në trëzëzën e kuzhinës. Juve ju pëlqën djathi me shumë kripë, mua jo! Djemtë e Gjergjit janë krenarë për makinën që kanë. Zyrat e nëpúnësve janë në katin e parë. Farmacia gjendet në qoshen e shtëpisë ku banojmë. Ky është leksioni i gjashtë. Lëngu i dardhave u pëlqën fëmijëve.

Exercise 12

The Albanian language has masculine, feminine and neuter articles. Do you know Albanian? No, we do not know Albanian well; we know many words and some clauses. Do you know many rules of grammar? You now know part of the noun declension. Albanian is spoken on this radio station. Do you understand Albanian? A little.

Text 6

Kel, Kel, gjysagjël,
 Kape pulën se po del!
 Lidhe për penit,
 Preja bishtin qenit!
 Lidhe për konopit,
 Mbaja mjekrën popit!

Lidhe për sixhimit,
Kapja mustakët trimit!

Lesson 7 — Leksioni i shtatë

56. **Declension Class 2**, also termed here periphrastic – in contrast to the synthetic Class 1 (§48), comprises **nouns with prepositive and postpositive articles**. Corresponding with Class 1, the same declension endings for all three genders are used for Class 2 (cf. § 50).

It is immediately apparent that the prepositive and postpositive formants demonstrate striking similarities. This, however, does not ease the task of learning their correct usage, which is best mastered by understanding the way they combine dynamically with inflected words (i.e. in syntagms).

The nouns of this class are divided according to their form and meaning into two groups:

Group 1 comprises terms of familial relationship. These have no prepositive articles in the indef. form, i.e. the determinative function is accomplished by the postpositive article.

It should be noted further that the articles **i** and **e** have, in prepositive position, also the value of the 3rd person demonstrative pronoun (cf. § 146) 'his'.

Note

There is a tendency to regard the prepositive articles **i** and **e** solely as possessive pronouns, so that the terms of familial relationship in Class 1 are becoming slowly but surely fully integrated: *nip-i* 'nephew', *mbesë-a* 'niece'.

Group 2 includes the terms for **the days of the week** and the **abstracts**, primarily, of the '**nominalized adjectives and participles**'. In this group the article appears in prepositive and postpositive position, but the determinative function is expressed only through the postpositive case endings in the def. form, as in declension Class 1.

Note

The prepositive articles of Group 2 do not have a determinative function and behave as formants of word-formation – like prefixes – despite the inflected forms.

57. Summary of the case endings for terms of familial relationship:

	Singular			Singular		
	m.			f.		
	indef.	def.		indef.	def.	
Nom.	∅	i -i		∅	e -a	
Gen.	-i	të -it		-e	së -ës	

Dat.	-i	të	-it	-e	së	-ës
Acc.	∅	të	-in	∅	të	-ën
Abl.	-i	të	-it	-e	së	-ës

The plural of the terms of familial relationship does not exhibit any special differences in comparison with declension Class I. The prepositive def. article for the plural is **të** and is the same for both genders and all cases.

Vëllá 'brother' has two declension variants: **i vëllai** (according to Type I and the most commonly used) and **i vëllau** like **dhë-u** (Type II, seldom used in the literary language).

58. The declension of the terms of familial relationship (also applicable for the 3rd person of the possessive pronoun — cf. § 146):

Singular

	m.		f.	
	indef.	def.	indef.	def.
Nom.	nip	i nipi	bijë	e bija
Gen.	i nipi	i të nipit	i bije	i së bijës
Dat.	nipi	të nipit	bije	së bijës
Acc.	nip	të nipin	bijë	të bijën
Abl.	nipi	të nipit	bije	së bijës

Nip—**i nipi** 'nephew, grandson' pl. **nipa** 'descendants'; **bijë**—**e bija** 'daughter'.

Vëllá—**i vëllai** 'brother', **bir**—**i biri** 'son', **mbesë**—**e mbesa** 'niece, granddaughter', **motër**—**e motra** 'sister', etc. are declined in the same manner.

Notes

- The nouns of this category (*i shoq* 'husband' -- *e shoqja* 'wife', *e ama* [ēma ~ jema] 'mother') occur with these meanings only in the def. form or with a prepositive possessive pronoun: *me shoqe* 'my wife', *yt shoq* 'your (sg.) husband'. Without the prepositive article their meanings are changed: *shoqe* — *shoqja* 'comrade (f.)', *shoq-i* G. 'comrade, neighbor', *amë-a* (ēme-a) 'queen bee'.
- The same applies to *Zot-i* 'Lord God' *zot-i* 'lord', *zotë-a* (*zonjë-a*) 'lady, Madonna' (without the prepositive article). In contrast: *i zoti i shtëpisë* master of the house, *pater familias* — *e zoja* (*zonja*) *e shtëpisë* 'lady of the house' indicate terminology of the old Albanian family structure whereby the prominent concept is that of *possession* rather than relationship. In nominal position *i zoti* — *e zoja* (*zonja*) mean 'owner (m. and f.)': *i zoti i kalit* 'the owner of the horse'; *i zoti* — *e zoja* adj. 'able, powerful, independent': *e zoja e punës ishte ajo grue (grua)!* 'that woman was able/capable!'; *djali u bënë i zoti i vetit* 'the boy became independent, attained his majority'.
- Atë*—*i ati* ~ *i jati* 'father' is the only Albanian word that exhibits sound shift in the declension:

Nom.	i ati ~ i jati
Gen.	i t'et ~ të jatit

def. pl. *të etën-it* (*të etër-it*) 'the fathers' — indef. pl. *etën* (*etër*) 'ancestors'.

59. Summary of case endings for the days of the week and nominalized adjectives and participles:

	Singular											
	m.						f.					
	indef.		def.		indef.		def.		indef.		def.	
Nom.	i	-∅	i	-i	e	-∅	e	-a	të	-∅	të	-të
			~u				~ja				~ët ~it	
Gen.	të	-i	të	-it	së	-e	së	-ës	të	-i	të	-it
		~u	~ut			~je	~es		~u			
Dat.	të	-i	të	-it	së	-e	së	-ës	të	-i	të	-it
		~u	~ut			~je	~es		~u			
Acc.	të	-∅	të	-in	të	-∅	të	-ën	të	-∅	të	-të
			~un				~en			te	~ët ~it	
Abl.	të	-i	të	-it	së	-e	së	-ës	të	-i	të	-it
		~u	~ut		~je	~es			~u	~ut		

The prepositive article in the plural is **të** and remains unchanged for all genders and cases. The case endings of the singular and plural are actually identical with those of declension Class I.

60. Examples of the declension of the days of the week and feminine nouns derived from adjectives:

	Singular			
	indef.	def.	indef.	def.
Nom.	e shtunë	e shtuna	e lume	e lumja
Gen.	i së shtune	ı së shtunës	ı së lumje	i së lumes
Dat.	së shtune	së shtunës	së lumje	së lumes
Acc.	të shtunë	të shtunën	të lume	të lumen
Abl.	së shtune	së shtunës	së lumje	së lumes

E shtunë 'Saturday', **e lume-lumja** 'the fortunate one, the fairy'.

All of the other days of the week such as **e martë-marta** 'Tuesday', **e êjte-(enjte)-ja** 'Thursday' (cf. vocabulary) and feminine nouns derived from adjectives, e.g. **e mbarë-a** 'fortunate issue, luck', from **e mbarë** 'right, fortunate' and **e shkúeme-shkúemja** (**e shkuar-shkúara**) 'the past' from **e shkuem** (**e shkuar**) 'past', etc. are declined in the same way.

Notes

- The following occur only in the def. form: *e Bukura* (*e Dheut*) 'the beautiful one (of the earth)' (character in folk tales) and *e Lumja* (*e malit*) 'the (mountain) fairy' pl. *të Lumet*
- The names of the weekdays are derived from syntagms: *dita e hanë* (*hënë*) 'Monday' (lit. the day of the moon), *dita e martë* 'Tuesday', etc.

61. Examples of the declension of masculine and neuter nouns derived from adjectives and participles:

	Singular			
	indef.	def.	indef	def.
Nom.	i sëmunië	i sëmuni	të ngranë	të ngranët
Gen.	i të sëmuni	i të sëmunit	i të ngrani	i të ngranit
Dat.	të sëmuni	të sëmunit	të ngrani	të ngranit
Acc.	të sëmunië	të sëmunit	të ngranë	të ngranët
Abl.	të sëmuni	të sëmunit	të ngrani	te ngranit

I sëmunië- (**sëmurië-**) **i** 'the sick person' (adj. **i, e sëmunië** 'sick'), **të ngrane** (**ngrënë**) — **të ngranët** (**ngrënë**) 'food' (Part. **ngranë** [**ngrënë**] 'eaten'), **të ftohtë-ftohtit** 'the cold'. The following are declined in the same manner: **i huej** (**huaj**) 'foreigner' (adj. **i, e huej** [**huaj**] 'foreign'), **i zi** — **i ziu** 'the black one', **i lig** — **i ligu** 'the sick one, the coward' (for the case endings, cf. **plak-u** 'old man' § 51).

Note

In older texts there are various abstract nouns derived from adjectives and participles, e.g. *te muret* 'the good', *te keqte* 'the bad', *te ardhunt* 'arrival' — all neuters with prepositive and postpositive articles

62. **Syntagms from nouns** is the term used here for the combination of two or more inflected nouns. The simplest declension structure of this type is **indef. noun + noun**, e.g. *gazetë muri* 'wall newspaper' (i.e. a newspaper posted on a wall):

	Sg.	Pl.
Nom., Acc.	gazetë muri	gazeta muresh
Gen.	i gazete muri	i gazetave muresh
Dat.	gazete muri	gazetave muresh
Abl.	gazete muri	gazetash muresh ~ gazetave muresh

The second member of the syntagm remains unchanged in the indef. Abl. in both sg. and pl.: **muri** — **muresh**. In general, the members of the syntagm may occur combined in sg. and pl.:

drù — *drùj lisi or lisash* 'wood of oak *or* oaks'
punë burrash 'work for men'
vajza fisi 'girl of good family (lit. tribe)'

In contrast to other combinations of syntagms (cf. § 63), the absence of a connective morpheme is characteristic for the above type — indef. noun + indef. noun.

Note

It is important to distinguish carefully among the various types of constructions which, on the surface, seem quite similar or even identical, as for example.

frymë të ftohti 'draught of cold'

where *të* is not a connective morpheme between the first and second members, but is to be considered as an inseparable component of *ftohtë*.

63. Those **syntagms from nouns** which are composed of several members and in which the second or third member stands in the Gen. are bound to one another by the connective morphemes **i, e, të, së**. The major types are:

1. indef. noun + def. noun: **banor i qytetit** 'inhabitant of the city';
2. def. noun + def. noun: **banori i qytetit** 'the inhabitant of the city';
3. indef. noun + def. noun + def. noun: **banore e lagjes së qytetit** '(fem.) inhabitant of the quarter of the city'.

64. Examples of the declension of Types 1 and 2:

		Singular	
		m.	
		Type 1	Type 2
		indef.	def.
Nom.	banor i qytetit		banori i qytetit
Gen.	i banori të qytetit		i banorit të qytetit
Dat.	banori të qytetit		banorit të qytetit
Acc.	banor të qytetit		banorin e qytetit
Abl.	banori të qytetit		banorit të qytetit
Plural			
Nom.	banorë të qytetit		banorët e qytetit
Gen.	i banorëve të qytetit		i banorëve të qytetit
Dat.	banorëve të qytetit		banorëve të qytetit
Acc.	banorë të qytetit		banorët e qytetit
Abl.	banorësh të qytetit ~ banorëve të qytetit		banorëve të qytetit

		Singular	
		f.	
Nom.	banore e lagjes		banorja e lagjes
Gen.	i banorje të ~ së lagjes		i banores së lagjes
Dat.	banorje të ~ së lagjes		banores së lagjes
Acc.	banore të lagjes		banoren e lagjes
Abl.	banorje të ~ së lagjes		banores së lagjes

The connective morphemes are the same for masculine and feminine in the plural:

Nom. pl. banore të lagjes '(fem.) inhabitants of the quarter'

65. As is seen in the foregoing paradigms, the connective morpheme agrees strikingly in its gender forms with the def. Gen., Dat. and Abl. case forms of the preceding member, e.g.:

	m.	f.
def. Gen.	ı banorit të qytetit	ı banores së lagjes

If the preceding member of the syntagm stands in an oblique case of the indef. form, there is a variation between Geg and Tosk:

	Geg	Tosk
indef. Gen.	ı banorje së lagjes	ı banorje të lagjes

i.e. in Geg the connective morpheme **së** agrees with the gender of the first member of the syntagm. The Tosk variant, however, is now the accepted norm for the official literary language.

66. **Syntagms with three members** (indef. noun + def. noun + def. or indef. noun) consist of a sequence of three nouns, the second and third of which stand in the Gen. with a possessive function:

nji (një) banore **e** lagjës **së** qytetit
 'a (fem.) inhabitant of the quarter of the city'
 nji (një) banore **e** lagjës **së** nji (një) qyteti
 'a (fem.) inhabitant of the quarter of a city'

The sequence may be increased by three or more nouns in the indef. or def. form:

nji (një) banore **e** lagjës **së** qytetit **të** Vlorës
 'a (fem.) inhabitant of the quarter of the city of Vlorä'

Notes

1. In accelerated speech the case endings having similar sounds and the connective morpheme are reduced to one sound.

Gen. ı qytetit të Vlorës > qyteti-të-Vlorës 'the city of Vlorä'

2. Many dialects, among which several of the southern Italian Arbëresh, utilize only one morpheme to mark the case forms of the sequential members of the syntagm, as in the following example in the dialect of *Greet* in the southern Italian province of Avellino:

Gen. def. sg. ı thik-*s*-miz-*s* 'of the fly's sting'

3. The older Geg authors also often did not use the double marking when definiteness had to be expressed. The following construction is typical:

Gen. def. sg. ı kreje së malit *instead of*
 ı krejes së malit 'of the mountain's ridge'

where the form *kreje + së* appears to confirm that the indef. declension is the source of the def. declension.

67. The particularity of the declension of syntagms from nouns (as well as syntagms from noun + adj., cf. §83) is a result of: a) the inflected post-

positive article (cf. *rruga, rrugës*) being affixed as a regular case ending of the noun; b) the prepositive article, by contrast, occurring as a free or dynamic (movable) disengaged connective morpheme. The correct application of concordance between case endings and connective morphemes is best learned in texts and syntagm exercises

68. **Nouns without prepositive article + nouns with prepositive article** in sequence with each other in one syntagm best illustrate the concordance of case endings and prepositive article or connective morphemes. The construction chosen, **nji (një) portofol i të hollavet të vëllait** 'a wallet with (of) the money of (i.e. belonging to) the brother' is composed of **indef. noun + def. noun with prepos. article + def. noun with prepos. article**:

		sg.	
Nom.	nji (një) portofól i të hóllavet të të vëllait		
Gen.	i nji (një) portofoli i të hóllavet të ⁽¹⁾ të ⁽²⁾ vëllait		
Dat.	nji (një) portofoli i të hóllavet të ⁽¹⁾ të ⁽²⁾ vëllait		
Acc.	nji (një) portofól i të hóllavet të ⁽¹⁾ të ⁽²⁾ vëllait		
Abl.	nji (një) portofoli i të hóllavet të ⁽¹⁾ të ⁽²⁾ vëllait		

		pl.	
Nom.	disá portofola të ⁽¹⁾ të ⁽²⁾ hóllavet të ⁽¹⁾ të ⁽²⁾ vëllait ecc.		

të (1) is the obligatory connective morpheme of the Gen., **të (2)** is the prepositive article.

Note

Among writers, particularly, there is a tendency in such constructions to reduce the prepositive articles *të* and the endings *-t* as follows:

Gen. sg	i nji (një) portofoli të hóllave(t) te vëllait
Nom. pl	disá portofola të hóllave të vëllait

It is to be hoped that this tendency will achieve general currency!

The following synopsis gives the morphological functions of the prepositive articles:

Article	Determination		Number		Gender			Case marking	Connective morpheme
	indef	def	sg	pl	m	f	n		
i		+	+		+			+	+
e		+	+	+		+		+	+
të		+	+	+			+	+	+
së		+	+			+		+	+

Vocabulary

<i>djalë-i</i> boy, son <i>djelm-të</i> (<i>djem-të</i>)	<i>të</i> <i>dridhuna-t</i> (<i>të</i> <i>dridhura-t</i>) pl.
<i>dër-i</i> sea <i>dete</i>	shivering
<i>gazetë-a</i> newspaper -a	<i>të</i> <i>ftohtë-ftohtit</i> cold
<i>mbramje-a</i> (<i>mbrëmje-a</i>) evening -∅	<i>e</i> <i>hanë-a</i> (<i>e</i> <i>hënë-a</i>) Monday -e
<i>gjel-t</i> rooster -a	<i>e</i> <i>martë-a</i> Tuesday -e
<i>dhelbën-dhëlna</i> (<i>dhelbër-ra</i>) fox -a	<i>e</i> <i>mërkurë-a</i> Wednesday -e
<i>familje-a</i> family -∅	<i>e</i> <i>ëjte-ëjtja</i> (<i>e</i> <i>enjte-tja</i>) Thursday -e
<i>lojë-a</i> game <i>lojna</i> (<i>lójëra</i>)	<i>e</i> <i>prende-prendja</i> (<i>e</i> <i>premtë-premtja</i>)
<i>ujk-u</i> wolf <i>ujq-të</i>	Friday -e
<i>gjuetar-i</i> (<i>gjahtar-i</i>) hunter -ë	<i>e</i> <i>shtunë-a</i> Saturday -e
<i>zagâr-t</i> hunting dog -ë	<i>e</i> <i>diel-a</i> Sunday -e
<i>krah-u</i> ~ <i>i</i> arm -ë	<i>i</i> <i>ri</i> , <i>e</i> <i>re</i> young, new
<i>frigë-a</i> (<i>frikë-a</i>) fear	<i>hypi</i> (<i>hupi</i>) he climbed
<i>pushkë-a</i> rifle -a	<i>ka dalë</i> it came out, became known
<i>ligj-i</i> law -e	<i>llogarit</i> count, calculate, compute
<i>përrue-përroi</i> (<i>përrua-përroi</i>)	<i>besón</i> you believe, trust
stream <i>përroje</i> (<i>përronje</i>)	<i>iku</i> he, she went away
<i>vesh-i</i> ear -ë	<i>quhet</i> it is called
<i>ligjdhënë-s-i</i> (<i>ligjdhënës-i</i>) lawgiver	<i>ka ú</i> (<i>uri</i>) is hungry
-∅	<i>me shkue</i> to go
<i>lëkurë-a</i> pelt -a	<i>ndihmón</i> he, she helps
<i>dele-delja</i> sheep <i>dhen-të</i> ~ <i>dele</i>	<i>nji</i> (<i>një</i>) <i>ndër</i> one of
<i>micë-a</i> (<i>mace-ja</i>) cat -a (-∅)	<i>poshtë</i> below, beneath
<i>lëkurtar-t</i> furrier -ë	<i>përprjetë</i> up, upward
<i>dritë-a</i> light -a	<i>mâ nalt</i> (<i>më lart</i>) higher
<i>ditë-a</i> day -∅	<i>për në</i> for us
<i>vepër-vepra</i> work (of art, etc.) -a	<i>larg</i> distant, far away
<i>park-u</i> park -e ~ <i>parqe</i>	<i>moj</i> he! hey, you (sg.)!
<i>lajm-i</i> news -e	<i>pse</i> why, because
<i>vjeshtë-a</i> autumn -a	<i>tash e këndëj</i> (<i>tash e tutje</i>) from
<i>tesha-t</i> pl. clothes	now on
<i>të</i> <i>árdhuna-t</i> (<i>të</i> <i>árdhura-t</i>) pl. in-	<i>derisá</i> (<i>gjersá</i>) until
come	<i>nga</i> prep. with Nom. from
<i>të</i> <i>thermë-thermit</i> stab of pain -e	<i>nën</i> prep. with Acc. under
<i>i nip-i</i> nephew, grandson -a	<i>te</i> prep. with Nom. near, at, to
<i>degë-a</i> branch -∅	<i>ju lutem</i> please

Present Indicative

(unë) thom (them) 'I say'	ha 'I eat'
(ti) thue (thua)	ha
(ai, ajo) thotë	ha

Imperative

thuej! (thuaj!) say!
thoni! say! (pl.)

na, ne) thomi	hamë
(ju) thoni	hani
(atá, ató) thonë	hanë

Exercise 13

Ky është gjahtár dhelprash. Ky është një ndër parqe të qytetit. Ai nuk lot gishtin e dorës për ne: ai nuk na ndihmón. Ky është i nipi i zotit Duraku, do me thënë (do të thotë), djali i djalit të Durakut. Duraku e pyet të nipin: — Nga vjen ti? — Unë isha në dët thotë i nipi. Ai ka një gazetë në dorë dhe thotë: Ja, gazeta e mbrëmjes! Në gazetën e mbrëmjes janë lajmet e ditës, lajme ekonomike. I sëmuri nuk ka uri, ai ka ethe e të thermë në parzëm, ka të ftohtë e të dridhura. Të hënën vjen mjeku në shtëpi. I zoti i shtëpisë llogarít të árdhurat e të birit dhe të së bijës; me të hollat e të bijave i jati blen tasha dhe ushqim për familje. Loja e mijve -- gëzimi i micave — thotë pópulli.

Decline the following syntagms and do not forget, in the indef. forms of the declension, the words **nji (një)** for sg. and **disa** for pl.: **nji (një) park qyteti** — **disá parqe (parke) qyteti**; **parku i nji (një) qyteti**. Decline in the def. and indef. forms sg.: **nji (një) të ftohtë dimni (dimri)** — **të ftohtit e dimnit (dimrit)**; **drita e diellit të vjeshtës**.

Exercise 14

“Summer flowers” is a work of Naim Frashëri. The Albanian language is also called Albanian. This is an Albanian newspaper. The resident of No. 2 Dora d’Istria Street is the daughter of the owner of the house (at) No. 1 Jeronim De Rada Street: father and daughter are residents of one neighborhood, therefore of one city.

Text 7

Gjeli e dhelpna

Ishte nji gjel e nji dhelpën. Gjeli ishte në lis e dhelpna ishte poshtë, nën lis.

— O gjel! — i thotë dhelpna — a e di lajmin e ri? Ka dalë nji ligj që thotë: tash e këndëj duhet me shkue dhelpna me pula, ujku me dele e mica me mij.

Gjeli hypi edhe nji degë mâ nalt.

- Pse? Nuk po më besón? Pyet dhelpna.

- Po, po kam besim në ligjin e ri — tha gjeli -- por atjë larg po vjen nji gjuetar me zagarë. Gjuetari ka në krah nji pushkë...

Dhelpna me frigë iku përronit përpjetë.

— Ku po shkon, moj nuse? — tha gjeli. — A nuk ke besim në ligjin e ri?

— Po, po, kam besim — tha ajo — por derisa shkon fjala në vesh të ligdhânesit, më shkon lëkura te lëkurtari.

Lesson 8 — Leksioni i tetë

Adjectives

69. A considerable number of Albanian nouns may also occur, without additional formants, as adjectives. These are primarily *nomina agentis*, patronymics and nouns of all semantic tendencies which easily transform themselves into adjectives for particular qualities of expression. If it is said about a certain person, **rúeju (rúaju) asáj dhelpne (dhelpre)** 'watch out for that fox', the immediate thought is of the attribute *slyness*, which is transferred to that person.

70. In order to recognize those adjectives which are, according to their form, difficult to distinguish from nouns, it is necessary to note their position in the phrase. The **adjectives without article** are always placed after the noun in attributive function:

nji (një) burrë **plak** është (është) zakonisht edhe **flokbardhë**
an **old man** is usually also **white-haired**

Plak-u 'old man' and **flokbardhë** (here in attributive and predicative position) may also occur as nouns (**plaku** as subject and **flokbardhët** as object):

në sallë **plaku** kërkonte me sy vetëm **flokbardhët**
in the hall, **the old man** searched with his eye for only **the white-haired ones**

71. The close relations between both word categories permit the division of the adjective into two classes, precisely like those of the noun (cf. § 48).

Class 1 comprises the adjectives without articles:

noun adj.
punëtori **punëtor** 'the diligent worker'
vajza **punëtore** 'the diligent girl'

Class 2 comprises the adjectives with article:

noun adj.
mali **i thatë** 'the barren mountain'
fusha **e gjanë (gjerë)** 'the broad plain'

The so-called **nominalized adjectives** (cf. § 61) are derived from this category.

72. The **Class 1 adjectives** are divided into those derived from: a) **nouns**, b) **Class 2 adjectives**, c) **verbal forms** (mostly participles), and d) **compounds**. It should be noted further that this class is marked according to suffix, gender and number.

Ending	Masculine		Feminine	
	sg.	pl.	sg.	pl.
-(t)án	krután 'native of Kruja' (Kru-ja: kru-tán)	krutanë	krutane	-∅
-ák	dibrán 'native of Dibra'	dibranë	dibrane	-∅
	fierák 'native of Fier' (Fier-ák)	fierakë	fierake	-∅
-as	vjeshtëák 'autumn-' (vjeshtë-a 'autumn')	vjeshtakë	vjeshtake	-∅
	tiránas 'native of Tirana' anas 'native, aborigine' (anë-a 'region')	-∅	tiránase ánase	-∅ -∅
-át	vlonját 'native of Vlona' (Vlonë-Vlorë: vlon-i-át)	vlonjatë	vlonjate	-∅
-(t)ár	fshatár 'peasant' (fshat- 'village' fshat-ar)	fshatarë	fshatare	-∅
	agrár 'agrarian'	agrare	agrarë	-∅
	lopár 'cowboy' (lopë-a 'cow': lop-ár)	loparë	lopare	-∅
	shqiptár 'Albanian' (shqip-tár)	shqiptarë	shqiptare	-∅
-éz	japonéz 'Japanese'	japonezë	japoneze	-∅
-(n)ík	fisnik 'generous' (fis-i 'tribe': fis-nik)	fisnikë	fisnike	-∅
	jetik 'old' (jetë-a 'life': jet-ik)	jetikë	jetike	-∅
	heroík 'heroic'	heroikë	heroike	-∅
-ist	pensionist 'pensioner'	-ë	pensioniste	-∅
-iv	objektiv 'objective'	objektivë	objektive	-∅
-(t)ór	punëtór 'laborious' (punë-a 'work': punë-tór)	punëtorë	punëtore	-∅
	diellór 'solar' (diell-i 'sun': diell-ór)	diellorë	diellore	-∅
	verór 'summer-' (verë-a 'summer': ver-ór)	verorë	verore	-∅
-ósh	gjumósh 'sleepyhead'	gjumoshë	gjumoshe	-∅

Note

The adjectives without article having the above formants are, especially in the modern language, very productive, particularly those with the suffixes *-ist* and *-iv*.

Group b) adjectives derived from **Class 2** adjectives express a certain pejorative or weakened quality in comparison with the original adjective:

Ending	Masculine		Feminine	
	sg.	pl.	sg.	pl.
-án	thatán 'skinny'	thatanë	thatane	-∅
	(i, e thatë 'dry': that-án)			
	zeshkán 'brunette'	zeshkanë	zeshkane	-∅
	(i, e zeshkët 'brown': zeshk-án)			
-ásh	shurdhán 'deaf'	shurdhanë	shurdhane	-∅
	(i, e shurdhët: shurdh-án)			
	bardhášh 'whitish'	bardhashë	bardhashe	-∅
	vëngërášh 'strabismic'	vëngërashë	vëngërashë	-∅
-ósh	(i, e vëngër-t 'cross-eyed')			
	gjanósh 'broad shouldered'	-ë	gjanoshe	-∅
	(i, e gjanë 'broad')			
	-ók	leshtók 'woollen'	leshtokë	leshtoke
	(i, e leshtë 'of wool')			

Group c) adjectives without article, derived from participles and the present indicative, are extremely productive today; they can also be used as *nomina agentis*. Only a few examples are given here.

Ending	Masculine		Feminine	
	sg.	pl.	sg.	pl.
-(ë)s	lëpis 'licker'	lëpisë	lëpise	-∅
	(lëpirës)	(lëpirës)	(lëpirëse)	-∅
	(Participle: lëpi Geg 'licked': lëpirë T.)			
	gjurmues 'researcher'	-∅	gjurmúese	-∅
	(Participle: gjurmue)			
	shkelës 'violator'	-∅	shkélëse	-∅
	(Participle: shkelë 'tread')			
punonjës 'workman'	-∅	punónjëse	-∅	
(punónj T. 'worked': punónj-ës)				

Like the nouns with the same endings (cf. §41), there is also in this group of adjectives no contrast between sg./pl. m. and between sg./pl. f.

Groupe d) comprises those adjectives without article which derive from compounds of the following type:

- noun + noun: **zemërgúr** (m.) — **zemërgure** (f.) 'unmerciful' (**zemër** 'heart' + **gur** 'stone');
- noun + adj.: **zemërbutë** 'merciful' (m., f.) (**zemër** + **butë** 'mild');
- noun + part.: **dordhanë** 'generous' (m., f.) (**dorë** 'hand' + **dhanë** 'given');
- adv. + noun: **bashkatdhetár** (m.) — **bashkatdhetare** (f.) 'compatriot' (**bashkë** 'together' + **atdhetár** 'patriot').

Note

The formation of the plural for these compounds depends upon the construction type of their final member, this applies to both masculines and feminines, e.g. *njerëz zemërbute* (m.) 'merciful people' *gra zemërbuta* (f.) 'merciful women'. There are, however, also hybrid forms, especially among the nouns pl. *njerëz zemërgur* 'unmerciful people'.

73. The Class I adjectives without article are declined neither in the sg. nor in the pl. Despite this, it is important to observe how this class is integrated in the declension of a syntagm: **nji (një) shkollë fillore e qytetit** 'a city elementary school (lit. an elementary school of the city)'.

indef.

sg.

Nom.	nji (një) shkollë fillore e qytetit
Gen.	i (një) shkolle fillore të ~ së qytetit
Dat.	shkolle fillore të ~ së qytetit
Acc.	shkollë fillore të qytetit
Abl.	shkolle fillore të ~ së qytetit

pl.

Nom.	shkolla fillore të qytetit
Gen.	i shkollave fillore të qytetit
Dat.	shkollave fillore të qytetit
Acc.	shkolla fillore të qytetit
Abl.	shkollash fillore të qytetit

def.

sg.

Nom.	shkolla fillore të qytetit
Gen.	i shkollës fillore të ~ së qytetit
Dat.	shkollës fillore të ~ së qytetit
Acc.	shkollën fillore të qytetit
Abl.	shkollës fillore të ~ së qytetit

pl.

Nom.	shkollat fillore të qytetit
Gen.	i shkollavet fillore të qytetit
Dat.	shkollavet fillore të qytetit
Acc.	shkollat fillore të qytetit
Abl.	shkollavet fillore të qytetit

It should be noted that the prepositive article **së**, as a variant of **të** in the Gen., Dat. and Abl. sg., is *not* used in the contemporary normalized literary language.

Note

The following considerations attach to Class 1 adjectives:

They agree with the noun they modify in number and gender (m. and f.); the adjectives without article have no neuter, no def. form, and they are not declined. Adjectives of Class 1, in contrast to those of Class 2, mark the existing grammatical categories (number and gender) by means of suffixes (cf § 74)

74. **Class 2 adjectives** mark the **gender** by prefixing the sg. articles *i* (m.) or *e* (f.) and the pl. by *të*, *e* for all genders.

Note

The prepositive *neuter* article *te* is used only in peripheral dialects and in Old Albanian:

ujë *të* ftohtë 'cold water'

75. The adjectives with prepositive articles are divided here according to their endings:

a) **-ë** (for all genders) serves as an ending or stem for so-called '**primary adjectives**':

b) **-ët, -të, -t** (m., f.) construct adjectives from various word types, mostly those ending in a consonant;

c) **-m(ë), -ëm** (m.), **-me** (f.) T. **-r(ë)** (m., f.) construct adjectives from participles ending in a vowel, as well as from other word types such as adverbs;

d) **-un (-ur)** (m., f.) are typical formants for adjectives from participles ending in a consonant;

e) **-shëm** (m.) **-shme** (f.) is the formant for transforming various word types into adjectives.

Ending	Masculine		Feminine	
	sg.	pl.	sg.	pl.
a) -ë	<i>i</i> bardhë 'white'	të bardhë	<i>e</i> bardhë	të bardha
	<i>i</i> gjallë 'living'	të -∅	<i>e</i> gjallë	të gjalla
	<i>i</i> gjatë 'high'	të -∅	<i>e</i> gjatë	të gjata
	<i>i</i> mbarë 'good'	të -∅	<i>e</i> mbarë	të mbara
b) -ët -t(ë)	<i>i</i> lehtë 'light'	të -∅	<i>e</i> lehtë	të lehta
	<i>i</i> hapët 'open'	të -∅	<i>e</i> hapët	të hapëta
	<i>i</i> tretë 'third'	të -∅	<i>e</i> tretë	të treta
	<i>i</i> hekurt 'iron'	të -∅	<i>e</i> hekurt	të hëkurta
	<i>i</i> shpejtë 'quick'	të -∅	<i>e</i> shpejtë	të shpejta
c) -(ë)m(ë) -r(ë)	<i>i</i> premë 'cut'	të premë	<i>e</i> preme	të preme
	<i>i</i> prerë	të prerë	<i>e</i> prerë	të prera
	<i>i</i> kryem 'complete'	të -∅	<i>e</i> kryeme	të -∅
	<i>i</i> kryer	të -∅	<i>e</i> kryer	të -a
	<i>i</i> shkuem 'past'	të -∅	<i>e</i> shkúeme	të -∅

	i shkuar	të -∅	e shkuar	të -a
	i sotëm 'of today'	të -∅	e sotme	të -∅
	i nesërm 'of tomorrow'	të -∅	e nësërme	të -∅
	i ndërmjëmë 'middle'	të -∅	e ndërmjeme	të -∅
	i sipërm 'upper'	të -∅	e sipërme	të -∅
d) -ur: (-ur)	i pjekur: 'ripe'	të pjekur	e pjekur	të pjékuna
	i pjekur	të pjekur	e pjekur	të pjékura
	i lodhur: 'tired'	të -∅	e lodhun	të lódhuna
	i lodhur	të -∅	e lodhur	të lódhura
	i hapun 'open'	të -∅	e hapun	të hápuna
	i hapur	të -∅	e hapur	të hápura
e) -shëm: -shme	i ndieshëm 'sensitive'	të -∅	e ndieshme	të -∅
	i pashëm 'attractive'	të -∅	e pashme	të -∅
	i sjellshëm 'polite'	të -∅	e sjellshme	të -∅
	i zorshëm 'difficult'	të -∅	e zorshme	të -∅
	i djeshëm 'of yesterday'	të -∅	e djeshme	të -∅
	i hershëm 'early'	të -∅	e hershme	të -∅

f) In terms of formal grammar, adjectives from participles in **-në** may be included in **Group a)** In this connection, the striking parallels between the Tosk and Geg forms should be noted:

	<i>Masculine</i>		<i>Feminine</i>	
	sg.	pl.	sg.	pl.
T	i dhënë 'given'	të dhënë	e dhënë	të dhëna
Geg	i dhanë ~ dhanun	të -∅	e dhanë ~ dhanun	të dhana ~ dhánuna
T	i lënë 'abandoned'	të -∅	e lënë	të lëna
Geg	i lanë ~ lanun	të -∅	e lanë ~ lanun	të lana ~ lânuna
T	i thënë 'said'	të -∅	e thënë	të thëna
Geg	i thanë ~ thanun	të -∅	e thanë ~ thanun	të thana ~ thánuna
T	i vënë 'placed'	të -∅	e venë	të vëna
T	i zënë 'occupied'	të -∅	e zënë	të zëna
G	i zanë ~ zanun	të -∅	e zanë ~ zanun	të zana ~ zánuna

76. Adjectives with prepositive articles are also formed by attaching the prefixes a) **pa-** and b) **për-**. In the construction of this group suffixes are required, among which are **-ëft**, **-të**:

<i>Prefix</i>	<i>Masculine</i>		<i>Feminine</i>	
	sg.	pl.	sg.	pl.
a) pa-	i pakripë 'tasteless'	të pakripë	e pakripë	të pakripa
	i papunë 'unemployed'	të -∅	e papunë	të papuna
	i paskáj 'endless'	të -∅	e paskáj	të paskaje
	i pafát 'luckless'	të -∅	e pafát	të pafate
	i paanë 'infinite'	të -∅	e paanë	të paanë

b) pë-	i përciptë 'superficial'	të -∅	e përciptë	të -a
	(cipë-a 'skin': përcip-të)			
	i përgjumët 'sleepy'	të -∅	e përgjumët	të -a
	(gjumë-i 'sleep': përgjumë-t)			

Note

The preposition *pa* 'without', i.e. *i pa*, is frequently not bound to a noun, hence the noun remains unchanged:

sg. vend *i pa* zot 'land without a lord' pl. vende të *pa* zot 'lands without a lord'

The union of *i, e pa* + noun or adjective should be understood adjectivally even when they are not written together, as occurred in earlier orthography

i arsyeshëm 'reasonable' *i pa arsyeshëm* 'unreasonable'

77. A number of adjectives cannot be integrated into the categories thus far differentiated; hence they are placed in a separate series:

	<i>Masculine</i>		<i>Feminine</i>	
	sg.	pl.	sg.	pl.
a) i ambël 'sweet'		të ambël	e ambël	të ambla
(i ëmbël)		(të ëmbël)	(e ëmbël)	(të ëmbla)
i huej 'foreign'		të huej	e huej	të hucj
(i huaj)		(të huaj)	(e huaj)	(të huaj)
b) i vej (e ve) 'widowed'		të vej (ve)	e vejë	të veja
i ri 'new'		të rij (rinj)	e re	të reja
i zi 'black'		të zez (zinj)	e zezë	të zeza
i pashók 'unrivaled'		të pashokë	e pashoqe	të pashoqe
(i pashók)		(të pashokë)		
c) i madh 'large'		të mëdhëj	e madhe	të mëdhá
		(të mëdhénj)		
i keq 'evil'		të këqij	e keqe	të këqia
		(të këqínj)		
d) i vogël 'small'		të vogjël	e vogël	të vogla
		(vegjël)		
i lig 'bad'		të ligj	e ligë	të liga
i egër 'wild'		të egjër (egër)	e egër	të egra

Note

The so-called 'irregularity' of these adjectives is partly the result of normal Albanian phonetic and morphological phenomena, among which are:

1. The shift in accent to the plural ending in *i madh* and *i keq* (cf. c) also occurs in a whole series of nouns (cf. § 39).
2. For the palatalization *g.gj* as contrast between sg. and pl. in d), cf. § 33.

78. Up to this point, the adjectives have been divided according to their

grammatical features (with or without article and gender and number marker), according to *word-building formants* and the *position* which they occupy in the phrase. The most difficult task, however, is to classify the adjective according to meaning, for the purposes of which the following factors must be considered:

- a) The meaning of the basic word from which the adjective is derived: **i artë** from **ar-i** 'gold' and
- b) The function of the formant (in **i artë** the suffix **-të** which expresses a quality or attribute).
- c) The grammatical category of the word from which the adjective is derived, such as noun, participial form of the verb, etc., may also be helpful in determining the semantic classification of the adjective.

Note

Only the so-called 'primary' adjectives (cf. *Group a*) in § 75) are not derived from other words.

79. On the basis of these criteria, the adjectives of Class 2 are divided broadly as follows:

Group I comprises the 'primary' adjectives of **Group a** (including the irregular adjectives in § 76) and the **Group b** adjectives in **-ët, -të, -t**. This group mainly expresses quality and size.

Group II comprises the adjectives of **Group c** in **-m(ë)** (m.) **-me** (f.), T. **-r(ë)**, as well as the adjectivized participles in **-në** (**Group f**, § 75) and **-un (-ur)** (**Group d**). As original participles, these are closely associated semantically with the verb and express completed actions or events.

Groups III corresponds to the meaning of the suffix **-shëm** (m.) **-shme** (f.) (**Group e**, § 75), which is attached to various types of words (nouns, adjectives, participles, etc.). This group expresses **quality** and **state** of a durative type. Semantically, it stands closest to **Group I**.

80. Examples of semantic use, according to Groups I, II, III

- I. **derr i egër** 'wild pig'
- I. **derr i butë** 'tame pig' (as a domestic animal)
- II. **derr i zbutun** (zbutur) 'tamed pig' (**zbutë** part. + **-un (-ur)** suffix)
- III. **derr i zbutshëm** 'tameable pig' (**zbut-shëm**), meaning a wild pig possessing qualities permitting it to be tamed
- I. **ujë i kulluet** 'pure water'
- II. **ujë i kulluem** 'purified water'
- III. **ujë i kullúeshëm** 'purifiable, filterable water'

There are considerable differences in meaning between:

- II. **i motuem** 'obsolete, antiquated' and

- III. i motshëm > moçëm 'old'
 II. i thyem 'broken' (Part. **thye+m**) and
 III. i thÿeshëm 'fragile, breakable'
 II. i nderuem 'honored' (**nderue+m** from **nderoj** 'honor' [vb.]) and
 III. i ndershëm 'honorable' (**nderë-a** 'honor' [noun] + **-shëm**)

Note

As noted above (§ 79), *-m* and *-un* are regular participial endings in Old Albanian. Adjectives are derived from such participles only by means of the prepositive article:

Part *shkuam* - adj. i *shkuom* ~ *shkuem* 'gone'

Part *lypun* - adj. i *lypun* 'demanded'

Southern Geg (Elbasan) has preserved this form of the participle

kam lypun Tosk *kam lypur* 'I have demanded'

81. In order to arrive at a better understanding of the **Class 2 adjective declension system**, one must refer to the declension of **Class 2 nouns**. Two rules, however, should be noted:

a) The adjective in attributive position (after the noun) or in a predicative function always remains in the indefinite form and, as has been seen already, marks only the gender and number (cf. § 56 ff.):

miku i mbramë 'the last friend'

bora e madhe 'the big snow'

fjala e tij ishte e urtë 'his word was clever'

b) If the Class 2 adjective occurs before the noun, it stands in the definite form and is declined like those nouns with prepositive and postpositive articles (cf. § 38):

i mbrami mik 'the last friend'

e para borë 'the first snow'

That is, the noun in postpositive position takes over the forms of the adjective, is not declined and marks only the number.

Note

In Old Albanian, however, the adjective in postpositive position agrees with the noun in all forms, i.e. it may be declined in the definite form as well. This appears in the oldest Albanian text (baptismal formula of 1462) also:

unte paghesont premenit Atit et birit et spertit sentit

'ego te baptiso in nome Patris et Filii et Spiritus Sancti'

where *spertit sentit* should be read as *shpertit shenit* (Gen.). Such examples frequently occur in later Geg texts too, e.g. in *Kuvendit i Arbënit* (1702), p. 106:

plaga e pershpircmëja (Nom.) 'spirituale vulnus'

82. Summary of the declension of the prepositive articles of Class 2 adjectives according to the schema **noun + adj.** (+ noun or adj.):

Singular				
	m.		f.	
	indef.	def.	indef.	def.
Nom.	i	i	e	e
Gen.	të	të	të ~ së	së
Dat.	të	të	të ~ së	së
Acc.	të	e	të	e
Abl.	të	të	të ~ së	së

Plural				
	m.		f.	
	indef.		def.	
Nom.	të		e	
Gen.	të		të	
Dat.	të		të	
Acc.	të		e	
Abl.	të	(for f. të ~ së)	të	

As has been mentioned already, the typical Geg variant **së** in the indef. forms of the fem. is not used in the contemporary normalized literary language.

83. Examples of the declension noun + Class 2 adj.:

- (m.) pus i thellë 'deep well'
 (f.) luginë e thellë 'deep valley'

Singular				
	m.		f.	
	indef.		def.	
Nom.	pus i thellë		pusi i thellë	
Gen.	i pusi të thellë		i pusit të thellë	
Dat.	pusi të thellë		pusit të thellë	
Acc.	pus të thellë		pusin e thellë	
Abl.	pusi të thellë		pusit të thellë	

Plural				
	m.		f.	
	indef.		def.	
Nom.	pusa të thellë		pusat e thellë	
Gen.	i púsave të thellë		i púsavet të thellë	
Dat.	púsave të thellë		púsavet të thellë	
Acc.	pusa të thellë		pusat e thellë	
Abl.	pusash të ~ së thellë		púsavet të thellë	

Singular				
	m.		f.	
	indef.		def.	
Nom.	luginë e thellë		luginat e thellë	

Gen.	i lugine të ~ së thellë	i luginës së thellë
Dat.	lugine të ~ së thellë	luginës së thellë
Acc.	luginë të thellë	luginën e thellë
Abl.	lugine të ~ së thellë	luginës së thellë

Plura!

Nom.	lugina të thella	luginat e thella
Gen.	i luginave të thella	i luginavet të thella
Dat.	luginave të thella	luginavet të thella
Acc.	lugina të thella	luginat e thella
Abl.	luginash të ~ së thella	luginavet të thella

If the syntagm is expanded to noun + adj. + noun (e.g. **luginë e thellë e malit** 'deep valley of the mountain'), it is declined like the word group in § 73.

Note

In many Arberesh dialects, e.g. in Falconara Albanese (Calabria), the article variant *të ~ i* occurs in the Acc indef sg.

mora një gur *të* madh ~ mora një gur *i* madh
'I took a large stone'

84. **The declension of the neuter adjective** is superfluous due to the change of the old neuters into masculines:

ujë **të** ftohtë > ujë **i** ftohtë 'cold water'

The neuter adjectives, however, are not always easily suppressed, particularly as attributives of nouns derived from participles or adjectives of the type **të ngranë-t** 'the food (i.e. that which is eaten)', **të nxehtë** 'the warmth'. Doublets thus occur in current development:

të ftohtë **të** thekshëm (n) ~ të ftohtë **i** thekshëm (m.) 'piercing cold'

The following is an example of the declension of **neuter noun + neuter adj.**:

Singular

	n.	
	indef.	def.
Nom.	nji (një) të ftohtë të thekshëm	të ftohti e thekshëm
Gen.	i të ftohti të thekshëm	i të ftohtit të thekshëm
Dat.	të ftohti të thekshëm	të ftohtit të thekshëm
Acc.	të ftohtë të thekshëm	të ftohtit e thekshëm
Abl.	të ftohti të thekshëm	të ftohtit të thekshëm

The neuter nouns from participles and adjectives have no plural. The classical neuter nouns, on the other hand (primarily names of materials), become feminine in the plural and simultaneously change their meaning as well (cf. § 38):

- sg. ujë të mirë (n.) 'good water'
 pl. ujna (újëra) të mira (f.) 'good waters'

85. Class 2 adjectives stand before the noun:

- a) in exclamations or emphatic expressions, such as **e lumja nana (nëna) për djalin!** 'how happy the mother is for the child!';
 b) in word groups with certain adjectives, such as **i ashtuqéjtuni—e ashtuqéjtuna (i ashtuqájhuri—e ashtuqájtura)** 'the so-called', as well as facultative **i mbrami—e mbramja** 'the last', **i vetëm—e vetmja** 'the only', **i pari—e para** 'the first' (cf. § 114 ordinal numbers);
 c) in the superlative (cf. §§ 87-89).

Examples of the definite declension **adj. + noun + adj. or noun:**

- (m.) **i ashtuqéjtuni gjel i artë** 'the so-called golden rooster'
 (f.) **e mbramja birë e kavallit** 'the last hole of the flute'

Singular

m. def.

Nom.	i ashtuqéjtuni gjel i artë
Gen.	i të ashtuqéjtunit gjel të artë
Dat.	të ashtuqéjtunit gjel të artë
Acc.	të ashtuqéjtunin gjel të artë
Abl.	të ashtuqéjtunit gjel të artë

Plural

Nom.	të ashtuqéjtunit gjela të artë
Gen.	i të ashtuqéjtunvet gjela të artë
Dat.	të ashtuqéjtunvet gjela të artë
Acc.	të ashtuqéjtunit gjela të artë
Abl.	të ashtuqéjtunvet gjela të artë

Singular

f. def.

Nom.	e mbramja birë e kavallit
Gen.	i së mbrames birë të kavallit
Dat.	së mbrames birë të kavallit
Acc.	të mbramen birë të kavallit
Abl.	së mbrames birë të kavallit

Plural

Nom.	të mbramet bira të kavallit
Gen.	i të mbrámevet bira të kavallit
Dat.	të mbrámevet bira të kavallit
Acc.	të mbramet bira të kavallit
Abl.	të mbrámevet bira të kavallit

86. **Comparative forms of the adjective** are constructed periphrastically by means of a particle. For the positive degree, the simple adjective is used: **i ri** 'young', **punëtor** 'diligent'. The schema for equality is **aq + adj. + sa + adj. or noun**:

Genci është (është) aq i ri sa i urtë 'Genc is as young as he is intelligent' (i.e. he is young as well as intelligent)

Genci është (është) aq i ri sa Besimi 'Genc is as young as Besim'

87. The **comparative** and **superlative** are expressed by means of the particle **mâ (më)** + adj. If the adjective appears in the indefinite form with pre-positive **mâ (më)**, it yields an indefinite comparative:

hékuri është (është) mâ (më) i randë (rëndë) se guri
'the iron is heavier than the stone'

mâ (më) + adj. in the def. form denotes:

a) the definite comparative:

Cilin gur don? Bjer ndër atá dy mâ (më) të randin (rëndin).
'Which stone do you want? Bring the heavier of the two.'

b) the absolute superlative:

ai është (është) mâ (më) i miri 'he is the best'

88. The object with which comparison is made is linked by **se** or **se sa**, as well as by **nga** (Tosk) + Nom.:

vajza është (është) mâ (më) e re se ~ nga djali
'the girl is younger than the boy'

A genitive may also appear after the adjective in superlatives:

ai është (është) mâ (më) i miri i të gjithëve 'he is the best of all'

89. **Examples of the declension for indef. and def. comparative:**

		Singular		
		m.	indef.	f.
Nom.		nji (një) mâ (më) i urtë		mâ (më) e urtë
Gen.	i	nji (një) mâ (më) të urti		mâ (më) të së urte
Dat.		mâ (më) të urti		mâ (më) të së urte
Acc.		mâ (më) të urtë		mâ (më) të urtë
Abl.		mâ (më) të urtë		mâ (më) të së urtë
		Plural		
		m.	indef.	f.
Nom.		(disá) mâ (më) të urtë		(disá) mâ (më) të urta
Gen.	i	(disá) mâ (më) të urtëve		i (disá) mâ (më) të urtave
Dat.		mâ (më) të urtëve		mâ (më) të urtave

Acc.	mâ (më) të urtë	mâ (më) të urta
Abl.	mâ (më) të urtësh ~ úrtëve	mâ (më) të urtash ~ úrtave

Singular

	m.	def.	f.
Nom.	mâ (më) i urti		mâ (më) e urta
Gen.	i mâ (më) të urtit		mâ (më) së urtës
Dat.	mâ (më) të urtit		mâ (më) së urtës
Acc.	mâ (më) të urtin		mâ (më) të urtën
Abl.	mâ (më) të urtit		mâ (më) së urtës

Plural

	m.	def.	f.
Nom.	mâ (më) të urtët		mâ (më) të urtat
Gen.	i mâ (më) të úrtëvet		mâ (më) të úrtavet
Dat.	mâ (më) të úrtëvët		mâ (më) të úrtavet
Acc.	mâ (më) të úrtëvet		mâ (më) të úrtavet
Abl.	mâ (më) të úrtëvet		mâ (më) të úrtavet

The declension forms of the nominalized adjective are identical with those of Class 2 nouns (cf. § 60). For purposes of further clarity, several examples follow to illustrate the **indef. comparative**:

a) used nominally:

ky ásht (ëshhtë) mendimi i nji (një) mâ (më) të urti (Gen. indef. sg.) se ju
 'this is the thought of a more intelligent (person) than you';

fjala i takón nji (një) mâ (më) të urti (Dat. indef. sg.) se ju
 'the word belongs to a more intelligent (person) than you'

b) used adjectivally:

ky ásht (ëshhtë) mendimi i nji (një) njeriu mâ (më) të urtë se ju
 'this is the thought of a more intelligent person than you'

Thus, the prepositive noun is declined, while the following adjective remains unchanged (cf. § 80).

In the def. comparative and in the superlative, the adjective is placed before the noun:

Nom. sg. mâ (më) i urti njeri i qytetit 'the most intelligent man of the city'

Gen. sg. i mâ (më) të urtit njeri të qytetit, etc.

Nom. pl. mâ (më) të urtat vajza të qytetit 'the most intelligent girls of the city'

Gen. pl. i mâ (më) të úrtavet vajza të qytetit, etc.

In this case, the noun is not declined, but remains unchanged in the indef. form of the sg. or pl.

It is evident, therefore, that the first member (whether noun or adjective) is always declined, but the second member remains unchanged.

90. A certain comparative gradation (elative) may be constructed with **shumë** 'very' or **tepër** 'too':

ai është (është) shumë ~ tepër i mirë 'he is very (too) good'

A lesser degree is expressed by means of **pak** 'little', **mâ (më) pak** 'less':

mësimi është (është) pak i vështurë 'the lesson is a little difficult'

91. The comparative degree of Class I adjectives (i.e. adjectives without article) is also constructed with **mâ (më)**:

vajza është (është) mâ (më) punëtore se djali
'the girl is more diligent than the boy'

Vocabulary

<i>trim-e</i> brave	<i>çelik-u</i> steel <i>çelike</i>
<i>trim-i</i> hero -a	<i>kryeqytët-i</i> capital -e
<i>krahinë-a</i> district, area -a	<i>histori-a</i> history -∅
<i>kangëtar-i</i> <i>kangëtare-ja</i> / <i>këngëtar-i</i> <i>këngëtare-ja</i>) singer -ë, -∅	<i>historian-i</i> historian -ë
<i>kulturë-a</i> culture -a	<i>i panjohun (panjohur)</i> unknown
<i>tokë-a</i> earth, land -a	<i>studues-i</i> scholar -∅
<i>luftëtar-i</i> warrior, soldier -ë	<i>sesion-i</i> session -e
<i>diplomât-i</i> diplomat -ë	<i>kolëgj-i</i> college -e
<i>hollësi-a</i> subtlety -∅ ~ -na (-ra)	<i>Shën Adriani</i> Saint Adrian
<i>dëshmitar-</i> witness -ë	<i>Akademia e Shkencave</i> Academy of Sciences
<i>brymë-a</i> hoar-frost, frost	<i>bashkëpunim-i</i> cooperation -e
<i>faqe-faqja</i> face, side -∅	<i>Lidhja e Shkrimtarëve</i> Union of Writers
<i>bahçe-bahçja</i> garden -∅	<i>artist-i</i> artist -ë
<i>kangë (këngë-a)</i> <i>popullore</i> folk- song -∅	<i>Instituti i Studimeve Pedagogjike</i> Institute of Pedagogical Studies
<i>poët-i</i> poet -ë	<i>themelim-i</i> foundation, establish- ment -e
<i>thanje-a (thënie-a)</i> proverb -∅	<i>i, e lashtë</i> old
<i>rrezik-u</i> danger <i>rreziqe</i>	<i>fuqishëm</i> strong, powerful
<i>ngjarje-a</i> event -∅	<i>i, e hollë</i> fine, subtle
<i>mollë-a</i> apple -a ~ -ë	<i>i, e rrallë</i> rare
<i>venë-a (verë-a)</i> wine -na (-ra)	<i>i, e shëndoshë</i> healthy
<i>shok-u</i> comrade <i>shokë</i>	<i>i, e vorfën (varfër)</i> poor
<i>kafë-kafeja</i> ~ <i>kafë-kafja</i> coffee	<i>të gjithë</i> all
<i>petk-u</i> dress -a	<i>diplomatik</i> diplomatic
<i>et-i</i> ~ <i>etje-a</i> thirst	<i>i, e shkuar</i> past
<i>fqi-u</i> ~ <i>fqi-fqini</i> neighbor <i>fqij</i>	<i>i, e hollë</i> thin, slender
<i>ngjyrë-a</i> color -a	
<i>pÿetje-pÿetja</i> question -∅	

e holla the slender one (girl)
vetull-kunorë with crown-shaped
 eyebrows
shkencôr-e scientific
i, e kushtuar dedicated
arbërësh Italo-Albanian
arsimôr-e educational
i, e gjanë (gjerë) broad, wide
i, e veshur dressed
i, e dredhur curly
zemërmirë good-hearted
i, e hijshëm handsome
i, e zellshëm eager, zealous, dili-
 gent
i, e lumtun (lumtur) happy, lucky
i, e leshtë woollen
hundë-shkabë eagle-nosed
sypëtrit falcon-eyed

i, e armatosur armed
nga më të hollët the most intelli-
 gent, cleverest
madhëshëtôr proud, magnificent
ndërsá while
mjaft enough, quite
gjithmonë always
shkrep shines
kalón goes away, passes
organizuan they organized
bile even
dje yesterday
fillój begin
shuan etjen it quenches the thirst
hapet is opened
250-vjetori 250th anniversary
hy(j) brenda enter
qoftë e shkuar! may it be gone!

Present Indicative

(unë) due (dua) I want
 (ti) do ~ don
 (ai, ajo) do ~ don

(na ~ ne) duem (duam) ~ domë
 (ju) doni
 (atá, ató) duen (duan) ~ donë

Exercise 15

Qumështi është gjithmonë i bardhë, ndërsá vera mund të jetë e kuqe ose e bardhë. Djali i fqiut është zemërmirë me shokë dhe i zellshëm, por e bija e Zojës është më e zellshme. Një këngë popullore fillón: *Trim mbi trima Gjergj Elëz Alia*, do të thotë se Gj. El. Alia ishte më trim se të gjithë trimat e krahinës së tij. Këngëtarja kishte një zë të fortë, aq të fortë sa të këndshëm. Qyteti i Apolonisë është dëshmitar i një kulture shumë të lashtë të tokës shqiptare. Luftëtarët e mëdhënj ishin edhe diplomatë nga më të hollët. Heroi kishte një durim dhe një hollësi diplomatike nga më të rrallat (the rarest diplomatic talent). Mali i lartë e madhëshëtôr gjendet nën borë. Kur një gjë e ligë kalón, për shembull sëmundja, thuhet: qoftë e shkuar! Një thënie popullore thotë: të hollat e bardha janë për ditën e zezë. Fëmija i mitur nuk di ç'është rreziku.

Exercise 16

Zoja is as sensible as she is diligent. Ancient history is about past events. Are you tired? No, I am not tired, the workers are tired. This lesson is not

difficult. You like the present time because you are happy. This was a long history. I am poorer today than yesterday. Here are one, two, three woollen dresses. White, red and black are the most well-known colors. The poet of the folksong is unknown.

Text 8

Kangë popullore

A je brymë, moj, a je borë?
Moj e holla!
E bukura vetull-kunorë
Moj e holla!
E bukura kuq në faqe
Moj e holla!
Sı hana që shkrep në bahçe
Moj e holla!

Reading Exercises

Sesiön shkencór kushtuar kolegjit arbëresh të Shën Adrianit

Akademia e Shkëncave, në bashkëpunim me Universitetin e Tiranës, Lidhjen e Shkrimtarëve e të Artistëve dhe Institutin e Studimeve Pedagogjike organizuan dje në kryeqytët një sesiön shkencór kushtuar 250-vjetorit të themelimit të kolegjit arbëresh të Shën Adrianit (në Kalabri).

Merrnin pjesë studiues, historianë, gjuhëtarë, folkloristë, punonjës të institucióneve kulturore, shkencore, arsimore e artistike.

(“Bashkimi” 15.1.1983)

Heroi

Hapet dera dhe hyn brenda një luftëtar i hieshëm, fisnik dhe madhësh-tór, hundëshkabë, sypetrít, me mjekër të gjatë e të dredhur, i veshur me çelik, i armatosur deri në dhëmbë, shtatuja e gjallë e Marsit.

(F. Noli: *Historia e Skanderbeut*)

Lesson 9 — Leksioni i nantë (nëntë)

Adverbs and Prepositions

92. **Adverbs and prepositions**, as well as conjunctions (cf. Syntax), are distinguished from other word types by the fact that they are not inflected. The adverb is normally placed after the verb, while the preposition is placed before it (cf. §256).

93. Just as the adjective is attached to the noun in order to define it more closely, so the adverb fulfills a similar function as a supplementary element of the verb.

There is a particularly close formal and semantic relationship between the adjective and the adverb, so that it is often possible to derive one from the other:

E ama (e ëma) vjen **sot** (adv.), d.m.th. arrin me trenin **e sotëm** (adj.)
'The mother is coming **today**, i.e. she is coming on **today's** train.'

Natyrisht, një (një) vajzë **gjermane** (adj.) flet **gjermanisht** (adv.)
'Naturally, a **German** girl speaks **German** (adv.).'

94. The adverbs are divided: a) according to **derivatives** of *word categories* and b) according to their **mode of construction**; their **semantic components** will also be referred to here in the formal analysis.

95. The **adverbs** derived from **Class 2 adjectives** (with article) exhibit the form of the masculine adjective, but without article:

<i>adj. with article</i>	<i>adverb</i>
i mirë 'good'	mirë 'well'
i keq 'bad'	keq 'badly'
i ambël (i ëmbël) 'sweet'	ambël (ëmbël) 'mildly'
i rrëmbjëshëm 'stormy'	rrëmbjëshëm 'stormily'
i largë 'distant'	larg 'far away'
i idhët 'bitter'	idhët 'sharply, bitterly'
i naltë (i lartë) 'high'	nalt (lart) 'above'

The meaning is frequently changed in the transition from adjective to adverb; if, for example, the adjective denotes **quality** the respective adverb indicates **kind** and **manner**. It is very seldom that adverbs are derived from adjectives of participial origin (cf. § 75 c, d, e, f) without semantic change, for example:

rrëmbëj 'carry off, snatch' -- rrëmbjëshëm 'stormily'

96. Adverbs derived from **Class 1 adjectives** and **nouns** follow the same modes of construction, while they acquire adverbial suffixes:

<i>Suffix</i>	<i>adverb</i>	<i>Class 1 adj. or noun</i>
-isht	politikisht 'politically'	politik-e 'political'
	bujarisht 'generously'	bujar-e 'generous'
	mesatarisht 'average'	mesatar-e 'middle'
	hollësisht 'fully'	hollësi-a 'elegance, fineness'
	natyrisht 'naturally'	natyrë-a 'nature'

	pleqërisht 'in the manner of old people'	pleqëri-a 'old age'
	anglisht 'in English'	Angli-a 'England'
	greqisht 'in Greek'	Greqi-a 'Greece'
	zakonisht 'customarily'	zakón-i 'custom'
-as ~ azi	krahas 'parallel'	krah-u 'arm, side'
	barkas ~ bårkazi 'flat on one's stomach'	'bark-u 'belly'
	kryqazi 'transversely'	kryq-i 'cross'
	shëshazi 'openly'	shesh-i 'open area, place'
	radhas ~ rådehazi 'consecu- tively'	radhë-a 'row, line, rank'
	thias 'tough, obstinately'	thi-u 'pig'
	gjujas ~ gjúnjazi 'in a kneeling manner'	gju-ni 'knee'

This suffix is also used to construct adverbs from Class 2 adjectives:

djathtas 'to the right'	i djathtë 'right'
majtas 'to the left'	i majtë 'left'
vjedhtas 'secretly'	i vjedhtë 'stealthy'
fshehtas 'in a hidden manner'	i fshehtë 'hidden'

The suffix **-thi** is used primarily for adverbs derived from nouns in **-im**:

kalimthi 'on the way'	kalim-i 'passage'
fluturimthi 'in flight, quickly'	fluturim-i 'flight'
vetimthi 'like a flash'	vetimë-a 'lightning'

The suffix **-çe** (of Turkish origin) has become very productive in the colloquial language (function: manner):

korçarçe 'in the Korça manner'	Korçë-a (Albanian city)
fshatçe 'in the village manner'	fshat-i 'village'
vendçe 'in the homeland manner'	vend-i 'place, homeland'
kasapçe 'in a butcher's manner'	kasáp-i 'butcher'
qençe 'like a dog'	qen-i 'dog'

97. **Adverbs derived from pronominal stems**, i.e. from deictic elements, have retained their old function insofar as they define positions in time and space:

këtú 'here'	këndéj 'hither, here'
atý 'there'	atéj 'there, on the other side, beyond'

atjë 'there'	andëj 'there, on the other side, beyond'
tutjë 'there'	kudó 'everywhere'
ku? 'where?'	përtëj 'thither, that way, beyond'
matanë (më atë anë) 'beyond'	atý, ku 'there, where'
	askúnd 'nowhere'
kurrkúnd 'nowhere'	gjëkúndi 'nowhere'
	gjiþhkúnd 'everywhere'
kur 'when'	ku 'where'
si 'how, as'	qysh 'since when'
poshtë 'below'	(m)brenda 'within, inside'
jashtë 'outside'	mbrapa (prapa) 'behind'
	(temporally 'after')
përjashta 'from outside'	
përpara 'in front of'	mënjane 'on the one hand'
(temporally 'before')	

Notes

1. *Ke-* (*kë-tu* 'here') indicates proximity to the speaker, *a-* indicates distance from the speaker, this is applicable also for adverbs of kind and manner:

kështú 'in this manner'	ashtú 'in that manner'
-------------------------	------------------------
2. The prefixes *kë-*, *a-*, as well as *ku*, *a-ty*, etc. are pronominal stems with which the pronouns too are constructed (cf. § 129)
3. In northern Geg, as well as in the older texts, various adverbs are current which express the divisions of space from the standpoint of the speaker.

kah ~ kaha 'whither, where':	kah po shkon? 'where are you (sg.) going?'
dikáh 'in some place or other':	po tres dikáh 'I am disappearing (losing myself in some place or other)'
këhá 'hither, closer to me':	eja këhá 'come here, closer to me!'

98. Adverbs derived from nouns denoting aspects of time and space also belong, **semantically**, to the group of **adverbs from pronominal stems**:

a) Single nouns in the Acc. or Dat.:

ditën 'during the day'	natën 'during the night'
verës 'in the summer'	vjeshtës 'in the fall'
dimnit (dimrit) 'in the winter'	motit 'in olden times'
heret ~ herët 'early in the morning'	mbramjet (mbrëmanet) 'in the evening'

b) **Reduplication**:

motmót 'in a year, after a year'	vende-vende 'here and there'
(mot-i 'year')	roga-roga 'like a stain' (rogë-a
dita-ditës 'from day to day'	'stain')
si njëherë e njëherë 'once again'	
rrotull-rrotull 'all around'	
(rrotull-a 'circle, disc')	

Note

In the Arbëresh dialect of Calabria *rro'-rro'* 'all around', cf. the folksong:

rro'-rro' si kupani 'all around like the washtub
 eja, eja, nani nani come, come right now, right now'

c) Compounds:

atëherë 'then' (atë herë = that time)

menjëherë 'suddenly' (me një herë = with one time)

gjithnjë 'always' (gjithë një = all one)

prorë 'always' (për orë = every hour)

gjithmonë 'always' (gjithë motnë > monë Acc. = the whole time)

d) Word groups:

herë mbas (pas) here 'from time to time'

nji (një) copë herë 'for a while'

atý për atý 'on the spot'

hë sot hë nesër 'from today until tomorrow' (temporal postponement)

Notes

1. Individual nouns or word groups are frequently used adverbially, and here the plasticity of the expression is important

po të flas trup si vellaut 'I am speaking to you *completely openly* (trup-i tree trunk), like (with the) brother'

Kaceli iu kap *thik përpete* rrethit të kusisë 'Kacel climbed *steeply* as a *knife* along the handle of the cauldron'

2. Adverbial word groups of kind and manner with *si* 'how, as' are very popular in literature

e ngrehu *si për lojë* kurthën kinse për të zanë lepura 'as a *joke*, he set up the trap ostensibly to catch hares'

3. Adverbial word groups of this type have become idioms together with their verbs and have lost their original meaning.

më, të bie për shtat 'it suits me, you (sg.)' (lit. it suits my body, i.e. custom made)

më rri shtrembët 'he is angry with me' (lit. he sits across from me, obliquely)

99. **The comparative and elative forms of the adverb** in Albanian are, like the adjective (cf. §87), constructed periphrastically. It must be clarified, however, that it is only through the change or modification of the simple form of the adverb that an intensification of meaning or comparative degree is attained. The difference is apparent in the following examples:

I. treni atë ditë vonoi **tepër** 'the train was **very** late that day'

II. treni atë ditë vonoi **së tepri** 'the train was **too** late that day'

Thus, the simple form of the adverb corresponds, in terms of the adjectival comparative, to the indefinite adjective, while the adverb modified by **së** + article + final **-i** corresponds to the definite adjective (cf. §89). Accordingly, the **comparative degree** of the **adverb** is constructed with:

a) **mâ (më)** + adv. (simple form):

vajza e fshiu dhomën mâ (më) mirë se djali 'the girl cleaned the room better than the boy';

b) the **superlative** degree is constructed with **mâ (më)** + definite (modified) adverb:

vajza e fshiu dhomën mâ (më) së miri 'the girl cleaned the room best'

Further examples:

<i>comparative</i>	<i>superlative</i>
mâ (më) vonë 'later'	mâ (më) së voni 'at the latest'
mâ (më) keq 'worse'	mâ (më) së keqi 'at worst'
mâ (më) shumë 'more'	mâ (më) së shumë 'at most'
mâ (më) afër 'nearer'	mâ (më) për së afërmi 'soonest'
mâ (më) parë 'sooner'	mâ (më) së pari 'at first'
mâ (më) fund 'finally'	mâ (më) së fundi 'latest'

100. The semantic difference between simple and modified adverbs is no longer noticeable in many cases:

bashkë 'together'	së bashku 'together'
rishtas 'recently'	së rishtazi 'recently'

On the other hand, the differences in the following examples are quite clear:

shpejt 'quickly'	së shpejti 'soon, shortly'
pak 'little'	së paku 'at least'
shkurt 'shortly'	(për) së shkurti 'quite shortly'

Notes

1. These rigid forms, typical for adverbs, are also used in other functions, but always together with the verb:

vdq së ftohti (old Abl.) 'he died of cold' which, in terms of meaning, is equivalent to the construction *vdq prej së ftohtu*

2. If the adverb has been derived from a participial form, it takes on a verbal function:

organizata pushoi së *vepruari* 'the organization stopped working'

3. Adverbial expressions of great intensity are expressed also by means of simple comparisons:

Kaceli rrinte *mâ zi se korbi* pranë votrës 'Kacel sat very badly tempered (lit. blacker than a raven) near the hearth'

101. True relative forms are, in the same manner, constructed periphrastically by means of preposed adverbs, primarily those of quantity, such as **fare** 'thoroughly', **fort** 'very', **shumë** 'much', **krejt** 'quite', **mjaft** 'enough, quite', **pak** 'little', **sa** 'how', **bukur** 'very' (lit. beautiful):

fare mirë 'thoroughly good'	pak flohtë 'a little cold'
shumë larg 'very far'	bukur përmallshëm 'rather tender'
krejt pastër 'quite clean'	

Note

In Arb, *keq* functions as an elative or superlative *keq lart* 'very high, highest'

102. Reduplications of the type **motmót** and **vende-vente** (cf. §98 b) are also used elatively in simple idioms in Albanian and in many other languages:

- mirë mire e bane (bëre)! 'you did very well' (lit. well well)
 ngadalë ngadalë 'quite slowly' (ngadalë = slowly)
 kokrra-kokrra 'scattered' (kokërr-kokrra 'ball, grain')
 copa-copa 'in two, in pieces' (copë-a = piece): si shkon? Copa-copa!
 'how are you? not altogether well'
 gju më gju 'confidentially, friendly' (gju-ni = knee, i.e. a conversation
 knee to knee)

103. The **prepositions** are divided according to case:

a) Prepositions with the Nominative (mostly in definite form):

te, tek, tu 'at, to'; **nga, kah** (G.) 'from':

Bardhi ásht (është) te (tek, tu) shtëpia e vet 'Bardhi is at his house'
 or Bardhi shkon te (tek, tu) shtëpia 'Bardhi goes home'

These prepositions often occur also with **deri (gjer)** 'up to, until':

Nusja erdhi deri te dera 'the bride came up to the door'

They answer the questions where?, where to?, up to where?

nga (dialectal **kah**) 'from' expresses movement away from a place:

nga vjen ti? unë vij nga puna 'where are you coming from? I am
 coming from work'. Old Tosk **ngaha** 'from' (Vilara, 1881).

b) Prepositions with the Accusative:

me 'with, together with':

s'flas me një (një) njeri të panjoftun (panjohur), por me mikun më (më)
 të dashun (dashur)

'I do not speak with an unknown person, but with (my) best (dearest)
 friend'

mbi 'on, about (in the sense of 'regarding')':

mbi malin Dajti gjendet observatori

'the observatory is (found) on Mount Dajti'

në (rarely **ndë**) 'in, on':

i gjeta të gjithë në shtëpi

'I found them all at home' (i.e. in the house)

nën 'under, below':

nën lisat e naltë (lartë) pushojnë udhëtarët
'the travellers rest under the tall trees'

ndër 'among, between':

ndër ne s'ka kundërshtime
'there are no conflicts among us'

nëpër 'through':

duel not nëpër Drin
'swimming, he crossed the Drin'

për 'for, about, through':

mendón për shtëpinë mbas malit
'he thinks about the house behind the mountains'

pa 'without':

nji (një) udhëtar pa plaçka shkonte udhës
'a traveller without luggage went along the path'

c) Prepositions with the Dative and Ablative. There are many adverbs which also occur as prepositions with these cases; many are adverbs of place:

pranë 'near, by'; **krahas** 'beside, near, besides'

pranë (prep.) shkollës është (është) fusha e sportit
'the stadium is near the school'

krahas sasisë, zhvillohet edhe cilësia
'besides quantity, quality is also developing'

ishte pranë (adv.) dhe kryetari
'the chairman was also present'

rreth 'around, about':

nuk sillet rreth ujku delja, po ujku rreth deles
'the sheep does not turn around the wolf, but the wolf turns around the sheep'

larg 'far, far from':

larg sysh, larg zemre
'out of sight, out of mind'

afër (with Dative) 'near, by':

afër barakës rriten hitha
'nettles grow near the hut'

pos 'except, apart from':

pos mësuesit kuptonte dhe mjeku gjermanisht
'apart from the teacher, the doctor too understood German'

jashtë 'outside':

jashtë zyrje nuk flas për sende zyrtare
 'outside the office, I do not speak about official matters'

mbrenda (brenda) (with Dative) 'inside, within':

jetonte mbrenda (brenda) katër mûreve
 'he lived within four walls'

ndaj 'to, with respect to, toward':

kam nderim ndaj dijetarit
 'I have respect for (with regard to) the learned'

kundër 'against' (in an inimical sense):

Kaceli nuk ishte kundër botës se vet
 'Kacel was not against his own world'

mbas (pas) 'after, behind':

vjen urtia mbas kuvendit
 'intelligence comes after advice (lit. assembly)'

mbraza (prapa) 'behind, afterwards':

mbraza gurit âsht lehtë me qenë (të jesh) trim
 'it is easy to be a hero behind a (the) rock'

(për)para 'before, in front of':

përpara luftës jetonte në Vlorë
 'before the war he lived in Vlora'

përballë 'opposite, in front of, in the face of':

titulli i librit quhet *Përballë rrezikut*
 'the book title is called "In the Face of Danger"'

mes 'among, between':

ta thomi mes nesh!
 'let it be (said) between us'

prej (Abl.) has the same meaning as **nga**:

prej dorështrejtimit mos prit bujari
 'do not expect generosity from the avaricious'

Prepositions may also be used as adverbs if they stand alone, without a noun, in the Dat.:

a jeni për ase kundër? 'are you (pl.) for or against?'

d) A number of nouns and word groups composed of preposition + noun function as prepositions, e.g.:

maje (majë) 'over, above' (Dat.) — maje-a = point, peak

përkrye 'over along' (Gen.) — krye-kreu = head:

përkrye të derës kishin vû një kunorë lulësh
 'over the door they placed a wreath of flowers'

përballë 'opposite' (Dat.) — për + ballë-i 'forehead', mostly prepositive, but also postpositive:

përballë shtëpisë ~ shtëpisë përballë 'opposite the house'

e) Adverbs of place are frequently determined by prepositions:

nga këtu deri atje 'from here to there'

Compare also the variants:

prej këtu ~ prej këtuhiut 'from here on'

where **këtuhiut** occurs only in this combination as a noun in the def. Abl.

Notes

- 1 In Old Albanian and still today in Arbëresh there is a preposition *m-* ~ *mb-* with the Abl. (cf. Da Lecce, 1716):
 âsht m-ne, m-ju 'he is with us, with you (at home)'; cf. French *chez nous, chez vous*.
- 2 The old preposition *en* with the Abl. (Buzuku, 1555) is no longer used in Modern Albanian

Vocabulary

<i>luginë-a</i> valley -a	<i>shoqëror-e</i> social
<i>zhurmë-a</i> noise -a	<i>gjër tani</i> until now
<i>shkamb-i</i> (<i>shkëmb-i</i>) rock	<i>me qinda</i> (<i>me qindëra</i>) hundreds
<i>shkambij</i> (<i>shkëmbinj</i>)	<i>kushtuar</i> dedicated
<i>barakë-a</i> barrack -a	<i>ndërtój</i> build
<i>dërrasë-a</i> board -a	<i>afroj</i> come close
<i>zdrukthëtâr-i</i> carpenter, joiner -ë	<i>ndëgjój</i> (<i>dëgjój</i>) hear
<i>farkëtâr-i</i> smith -ë	<i>skuq në zjarr</i> heat in fire
<i>çekân-i</i> hammer -ë	<i>zhvillój</i> develop
<i>kullë-a</i> anvil -a	<i>bisedë-a</i> conversation -a
<i>botore-hotorja</i> department of roads - \emptyset	<i>përgatitje-a</i> preparation - \emptyset
<i>ndihmës-i</i> helper - \emptyset	<i>vit-i</i> (Geg. <i>vjet-i</i>) year pl. <i>vjet</i>
<i>sipërfaqe- sipërfaqja</i> surface - \emptyset	<i>gjendja historike</i> historical condition
<i>naltësi-a</i> (<i>lartësi-a</i>) height - \emptyset	<i>komisioni i rrethit</i> the regional commission
<i>vrull-i</i> intensity, élan -e	<i>mbledhje-a</i> meeting - \emptyset
<i>tokësór-e</i> adj, earthly	<i>rreth-i</i> territorial administrative division -e
<i>vdekje-a</i> death - \emptyset	<i>përkujtim-i</i> commemoration -e
<i>bashkëluftëtâr-i</i> fellow combatant -ë	<i>karrige-a</i> ~ <i>karrikë-a</i> chair - \emptyset ~ -a
<i>muzeum-i</i> museum pl. <i>muze</i>	<i>gjithë ditën</i> all day
<i>pesëqindvjetór-i</i> 500th anniversary	<i>a më kuptoni?</i> do you understand me?
"Zëri i popullit" The Voice of the People (Albanian daily newspaper)	<i>do të flitni</i> you will speak
<i>t, e gjithanshëm</i> many-sided	

<i>heroi kombëtar</i> the national hero -Ø	<i>mbaj</i> hold
<i>viti jubilar</i> the jubilee year	<i>sjell</i> bring
<i>figurë-a</i> personality -a	<i>qëndro</i> stop
<i>zhvillim-i</i> development -e	<i>vene'</i> put it! (2 sg.)
<i>në kuadrin</i> in the framework	<i>të lutem!</i> please!
<i>kushtoj</i> dedicate	<i>u mblodh</i> there gathered
<i>sharrj</i> saw	<i>po bëhen</i> it is made, done
<i>rrah~rreh</i> beat, pound	<i>u fol</i> one, they said
<i>mat~mas</i> measure	<i>rri qetë</i> remain calm

Present Indicative

(unë) rri (I) sit, stay, remain	(na ~ ne) rrimë
(ti) rri	(ju) rriini
(ai, ajo) rri	(ata, ato) rriini
	mos rri do not stay, sit, remain

Exercise 17

Gjergji i rri larg rrezikut, përkundra Kaceli shkon pas rrezikut. Studiuesi flet ëmbël shqip, ndërsa historiani flet për së shkurti dhe zjarrras rreth kohës së Skënderbeut. Mos rri idhët përballë nesh! Pranë kroit të fshatit rriinë nuset e bukura dhe dëgjojnë historitë e plakut të urtë. Ne rrimë më së miri në karrige rreth trëzës: Ku rriini ju me shtëpi, në Kavajë apo në Vlorë? Verës rriini në mal dhe dimrit në fushë. Ditën punojmë e natën pushojmë. Së shpejti do të flitni shqip. Fëmija i Gjergjit flet krejt pastër anglisht në shkollë, në shtëpi flet edhe shqip me të motrën.

Exercise 18

Formerly we had much patience with people, now less. Why do you stand on your feet without a word? Please, sit in a chair. Except for Kaceli, no one speaks German. Children, as a rule, do not remain calm all day. From time to time the school teacher asks, "Do you understand me?" Zoja works together with her mother, so she has good relations with her sister. This city is without a high school and without a museum.

Text 9

Ndërtimi i rrugës së re

Dhetë kilometra larg, atje mbrendë në luginë ndëgjon (dëgjon) zhurmën e motorave. Kur afroresh, sheh qinda (qindra) punëtorë e

punëtorë. Disá atjë djathtas, afër shkambit, ndërtojnë një barakë, poshtë në lum muratorët ndërtojnë një mur, nalt (lart) zdrukthëtarët masin ~ matin dërrasat dhe i sharrojnë. Mâ tutje farkëtarët skuqin në zjarm (zjarr) hekura, të cilat mandej i rrahin me çekân në kullë. Matanë dy specialistë (teknikë) të botores masin ~ matin sipërfaqen tokësore. Secili ka një (një) ndihmës: ndihmësit barin (*carry*) disá vegla topografike. Herë mbas (pas) here ndëgjón fjalët e teknikëve, që ua sjellin ndihmësvet, që mbajnë në dorë një tabelë të gjatë me numëra.

— Të lutem, mâ andëj ... qëndró (*stop*) atý ... ashtë!

Tekniku tjetër i thotë ndimësit të vet:

— Mbaje atý, jo, pak mâ djathtas ... ásht tepër djathtas ... majtas ...

— A ásht nalt (lart)?

· Naltësia (lartësia) ásht mirë ... mos e ul poshtë ... atjë pranë ásht një gur: vene krahas me të (të)!

Zakonisht këtë punë shkojnë gjatë, por me këtë vrull aktiviteti, besoj se kjo rrugë ndërtohet simjë.

Reading Exercise

Aktiviteti kushtuar pesëqindvjetorit të vdekjes së Skenderbeut

“Zëri i Popullit”: Durrës, 6 maj 1967 (ATSH¹). Sot u mblohd komisioni i rrethit të Durrësit për përkujtimin e pesëqindvjetorit të vdekjes së heroit kombëtar Gjergj Kastrioti-Skenderbeu.

Në këtë mbledhje u fol për aktivitetet e zhvilluara gjer tani dhe për përgatitjet që po bëhen në kuadrin e vitit jubilar të pesëqindvjetorit të vdekjes së Skenderbeut, për t’u njohur sa më mirë me figurën e heroit tonë kombëtar. Me punónjësit e këtij rrethi janë zhvilluar biseda dhe leksione mbi gjendjen historike shoqërore të vendit tonë para dhe pas Skenderbeut ... si dhe për bashkëlulftëtarët e tij kryesorë.

Edhë në muzeumin e qytetit po bëhet një punë e gjithanshme për të përkujtuar këtë vit jubilar. Aktivitete të gjithanshme po zhvillohen edhe nëpër shkolla.

Lesson 10 — Leksioni i dhjetë

The Formation of Nouns

104. It has already been seen that a) in order to correctly construct plurals of nouns, account must be taken of their suffixes and endings, and b) in order to classify the adjectives and adverbs, the word categories from which they are derived and their formants must be known.

¹ ATSH = Agjencia telegrafike shqiptare

In this chapter, an analysis of the noun will be undertaken. Aside from the dissection of nouns into elements which are actually non-inflectional, the intention is also to formulate semantic categories for these nouns, i.e. to divide them into groups according to meaning.

105. Albanian has many nouns which, like the primary adjectives (cf. § 75), are **indecomposable**, e.g.:

punë 'work'	gjak 'blood'
botë 'world'	mend 'understanding'
lopë 'cow'	trû (tru) 'bram'

These are radical words from various semantic spheres which, by means of word forming elements, have produced derivatives and thus enriched the language, for example, **mendim** (**mend-im**) 'thought', **mendim-târ** (**mend-im-tar**) 'thinker', among other words, have arisen.

For the semantic characterization of the noun, it is important to determine, aside from the formants involved, from which word category (verb, adjective, etc.) it has been derived.

Notes

- 1 In an earlier stage of Albanian, vowel alternation was an important means for the formation of nouns. This was undoubtedly actuated by vowel gradation (*ablaut*) in the verbal root, which served as the distinctive morphological characteristic to differentiate between present and aorist:

present	aorist
vjerr 'hang up' < *ver-n-	vora < *vër-

It may be assumed that, especially for the first phase of the ablaut, this concerned deverbal nouns. The distinction is thus made between (1) internal word formation in contrast to (2) external word formation, the former constructed by means of vowel alternation and the latter by means of prepositive and postpositive formants. Ablaut developed best (for the construction of nouns as well) in verbal roots with the final sonants *r*, *l* and *m*, *n*. As an example of such a derivational mechanism, the verb *bie* 'carry, fall' (imperative *bjer!*) will serve:

vowel alternation	basic form	deverbal noun
I (i)e a	*ber- bar-n 'bar-k	barrë 'burden' bark 'belly'
II (i)e o	*bër- bër-	borë 'snow' (that which falls, cf. also <i>bie borë</i> = it snows)
III (i)e u	*ber-, bṛ-	burrë 'man' (that which carries, cf. Gr. φερτός)

Alternation I (i)e a seems to have been extremely productive:

vjerr 'hang up'	*ver-n-: varg 'row, series, chain'	(var-g)
ther 'pierce'	ther: tharm 'sourdough'	(thar-m)
	thark 'pen, fold'	(thar-k)

2. An alternation *a e* developed from this ablaut grade:

bark 'belly'	: berk 'diaphragm'
hap 'open'	: hap 'step' : hep 'opening, split in a rock'

- 3 Deverbal nouns arose not only by means of vowel alternation, but also through an epenthetic *-n-*, as in
lag 'moisten, wet' lang 'liquid, juice'

106. At the present time, compounds play a large role as means for word formation, as well as for new concepts. The most important types of compounds are:

- a) **Composites of whole clauses** which were originally curses or oaths:
shtozvalle-ja 'mountain fairy, oread' = *Zana* or *Ora* from shtoz Zot vallet! 'may God increase your round-dances!'
qoftëlarg-u 'devil' from qoftë larg! 'may (it) be far!'
neshtrashë-a 'destiny, omen' from mirë ndesh të rasha! 'may I meet you to your advantage!'
mbyllizogojën 'wolf' from mbylli Zot gojën! 'may God close his mouth!'

Note

The last tabu word in the above examples, *mbyllizogojën*, is a hybrid and is not declined, it is recognizable as being in the Accusative

erdh mbyllizogojën e hangri delet 'the wolf came and ate the sheep'

- b) **Composites of noun + noun** have arisen from various syntactically connected nouns, mostly from noun Nom. + noun Gen. or Abl. of the type **gurëzjarm-i** (gurë-i 'stone' + zjarm-i 'fire') 'hearthstone'.

amvisë-a 'housewife' (amë 'mother' + vis-i 'place')
dyllvësh-i 'earwax' (dyll 'wax' + vesh 'ear')
mjesnatë-a 'midnight' (mjes-i 'middle' + natë 'night')
besëlidhje-a 'alliance, truce' (besë 'faith' + lidhje 'tying')

Note

Many composites of this type have been introduced into use as loan translations (with the same order of elements) from modern European languages:

atdhë-u 'fatherland' (at-i 'father' + dhë-u 'land')
kryeqytë-t 'capital' (Ger. *Hauptstadt*) (krye 'head' + qytë 'city')
botëkuptim-i 'world-view' (botë 'world' + kuptim 'view')

- c) **Determinative composites** are constructed from **noun + adj.** or **participle** (present or perfect); the latter have primarily the function of *nomina agentis*:

mollakuqe-mollakuqja 'lady-bird' (mollë 'apple' + kuq 'red')
rrafshnaltë-a 'highlands' (rrafsh 'plain' + i naltë 'high')
dorëzanë-i 'guarantor' (dorë 'hand' + zanë 'taken')
bishtatundës-i 'wagtail' (bisht 'tail' + tundës 'shaking')
udhëheqës-i 'leader' (udhë 'way' + heqës 'pulling, showing')

Many such composites may occur as both nouns and adjectives (Class 1):

noun	adj.
kokētrashē-i 'blockhead'	kokētrashē-e 'blockheaded'
sykéq-i 'person with evil eye'	sykéq-e 'idem'.
punēdhanēs-i 'employer'	punēdhanēs-e 'employing'

d) **Composites** constructed with prefixes from **prepositions** and **adverbs** are very productive:

nēnkrejçē-a 'pillow' (nēn 'below' + krye-kreja 'head': krej-cē)
 nēpunēs-i 'employee' (nē or nēn 'in, below' + punēs 'working')
 paravithe-ja 'saddle-cloth' (para 'before, in front' + vithe 'loins')
 mosmarrveshje-a 'misunderstanding' (mos 'not' + marrē 'taken' +
 vesh 'ear', but more likely a deverbal from marrvesh 'understand')
 mbasgrušit-i 'forearm' (mbas 'after' + grusht 'fist')
 stërgjýsh 'great-grandfather' (stër 'beyond, further' + gjýsh 'grand-
 father')

It should be noted that prefixes of this type do not have their origin in the union of prepositions or adverbs, but from verbal constructions, i.e. they are deverbals:

parapamēs-i 'seer' parashöh 'see in advance'
 mbikqyrēs 'custodian' -- mbikqýr 'oversee'

Note

There is in Albanian a particular characteristic of word construction, namely that expansions of deictic or demonstrative elements in prefixed position were introduced in ancient times

prefix	basic form	formation
kē-	-putē	kēputē 'stockings'
ka-	cok-el 'timber'	kacók 'small timber'
kēr-	cung 'stump'	kërcung 'felled tree'
lë-	mazë 'cream'	lemazë 'thin skin'

These and other expansions may also occur in final position (cf. *bar-k* and *thar-k*, § 106). This manner of formation agrees in terms of system with the morphological phenomenon of prepositive and postpositive articles in Albanian.

107. **The most common suffixes of the Albanian noun.** There is a series of suffixes that are used for both adjectives and nouns (cf. § 72). They include the *nomina agentis*, i.e. denotations of occupation, belonging to a condition or profession, or living in a place.

a) Of the suffixes mentioned, **-(t)ore** denotes a locality where an activity is carried on or a specific place:

kripore-kriporja 'salt-pit' (kripë 'salt')
 pijetore-pijetorja 'pub' (pije-a 'drink, beverage')
 ambëltore-ambëltorja 'confectionary' (ambël 'sweet')
 grunore-grunorja 'wheatfield' (grunë 'wheat')

orizore-orizorja 'ricefield' (oriz 'rice')
 shetitore-shetitorja 'boulevard' (shetis 'go for a walk')
 thertore-thertorja 'butcher shop' (ther 'slaughter')

The suffix **-ishtë** has a similar function, namely the denotation of locality:

ranishtë-a 'sand-pit, sandy beach' (ranë-a 'sand')
 ullishtë-a 'olive grove' (ulli-ni 'olive')
 gurishtë-a 'stony slope, talus' (gur-i 'stone')

Note

-ishtë is Slavic, but the ancient suffix *-sht* has a similar function, as in:

kopsht-i 'garden' (kop-sht)
 ashtë-a 'beech-wood' -ah-i ~ ah-u 'beech') besides ahishtë-a 'beech-wood'

b) The suffix **-i**, actually **-ni** (**-ri**) and **-si** formed original **collectives** which later became **abstracts**, especially in the normalized literary language:

punëtori-a 'working class' (punëtor-i 'worker')
 burrni-a (burrëri-a) 'manhood, valor' (burrë-i 'man')
 miqësi-a 'friendship, amity' (miq — pl. of mik 'friend')
 cubni-a 'brigandage' (cub-i 'robber')
 njerëzi-a 'people, humanity' (njerëz — pl. of njeri-u 'person')
 malësi-a 'inhabitants of the mountains and the locality itself'

Constructions of this type derived from nouns have these double meanings, while those derived from adjectives denote **abstracts**:

besnik-i-a 'faithfulness, loyalty' (besnik 'faithful, loyal')
 mirësi-a 'goodness' (mirë-si)
 drejtësi-a 'justice, righteousness, law' (drejtë-si)

c) **-im** is the typical suffix for the construction of **abstracts**. It is associated with deverbal nouns and is used to form derivations from verbal classes in consonants:

bashkím-i 'unity' (bashkój 'collect, unite')
 kujtím-i 'memory' (kujtój 'remember')
 qëndrim-i 'behavior, attitude' (qëndrój 'hold, sojourn')
 lundrím-i 'navigation' (lundrój 'navigate, sail')
 kthim-i 'return' (kthej 'return')
 lakím-i 'declension' (lakój 'decline')

The suffix **-je** fulfills the same function, i.e. constructs deverbals from verbs in consonants, although in this case from participial forms:

hapje-a 'opening' (hapë 'opened')
 falje-a 'pardon, forgiveness' (falë 'forgiven, pardoned')
 thirrje-a 'invitation' (thirrë 'invited')
 lutje-a 'prayer, request, petition' (lutë 'prayed, requested')
 dalje-a 'exit' (dalë 'gone out')

In an earlier stage of Albanian word formation, nouns also arose from present stems in vowels:

- pije-a 'drink, beverage' (pi 'drink')
 haje-a 'edible thing' (ha 'eat')
 mbroje-a 'protection' (mbroj 'protect')
 roje 'watchman' (ruej < roj 'guard')

There is a new tendency based upon the pattern with the old participial form in **-uem**, **-m**, by means of which adjectives are also constructed (cf. §80, Note), with **-je** in order to achieve greater productivity:

- fýemje-a 'offence, insult' (fyem 'insulted' fye-m)
 kryemje-a 'conclusion' (kryem 'concluded')
 shkúemje-a (shkúarje-a) 'past' (shkuem, shkuar 'past')

Note

The older Albanian writers of religious literature preferred to construct abstracts by means of the nominalization of neuter adjectives:

adj	noun
i, e, të mirë 'good'	të mirë-t 'the good'
i, e, të idhët 'bitter'	të idhët-it 'the bitter'
i, e, të ftoftë 'cold'	të ftoftë-it 'the cold'

This manner of construction ceased being productive because neuters in general have become masculines and those furnished with *te* are not easily integrated into other genders (cf. §84).

d) The suffix **-esë**, with verbal roots, constructs a great number of nouns ranging from the sphere of abstracts to designations of concrete objects, according to the meanings of the verbs from which these nouns are derived:

- fejesë-a 'engagement' (fejój 'affiance': fej-oj)
 duresë-a 'patience' (durój 'be patient': dur-oj)
 kujtesë-a 'remembrance' (kujtój 'remember': kujt-oj)
 gjallnesë-a 'life, existence' (gjallnój 'live': gjalln-oj)
 shtesë-a 'expansion' (shtoj 'expand': sht-oj)
 kthesë-a 'turn, curve, bend' (kthej 'turn': kthe-j)
 presë-a 'comma' (prej 'cut': pre-j)
 fshesë-a 'broom' (fshij 'sweep': fsh-ij)
 mbulesë-a 'cover' (mbulój 'cover': mbul-oj)

This suffix is also suitable for neologisms, such as **shtresë-a** '(social) class' (**shtrij** 'spread out, stretch, extend': **shtr-ij**).

e) The formant **-th** serves to construct masculine diminutives:

- zogth 'little bird' (zog-u 'bird')
 birth 'little son' (bir-i 'son')
 zâth 'little voice' (zâ-ni 'voice')

Note

-th is very common in the dialects of the Albanians of southern Italy and occurs as an expressive element even in pronouns, e.g. *disâth* 'some'.

-zë ~ -ëz is used to construct feminine diminutives:

dritëz 'little light' (dritë-a 'light')

barkëz 'little boat' (barkë-a 'boat')

Many such constructions have lost their diminutive meaning:

dorëz 'handle, latch' (dorë-a 'hand')

vezë 'egg' (ve 'egg')

Note

This suffix is also very much used among the Arbëresh, even for masculines. *djalëz* 'little boy' (djalë-i 'boy').

For diminutive nouns and nicknames, Slavic suffixes are also used. **-uk** m. **-uke** f., **-icë** f., etc.:

vajzuke 'little girl' (vajzë-a 'girl')

Pjetruk 'Pete' (Pjetër 'Peter')

trupicë 'little tree trunk' (trup-i 'tree trunk')

Vocabulary

<i>kashë e lashë</i> (<i>gjë e gjezë-a</i> , pl. <i>-a</i>) riddle	<i>bashkim-i</i> agreement, unity, union <i>-e</i>
<i>nji send e gjã</i> ~ <i>sendegjã-ja</i> thing \emptyset	<i>kryesekretar-i</i> chief secretary <i>-ë</i>
<i>arkë-a</i> chest, box <i>-a</i>	<i>kryeministër-kryeministri</i> prime minister <i>kryeministra</i>
<i>gjysmë-a</i> half <i>-a</i>	<i>kryeinxhiniër-i</i> chief engineer <i>-ë</i>
<i>arrë-a</i> nut <i>-a</i>	<i>mëmëdhë-u</i> fatherland
<i>ushujzë-a</i> ~ <i>ushunjëz-a</i> leech <i>-a</i>	<i>dëmshpërblim-i</i> indemnity <i>-e</i>
<i>bisht-i</i> tail <i>-a</i>	<i>ujësjellës-i</i> aqueduct \emptyset
<i>të kuq-të</i> the red	<i>bukëpjekës-i</i> baker \emptyset
<i>të bardhë-t</i> the white	<i>presë-a</i> ~ <i>presje-a</i> comma <i>-a</i> ~ \emptyset
<i>lesh-i</i> wool	<i>prapashtesë-a</i> suffix <i>-a</i>
<i>gjiļpanë-a</i> (<i>gjiļpërë-a</i>) needle <i>-a</i>	<i>pronar-i</i> (land) owner <i>-ë</i>
<i>kërthizë-a</i> navel <i>-a</i>	<i>fuqi-a</i> force \emptyset
<i>gërshanë-a</i> (<i>gërshërë-a</i>) scissors <i>-a</i>	<i>çdo njeri</i> everyone
<i>pelë-a</i> mare <i>-a</i>	<i>në këndim e sipër</i> during the song
<i>zorrë-a</i> intestine \emptyset	<i>i, e përbërë</i> put together
<i>letërshkëmbim-i</i> correspondence <i>-e</i>	<i>i, e lidhun</i> (<i>lidhur</i>) bound
<i>vëllavrasje-a</i> fratricide \emptyset	<i>bregdetar-e</i> coastal
<i>atdhedashës-i</i> patriot \emptyset	<i>a, apò</i> or
<i>punëdashës-i</i> work lover \emptyset	<i>padyshim</i> undoubtedly
<i>mbiemër-mbimëri</i> adjective <i>-a</i>	<i>nuk dihet</i> one does not know
<i>vëmëndje-a</i> attention \emptyset	<i>mbet emni</i> the name remains
<i>thithëlopë-a</i> toad <i>-a</i>	<i>qe</i> was
<i>prejardhje-a</i> origin \emptyset	<i>ku gjindet</i> ~ <i>gjendet</i> where there is
<i>saktësi-a</i> accuracy \emptyset	

<i>vendi i tyne (tyre)</i> their homeland	found
(land)	<i>familje princore</i> princely family
<i>mesjetë-a</i> middle ages	<i>banonte</i> lived
<i>mesjetarë-e</i> medieval	<i>që prodhón</i> which produces
<i>pronë-a</i> property -a	<i>mund të formohen</i> can be formed
<i>babë-a</i> (m.) father - <i>baballarë</i>	<i>ha të kuq e vjell të bardhë</i> eats the
<i>i, e cofët</i> dead (of animals)	red (i.e. corn) and gives out the
	white

Present Indicative

(unë) formój 'shape, form'	(na ~ ne) formojmë
(ti) formón	(ju) formoni
(ai, ajó) formón	(atá, ató) formojnë

Exercise 19

Jo çdo njeri që mendón quhet mendimtar. Punëdashës është ai që e do shumë punën, ky nuk ka mbikëqyrës. Mes nesh e nëpunësit ka disa mosmarrëveshje. Sivjët grunoret kishin shumë grurë. Ky dhë nuk është gurishtë, andaj prodhón shumë oriz. Si quhet dheu që prodhón oriz? Ai quhet orizore. Kriporja kishte lloj lloj shtresash. A dihet emri i poetit të poezisë popullore? Thuhet: poeti i këngës popullore është populli vetë. Po fjalët kush i formón, populli apo studiuesi i gjuhës? Kjo fjalë shqipe është e përbërë nga tri prapashtesa.

Exercise 20

"The Fratricide" is a poetic creation by an Albanian poet. Unity make strength. The owner of forests was the state formerly, just as today. The physician knows the origin of disease. Where is this word found? This word is surely found in a dictionary. Zoja had no correspondence with her brother.

Text 10

Myzeqeja

Me emnin "Myzeqë" kuptojmë fushat e mëdha bregdetare të jugut të Shqipërisë dhe me emnin "myzeqar" banorët e tyre. Prejardhja e këtij emni nuk dihet me saktësi. Emni i vjetër mesjetar i kësaj fushe ka qenë "Savra". Emni i ri, padyshim, është i lidhur me emnin e familjes princore të mesjetës së vonë të Muzakajvet. Disa thonë se familja e Muzaqëve e kishte pronë të vetën këtë fushë dhe nga ajo i mbet ky emën, disa të tjerë thonë se në këtë fushë banonte një fis

dhe baba i parë qe Lal Muzhaqi, nga i cili u mbet emni Lalë banorëve të saj dhe Myzeqë vendit të tynë.

(*Etnografi shqiptare*. Tirana 1962)

PËJETJE E PËRGJIGJE: Ku gjendet Myzeqeja? Myzeqeja gjendet në Shqipërinë e Jugut. Si quhej kjo fushë në mesjetë? Kjo fushë në mesjetë quhej Savra. Si quhet familja princore e Myzeqesë? Ajò quhej familja e Muzàqëvet.

Lesson 11 — Leksioni i njëmbëdhjetë

Numbers

108. Numbers are treated precisely like the other word categories of Albanian grammar, i.e. according to their **formal** and **functional** aspects. They are an integral part of the nominal system. The cardinal numbers will be considered first. These remain unchanged and, with the exception of **tre** (m.) — **tri** (f.) = 3, are not marked according to gender.

Note

In Geg, *dj* (m.) -- *dj* (f.) = 2 also marks the gender by means of the contrast *short long* which are suprasegmental values occurring only in the northern Albanian dialects and in Arbëresh (cf. The Vowel System, § 9)

Under formal and semantic aspects, the numbers are divided into the following important categories:

1. Cardinal numbers: **një** = 1, **dy** = 2
2. Nominalized cardinal numbers: **njish-i** (**njësh-i**) = the one
3. Ordinal numbers: **i, e parë** 'first', **i, e dytë** 'second'
4. Partitive numbers: **një gjysmë** = $\frac{1}{2}$, **dy të treta** = $\frac{2}{3}$
5. Multiplicative numbers: **dyfish-i** = the double, **trëfish** = triple

109. The cardinal numbers are divided into a) **simple**, i.e. **primary numbers** which are:

nji (një) = 1	nandë (nëntë) = 9
dy = 2	dhetë (dhjetë) = 10
ire = 3	-zet = 20
katër = 4	-qind = 100
pesë = 5	mijë = 1000
gjashtë = 6	-milion = 1,000,000
shtatë = 7	-miliard = 1,000,000,000
tetë = 8	

All other numbers are combined with these basic numbers, whether as compounds, word groups or by means of word formative elements. The

numbers from 11 to 19 are constructed with the preposition **mbi** (> **-mbë-**) 'over, on'; the conjunction **e** 'and' is used for expressions of the type **njëzët e një** = 21, i.e. in an **additive** manner.

Combinations without a linking particle, of the type, for example, **njëzët (një-zet)** = 20, **pesëdhjetë (pesë-dhjetë)** = 50, **treqind (tre-qind)** = 300, etc. are considered as true compounds of a **multiplicative** type.

Notes

1. There is a difference between Geg and Tosk in the construction of the number system. Geg utilizes the decimal system in the construction of 40 = *katërdhjetë* ~ *katerdhjetë* (*kater* 'four' + *dhjete* 'ten'), Tosk, on the other hand, utilizes the vigesimal system *dyzët* (*dj* 'two' + *zet* 'twenty') = 40.
2. In this lesson only the Tosk variants *nje* = 1 and *dhjete* = 10 in all their compounds are introduced. This is done not only for practical reasons, but also because these variants are Common Albanian, as demonstrated in the older Geg texts as well.

110. Cardinal numbers:

1 një	32 tridhjetë e dy etc.
2 dy	40 katërdhjetë (dyzët)
3 tre m. tri f.	50 pesëdhjetë
4 katër	60 gjashtëdhjetë
5 pesë	70 shtatëdhjetë
6 gjashtë	80 tetëdhjetë
7 shtatë	90 nandëdhjetë (nëntëdhjetë)
8 tetë	100 njëqind
9 nandë (nëntë)	101 njëqind e një
10 dhjetë	200 dyqind
11 njëmbëdhjetë	201 dyqind e një
12 dymbëdhjetë	300 treqind
13 trembëdhjetë	400 katërqind
14 katërmëdhjetë	500 pesëqind
15 pesëmbëdhjetë	600 gjashtëqind
16 gjashtëmbëdhjetë	700 shtatëqind
17 shtatëmbëdhjetë	800 tetëqind
18 tetëmbëdhjetë	900 nandëqind (nëntëqind)
19 nandëmbëdhjetë (nëntëmbëdhjetë)	1000 njëmijë
20 njëzët	1001 njëmijë e një
21 njëzët e një	2000 dymijë
22 njëzët e dy	3000 trimijë
23 njëzët e tre (m.) tri (f.) etc.	1,000,000 një milion
30 tridhjetë	1,000,000,000 një miliard
31 tridhjetë e një	

a) The cardinal numbers stand in relation to those things to which they apply in the function of determinative elements:

një burrë one man **dy** burra two men

The postpositive nouns thus occur in singular or plural in the indefinite form.

b) Adverbs may be placed before the cardinal numbers when they confirm completeness or act in an interrogative or approximative manner:

plotë 'fully': plotë dyqind vjet 'exactly 200 years'

një: 'about': një katër a pesë 'about four or five'

The particle **a** may also be replaced by a hyphen: **katër-pesë**.

111. Basically, the cardinal numbers denote units from 1 to infinity. As soon as they change their form, however, by adding morphological elements or by inflection, their meaning is also modified. In this way the cardinal numbers become collectives through pluralization:

qinda (qindra) 'hundreds' (i.e. groups or quantities consisting of hundreds of units)
mija (mijëra) 'thousands'

112. Nouns are formed by adding postpositive **-ni** or prepositive **të**:
një = 1 **një-ni (një-ri)** 'the one', **dy** (indef.) — **të dy** 'both', **tre** — **të tre**
(m.) **të tria** (f.) 'the three':

	indef.		def.	
	m.	f.	m.	f.
Nom.	një		njeni (njëri)	njena (njëra)
Gen.	i njeni (njëri)	njene (njëre)	i njenit (njërit)	njenës (njërës)
Dat.	njeni (njëri)	njene (njëre)	njenit (njërit)	njenës (njërës)
Acc.	një		njenin (njërin)	njenën (njëren)
Abl.	njeni (njëri)	njene (njëre)	njenit (njërit)	njenës (njëres)
Nom.	dy		të dy	të dyjat
Gen.	i dyve		i të dyve(t)	i të dýjave(t)
Dat.	dyve		të dyve(t)	të dýjave(t)
Acc.	dy		të dy	të dyjat
Abl.	dyve		të dyve(t)	të dýjave(t)
Nom.	tre	tri	të tre	të tria
Gen.	i treve	triave	i të treve(t)	i të triave(t)
Dat.	treve	triave	të treve(t)	i të triave(t)
Acc.	tre	tri	të tre	të tria
Abl.	treve	triave	të treve(t)	të triave(t)

Note

një as the indefinite article (cf. § 66) is indeclinable

a) **katër** — **të katër** (m.). — **të katrat** (f.) 'the four' is declined in the same manner, e.g.:

dhelpna (dhelpna) rá me të katrat në kurthë
'the fox fell with the (i.e. its) four (feet) into the trap'

b) These nouns from cardinal numbers may also occur as adjectives in their determinative function. In this case they are placed before the noun, but only **njeni** (**njëri**) is, like all other adjectives in this position, declined in the definite form (cf. §85). In such a construction, the noun, whether singular or plural, is not declined:

banesa i përkët **njenës** (**njerës**) **motër**
'the house belongs to **one** sister'

From two on, however, the number remains unchanged and the noun is declined in the definite form:

dhelpna (dhelpna) ra me të katër kambët (këmbët) në kurthë
'the fox fell with (all) four feet into the trap'

113. The true **nominalized cardinal numbers** with abstract meaning are constructed in two ways:

a) through addition of the suffix **-sh** (m.) and through the simple article **-a**, **-ja** (def. form f.):

m.	f.
njësh-i 'the no. one'	një-ja 'the no. one' (as single number)
dysh-i 'the no. two'	dy-ja
tresh-i	tri-a
dhjetësh-i	dhjetë-a, etc.

Notes

1. The plural of *dysh-i*, etc. is constructed with *-a* or *-e*. *dyshta-t* ~ *dyshe-t* and denotes heterogeneous groups somewhat like *qinda* ('quadra') (cf. §111).
2. There is a similar meaning in the liturgical word *trini-a* 'trinity', i.e. a unity of three components.
3. Fixed adverbial forms are also derived from nominalized cardinal numbers of the type *dysh-t*.

u thyë qelqi e u ndá trish 'the glass broke and split in three'

114. The **ordinal numbers** are derived from the cardinals by adding the prepositive article **i**, **e** and the suffix **-të** if the number does not end in **-të** already. The only exception is **i**, **e parë** 'first'. The derivational process is like that of adjectives from nouns:

ar-i 'gold': i, e artë (ar-të) 'golden'

Ordinal numbers

1 i, e parë	32. i, e tridhetytë
2 i, e dytë	40 i, e katërdhjetë (dyzetë)
3 i, e tretë	50 i, e pesëdhjetë
4 i, e katërt	60 i, e gjashtëdhjetë
5 i, e pestë	70 i, e shtatëdhjetë
6 i, e gjashtë	80 i, e tetëdhejtë
7 i, e shtatë	90 i, e nandëdhjetë
8 i, e tetë	(nëntëdhjetë)
9 i, e nantë (nëntë)	100 i, e njëqintë
10 i, e dhjetë	101 i, e njëqindënjtë
11 i, e njëmbëdhjetë	200 i, e dyqintë
12 i, e dymbëdhjetë	201 i, e dyqindënjtë
13 i, e trembëdhjetë	300 i, e treqintë
14 i, e katërmëdhjetë	400 i, e katërqintë
15 i, e pesëmbëdhjetë	500 i, e pesëqintë
16 i, e gjashtëmbëdhjetë	600 i, e gjashtëqintë
17 i, e shtatëmbëdhjetë	700 i, e shtatëqintë
18 i, e tetëmbëdhjetë	18 i, e tetëqintë
19 i, e nandëmbëdhjetë	900 i, e nantëqintë
(nëntëmbëdhjetë)	(nëntëqintë)
20 i, e njëzetë	1000 i, e njëmijë
21 i, e njëzetënjtë	1001 i, e njëmijënjtë
22 i, e njëzetedytë	2000 i, e dymijë
23 i, e njëzetetretë	3000 i, e trimijë
30 i, e tridhjetë	1,000,000 i, e njëmiliontë
31 i, e tridhjetënjtë	

a) **i, e parë** 'first' is used only adjectivally. As is evident from the above, it is replaced in compounds by **-njëtë**:

dyzetënjtë (dyzet e njëtë) = 41

-njëtë as a component of an ordinal number should not be confused with **i, e njëjtë** 'the same'.

b) When they are associated with nouns, the ordinal numbers are declined like regular adjectives. As mentioned above (§83), in this function they can be placed either before or after the noun. It should be noted that in prepositive position they express a certain emphasis or gradation:

thonë se ishte **banori i parë** i Lumës

'they say that he was the first inhabitant of Luma'

ai ishte **i pari banór** i Lumës

'he was (certainly) the first inhabitant of Luma'

c) The ordinal numbers are also frequently used in a nominal manner (cf. § 56):

i dyti e fitoi lojën! 'The second one won the game!'
të dytit i ra shtëpia buzë lumit. 'The house on the river fell partly to the second'

d) The ordinal numbers occur adverbially, in clative forms, like other adverbs and adjectives of Class 2 (cf. § 99):

Adj.	Adv.
i, e parë	së pari 'first of all, firstly'
i, e dytë	së dyti 'second of all, secondly'
i, e tretë	së tretë 'third of all, thirdly'

Illustrative examples:

atë muej (muaj) së pari ra shi, së dyti e së tretë ra borë
'in that month, first it rained, secondly and thirdly it snowed'
(për) së gjashti herë erdhë pa plaçka: kjo ishte së mbrami
'(for) the sixth time he came without luggage: that was the last (time)'

Note

In several dialects of the southern Italian Arbëresh *i dtëz* — *e dtëza* occur as variants of *i dti* — *e dta* 'the second' (m and f)

115. The **partitive numbers** are expressions deriving from cardinal numbers (as numerators) and ordinal numbers (as denominators). The cardinal number remains unchanged and the ordinal number is declined, mostly in the definite form from 2 on in the plural.

Partitive number declension

	sg.	pl.
Nom.	një e treta ¹ / ₃	dy të tretat ² / ₃
Gen.	i një së tretës	i dy të tretave(t)
Dat.	një së tretës	dy së tretave(t)
Acc.	një të tretën	dy të tretat
Abl.	një së tretës	dy të tretave(t)

For stylistic reasons, particularly, the numerator may also occur in the definite form:

Kaceli tha: me një të tretë të kulaçit do të isha i kënaqun (kënaqur)
'Kacel said, "I would be satisfied with (about) a third of the flatbread"'
where it is understood that Kacel would also be satisfied with less than his due.

116. The **multiplicative numbers** are constructed with cardinal numbers and the suffix **-fish** (< Abl. pl. **fijsh**: sg. **fill-i** 'thread' pl. **fij**):

dyfish-i (dy-fish) 'double'	dhjetëfish-i (dhjetë-fish) 'ten-fold'
trefish-i (tre-fish) 'triple'	njëzetënjëfish-i (njëzet e një fish)
katërfish-i (katër-fish) 'quadruple'	'21-fold'
shumëfish (shumë-fish) 'manifold'	

a) As regular nouns the multiplicative numbers are declined in the singular masculine:

ai fitoi dyfishin e investimit 'he won double his investment'

b) Adjectives are derived from the nominal forms of the multiplicative numbers by addition of the prepositive article and the suffix *-të*:

i, e dyfishtë i, e trefishtë

c) The indefinite form of the multiplicative noun is used adverbially:

Kacelit udha iu pague (pague) trefish 'Kacel was paid triple his way'

d) The cardinal numbers occur *distributively* in pairs, connected by **nga** (Geg **ka**) or **e**:

një nga një ~ një e një = each 1

dy nga dy ~ dy e dy = each 2

Notes

The Albanian number system, with the differences between the two major dialects, has not changed since the language has been documented. Many divergences appear in Arbëresh, among which are the following:

1. After '30', according to the dialect, the decades are constructed *multiplicatively*

'three-tens': tri-dhjetë (tridhjetë) = 30

'four-tens': katër-dhjetë (katërdhjetë) = 40 (as in Geg)

'four-twenty': katër-zetë (katërzetë) = 80

2. And then *additively* again:

'twenty' and 'ten': njëzet e dhjetë = 30

'forty' and 'ten': dyzet e dhjetë = 50

'four-twenty' and 'ten': katërzetë e dhjetë = 90

Vocabulary

birë-a hole -a

degë-a branch -∅

kohë-a time -∅ (Geg *kohna*)

orë-a hour -∅

javë-a week -∅

muaj-i (*muaj-i*) month -∅

janar-i January

shkurt-i ~ *fror-i* February

mars-i March

prill-i April

maj-i May

qershór-i June

korrik-u July

gusht-i August

shtator-i September

tetor-i October

nandór-i (*nëntór-i*) November

dhjetor-i December

mbramje-a (*mbrëmje-a*) evening -∅

mëngjës-i morning -e

mjesditë-a ~ *mesditë-a* noon, mid-day -a

mbledhje-a addition -∅

zbritje-a subtraction -∅

<i>shumëzim-i</i> multiplication -e	<i>një herë</i> once, one time
<i>pjesëtim-i</i> division -e	<i>dy herë</i> twice, two times
<i>kilogram-i</i> kilogram -ë	<i>njëllëj</i> adv. equally
<i>metër-metri</i> meter <i>metra</i>	<i>për herën e parë</i> for the first time
<i>kilometër-kilometri</i> kilometer -a	<i>nesër</i> tomorrow
<i>metër katror</i> sq. meter <i>metra</i>	<i>mbasnesër (pasnesër)</i> day after
<i>katrorë</i>	tomorrow
<i>kvintal-i</i> quintal (200 pounds)	<i>sa peshon?</i> how much weighs?
<i>folë-ja</i> nest - \emptyset	<i>sa është (është) i gjatë?</i> how big is?
<i>ve-ja</i> egg - \emptyset	<i>sa është (është) ora?</i> what time is
<i>njësi-a</i> unity - \emptyset	it?
<i>minus-i</i> minus -e	<i>sa vjeç?</i> how old?
<i>plus-i</i> plus -e	<i>zbres</i> subtract
<i>një çerëk ore</i> $\frac{1}{4}$ hour	<i>mbledh</i> add
<i>zero gradë</i> zero degrees	<i>shumëzój</i> multiply
<i>një nga një</i> one for one, each 1	<i>pjesëtój</i> divide
<i>çdo ditë</i> every day	<i>njuh</i> count

sot jemi me 20 mars njëmijë nandëqind (nëntëqind) e tetëdhjetë e tri today is March 20, 1983

arriti në cak me një vonesë prej zero minuta e tetë sekonda he reached the goal with a delay of 0.8 seconds

do të fitojmë tre me zero we will win 3 to 0

një kundër katërve one against four

është (është) baras equals

prodhimi i duhanit kap tetë për qind më (më) shumë se vjet the production of tobacco reaches 8% more than last year

Lejla erdhi me bukën e të treve në dorë Leila came with the bread of the three in her hand

i pari rreth është (është) ferri the first ring is hell

Present indicative

(unë) njeh

(na ~ ne) njehim

(ti) njeh

(ju) njehin

(ai, ajo) njeh

(atá, ató) njehin

Exercise 21

Në sa ora vjen nesër? Unë vij në mëngjës në ora nëntë e tridhjetë minuta. Në vitin njëmijë katërqind e gjashtëdhjetë e tetë vdiq në Lezhë heroji kombëtar Gjergj Kastrioti-Skënderbeu. Sot jemi me dy të tretit njëmijë nëntëqind e gjashtëdhjetë e shtatë. Sa është ora? Sa janë kohët e ditës? Autobusi numër pesë ose njëshi kalon në ora dymbëdhjetë, në mesditë;

dysht, treshi, kâtërshi dhe pesa kalojnë çdo ditë nga ora shtatë deri në orën dhjetë. Unë kam dy miq: të dy banojnë në Durrës; prej të dyve(t) marr rregullisht letra.

Exercise 22

The children eat four to five times a day. How many kilos does the sick man weigh? He does not weigh much, only 55 kilos. How many cars are in the city park? Who counts them? There are many! We count the cattle, says the poet, but not the Albanian soldiers at the battlefield. How many inhabitants does this city have? This city has at most 500,000 inhabitants, at least 450,000 inhabitants. I am going home on October 10th for vacation. Count the money, please!

Text 11

Asht një kashë e lashë: njizët e pesë motra rrinë dorë për dorë.
(*Vargoni*)

Asht një poç me shtatë bira, çka âsht? Asht *kryet* (*koka*) e njeriut.

Janë tridhetë e dy vëllezën në një shtëpi me një motër që flet shumë:
kush janë atá? Janë *dhambët* dhe *gjuha* në gojën e njeriut.

Asht një lis me dymbëdhjetë dega

Gjashtë të buta e gjashtë të egra,

Çdo degë ka një folë

Çdo folë ka tridhetë vë. (*Vjeti*)

Lesson 12 — Leksioni i dymbëdhjetë

The Pronoun (I)

Personal and Reflexive Pronouns

117. Thanks to the latest detailed monographs, a considerably simplified pronominal system has been formulated in the contemporary standardized grammar, making the study of this difficult segment of Albanian somewhat easier. Apart from a few minor considerations in arrangement and classification, this system will be adopted here on the synchronic level.

In order to avoid excessively sharp delimitations between various groupings, the categorization of pronouns will not be observed with total strictness. As usual, account will be taken in the notes of the diachronic profile from the standpoint of older texts and dialects, so that a) the pronominal system will be further clarified in light of the simplified standardization of the official variant and b) the reader may familiarize himself with the pronominal forms of the three literary variants (Geg, Tosk and Arbëresh).

Notes

- 1 In the last century, scholars concerned with Albanian recognized that the pronominal system inherited from Indo-European was restructured in Albanian. Despite a great deal of endeavor, the patterns and particularly the mechanism of construction of the small word formative elements (also called deictic particles) involved remained unclear. One can only trace the active dynamics of new constructions and combinations of these elements from the time of Buzuku (1555) in order simply to establish that in the course of the last 500 years new pronominal systems have arisen, distributed according to dialects and dialect groups.
- 2 The following perceptions seem to have escaped linguists who have written on Albanian grammar:
- The full pronominal system of a particular older author or in a given dialect was never properly described in order to compare such pronominal systems with each other.
 - In diachronic and synchronic studies, vowel alternation in the inflection of the pronoun (especially in older texts) was not systematically studied, e.g.

<i>a e</i>	Nom	na	'we'	Acc	ne	'us'	or
<i>t y</i>	Nom	ti	'you (sg)'	Dat	ty	(< *tû)	'to you (sg)'
 - The same applies also to *stress shift* which, in earlier periods, had a morphological function

sg	imi	'my'	pl	e-mi	'my'
----	-----	------	----	------	------

118. The basic definition is applicable that pronouns are word types like nouns and adjectives, but it must also be noted that many of their aspects are closer to adverbs (cf. §§ 97, 121). In order to make its study easier, an attempt will be made, especially formally, to integrate the pronoun into the categories of the noun. It is necessary, however, particularly from the semantic standpoint, to sharply differentiate it from the noun and the adjective and to comprehend it as a category by itself.

Note

The Albanian pronouns are distinguished by the fact that they demonstrate gradations of emphasis. This occurs, for example, through

- reduplication: *vetvetja* ('*vet-vetja*') 'self, the person himself'
- doubling of the object: *me tha mue* (*mua*) lit. 'to me he said to me'.

It should also be recalled that the whole article system, i.e. the categories indefinite definite, has its origin in the components of the pronoun.

119. A special feature of the pronoun is to describe persons and things and, as far as possible, to localize them in space or, in rare instances, to compare them, e.g. **i**, **e** *tillë* 'such'.

Aside from **u** 'myself, yourself, himself, etc.', **që** 'which, that', **vetë** 'self', etc., which remain unchanged, the pronouns, as nominal elements, exhibit **gender** (although not in every instance), **number** and **case**.

120. The pronouns are divided into the following categories:

1. Personal pronouns: **unē** 'I', **na (ne)** 'we', **ti** 'you (sg.)', **ju** 'you (pl.)', **ai** — **ajó** 'he — she', **atá** — **ató** 'they (m.) — they (f.)'.
2. Reflexive: **vetē** 'self, the person', **vetvetja** 'the person himself', **u** 'myself, yourself, himself, etc.'
3. Demonstrative: **ky** — **kjo** 'this (m.) — this (f.)', **ai** — **ajó** 'that (m.) — that (f.)', **i**, **e tillē** 'such', etc.
4. Possessive: **im** — **ime** 'my (m. cf. French *mon*) — my (f. cf. French *ma*)', **ynē** — **jonē** 'our (m.) — our (f.)', **yt** — **jote** 'your sg. (m. cf. Fr. *ton*) — your sg. (f. cf. Fr. *ta*)', **juej (juaj)** 'your pl. (m.-f.)', **i tij** — **e tij** 'his' (m., cf. Fr. *son*) — 'his' (f.), **i saj** — **e saj** 'her (m.) — her (f.)', **i tyne** — **e tyne (i tyre — e tyre)** 'their (m.) — their (f.)'.
5. Interrogative: **kush** 'who', **čka** 'what', **cili** — **cila** 'which (m.-f.)', **i sati** 'what (number, quantity)', etc.
6. Relative: **i cili** — **e cila** 'which, that (m.-f.)', **qē** 'which, that', etc.
7. Indefinite: **dikúsh**, **kushdó** 'someone, anyone', **njeni (njēri)** — **njena (njēra)** 'one (m.-f.)', **tjetri** — **tjetra** 'another (m.-f.)'.

121. In terms of its origin, as well as of semantics, the group of pronominal adverbs (cf. §97) may not be separated from the category of pronouns. Thus, for example, **kētú** 'here' **atjē** 'there' belong to the demonstratives; **ku?** 'where?' belongs to the interrogatives, and **ku** 'where' belongs to the relatives:

sendin kërkoje **atý**, **ku** e ke vu (vurē)

'look for the thing there, where you put it down'

122. The **personal pronouns**, as well as the relatives, are distinguished from the other pronominal categories in that they can never occur adjectivally.

a) In contrast to the 3rd person, the 1st and 2nd persons do not distinguish gender;

b) The personal pronouns also lack the contrast *indeterminate*/'*determinate*, which must not be confused with strong (I) and weak (II) forms;

c) The suppletive forms of the 1st person are also quite striking:

Nom. unē Dat., Acc. mue (mua) — pl. na (ne)

and for the 2nd person:

sg. ti pl. ju

d) It is not obligatory to have the personal pronoun in the Nom. when it is used as the subject of a verb.

123. **Declension of the personal pronouns** (the weak declensions [see below, §§ 126-127] are entered under II in the table)

	1st Person				2nd Person			
	sg.		pl.		sg.		pl.	
	(I)	(II)	(I)	(II)	(I)	(II)	(I)	(II)
Nom.	unë		na (ne)		ti		ju	
	'I'		'we'		'you sg.'		'you pl.'	
Gen.	—							
Dat.	mue (mua)	më	neve	na	ty	të	juve	ju
Acc.	mue (mua)	më	ne	na	ty	të	ju	ju
Abl.	meje		nesh		teje		jush	

3rd Person

	m.		f.	
	(I)	(II)	(I)	(II)
Nom.	ai		ajó	
	'he'		'she'	
Gen.	i atij ~ tij		i asáj ~ saj	
Dat.	atij ~ tij	i	asáj ~ saj	i
Acc.	atë ~ të	e	atë	e
Abl.	atij ~ tij		asáj ~ saj	
	así ~ si		asó ~ so ~ soje	

pl

	m.		f.	
	(I)	(II)	(I)	(II)
Nom.	atá		ató	
	'they (m.)'		'they (f.)'	
Gen.	i (a)týne (atyre)		i (a)týne (a)týre	
Dat.	(a)týne (a)týre	u	(a)týne (a)týre	u
Acc.	atá ~ ta	i	ató ~ to	i
Abl.	(a)týne (a)týre		(a)týne (a)týre	
	asish ~ sish ~ (sýresh)		asósh ~ sosh ~ (sýresh)	

Notes

- In northern Geg and in Arbëresh dialects, as well as in older texts, the sg. 1 is *u* instead of *unë*. An expressive affix *-ne* is added to the sg. 2 in the dialect of Shkodra, mostly in the Voc., i.e. *tí ~ tine*:

E tine, o Pal, kujtove 'and you, Pal, thought' (N. Mjedja)

- In many Tosk dialects, *ay* is a variant of *ai*.
- As mentioned above (§ 122, b) vowel alternation occurs in the declension:

*e/ue (ua) < *ō*: Abl. *meje* — Dat., Acc. *mue (mua)*

a/e: Nom. *na* — Dat. *neve*

i/y/e: Nom. *tí* — Dat. *ty* — Abl. *teje*

As *i* and *y* have levelled under one phoneme, *i*, in Arbëresh, contrast between cases is achieved through vowel quantity (*short/long*):

Nom *tí* Dat *tī* ~ *tij*

124. In the declension of the 3rd person, the short forms without initial **a** generally occur after prepositions:

prej tij mos prit shumë 'do not expect much from him'

The second forms, i.e. those of the old Ablative: sg. **(a)si** (m.) - **(a)so** ~ **soje** (f.), pl. **(a)sish** (m.) — **(a)sosh** (f.), are used without preposition:

hiqu **(a)sish** — **(a)sosh** 'go away from them'

Note

The neuter, which is found in older texts and in a few peripheral modern dialects, exists only in the sg. 3 *atá* 'that':

Nom., Acc. <i>atá</i>	Dat. <i>atij</i>
Gen 1 <i>atij</i>	Abl. <i>atij</i> ~ <i>(a)si</i>

The neuter *atá* is especially utilized in the demonstrative function.

atá mish të thatë rúje përdimën 'keep that dried meat for winter'

125. The forms of the 3rd person are also encountered in other categories of the pronoun:

- They can occur fully in the function of the demonstratives;
- The Genitive, which is functionally irrelevant with regard to the personal pronouns, indicates in possessives that which possesses, i.e. the **possessor**.

126. The **weak forms**, also called enclitics or unstressed elements of the personal pronoun (listed under II in the table above, §123), serve as indispensable elements in constructions with double object:

Zefi e mori librin '(lit.) Joseph it took the book'

As an enclitic, **e** (Acc. sg. of **ai**) comes before the verb and relates to **librin**, the regular direct object in Acc. sg. definite form.

- If the personal pronoun in the strong or long form is placed before the verb, the corresponding weak form must also be used:

mue (mua) më merr malli përvendin tim
'(lit.) longing for my native land seizes me **me**'

The strong forms of the personal pronouns denote emphasis:

ty të këshillova 'I was advising just you (sg.)'
të këshillova 'I was advising you (sg.)'

- The weak form of the personal pronouns is placed after the verb only in the imperative:

shikoje (shiko-j-e) lojë në televizion! 'watch the play on television!'

Note

The emphasis of the double object produces an emphatic mode of expression in which the pronominal enclitics take on a special function. This repetition with a

strengthening effect occurs not only in object position (Dat., Acc.), but in the Nom. as well, i.e. in subject position, where the function is fulfilled by the reflexive pronoun *vetë*:

unë vetë e marr përsipër këtë detyrë 'I myself take on this duty'

127. A very frequent phenomenon is the combination of two weak forms, one in Dat. and one in Acc. (indirect + direct object):

Zefi **ma** dha librin 'Joseph gave me it (*më e > ma*) the book'

a) Such compounds (**me it, you it**, etc.) are presented in the following sample sentences in which the repetition of the object by means of two grammatical elements (pronoun and noun) is obligatory, while the subject may be omitted if it is not intended to be emphasized:

<i>ma</i> (<i>më + e</i>) dha librin	he gave me the book
<i>ta</i> (<i>të + e</i>) dha librin	he gave you (sg.) the book
<i>ia</i> (<i>i + e</i>) dha librin	he gave him the book
<i>na e</i> (<i>na e</i>) dha librin	he gave us the book
<i>jua</i> (<i>ju + e</i>) dha librin	he gave you (pl.) the book
<i>ua</i> (<i>u + e</i>) dha librin	he gave them the book

b) If **librin** (Acc. sg.) is changed to **librat** (Acc. pl.) in these examples, the second part of the compound is altered:

<i>m'i</i> (<i>më + i</i>) dha librat	he gave me the books
<i>t'i</i> (<i>të + i</i>) dha librat	he gave you (sg.) the books
<i>ia</i> (<i>i + i</i>) dha librat	he gave him the books
<i>na i</i> dha librat	he gave us the books
<i>jua</i> (<i>ju + i</i>) dha librat	he gave you (pl.) the books
<i>ua</i> (<i>u + i</i>) dha librat	he gave them the books

Here the weak form of the Acc. pl. of **atá**, namely **i**, does not occur as the second member of the compounds in every instance; it is replaced by **a** which has the same function as **i** in the 3rd sg. and pl., as well as in the pl. 2.

Note

The results of the compounding *më + e = ma*, *të + e = ta*, *ju + e = jua*, *i + e = ia*, *u + e = ua*, etc. are to be understood purely synchronically and not etymologically.

c) Like the simple weak forms, their compounds **ma**, **ta**, **ia**, etc. also stand before the verb:

Gjoni **ma** dha fjalën 'John gave me his word'

They too, however, may be placed after the verb in imperatives:

epma (*ep-ma*) librin! *or ma ep* librin 'give me the book!'

epia (*ep-ia*) librin 'give him the book!'

In interrogative sentences the word order does not change:

a ta dha librin? 'did he give you the book?'

128. The **reflexives** do not distinguish person, i.e. **u** 'self' relates to all persons. The reflexive pronouns are divided into:

a) **indeclinable** pronominal elements: **vetë** 'self', **vetvetiu** 'by itself, spontaneously' (also perceived as an adverb), **u** 'self' indispensable for the construction of many forms of the passive and medio-passive:

ai erdhi **vetë** e na takoi 'he came himself and found us'
 u çarmatós **vetvetiu** 'he disarmed himself automatically'

Note

Vetë as a reflexive with emphatic function (cf. § 125. Note) is associated not only with the personal pronoun, but with the noun as well:

vetë fshatarët *or* fshatarët vetë iu kujtuen ujku
 'the villagers themselves tracked the wolf'
 fajtori vetë ia rrëfeu fajin gjyqtarit
 'the guilty (one) confessed (his) guilt himself to the judge'

b) On the other hand, **vetja** ~ **vetvetja** 'self, person himself' is declinable only in the def. sg. Both reflexives, however, also have an indef. variant in the Acc. They are declined as follows:

Nom.	vetja	vetvetja
Gen.	i vetes	i vetvetes
Dat.	vetes	vetvetes
Acc.	veten	vetveten
Abl.	vetes	vetvetes

Note

Vetja, *vetvetja* are earlier variants.

The indef. form in the Acc. is used after prepositions:

Kaceli mori me *vetë* edhe miqtë 'Kacel took (his) friends with him(self)'
 ai nuk mendonte vetëm për vetvete 'he was not only concerned about himself'

If, however, a definite pronoun occurs supplementally after the combination 'preposition + *vetë* ~ *vetvete*', the def. form is used

për veten e tij s'e lodhte mendën 'he gave no thought to his own person'

Vocabulary

gotë-a glass -a
lojë-a game *lojna* (*lojra*)
futbóll-i football
katallán-i cyclops *katalláj*
 (*katallanë*)
konóp-i cord, rope -ë
televizór-i television -ë
 (*h*)*arushë-a* bear -a

kokë-a head -a (here also *understanding*) cf. *krye-t* 'idem'
shpellë-a cave, grotto -a
i, e verbuar blinded, dazzled
i, e verbuem-e (G.)
për kambe on the leg
për koke on the head
besa! word of honor!, oath!

<i>ik</i> go out	<i>më duket</i> it seems to me
<i>doli, dolën</i> he, they came out	<i>si me ia bâ</i> what to do
<i>me gjuejtë</i> to hunt	<i>ju më lidhni</i> you (pl.) tie me
<i>u tha</i> he told them, said to them	<i>këput</i> broke off, tore off
<i>më verboi</i> he blinded me	<i>bre</i> hey!
<i>hyn</i> he goes, enters	<i>s'di</i> I do not know
<i>thellë</i> deep	<i>sill-</i> bring!
<i>luej (luaj)</i> move	<i>më quëjnë</i> my name is (lit. they
<i>tërhiqni, tërheqin</i> you (pl.), they	call me)
pull out	<i>e pati</i> he had him, her, it
<i>pýesin</i> they ask	<i>me e kapë</i> to seize, catch him
<i>ha bukë</i> I eat a meal	<i>por çka me pá</i> but what to see
<i>për të hangër, hangri</i> he certainly	
ate (lit. to eat, he ate)	

Present Indicative

(unë) shoh 'I see'	(na, ne) shohim
(ti) sheh	(ju) shihni
(ai, ajó) sheh	(atá, ató) shohin

The modal **mund** 'can' is not conjugated according to person, but combines with the **Subjunctive**: *unë mund të marr* 'I can take', *ai mund të marrë vesh* 'he can understand', etc. (for a full discussion of modals see § 172).

Present Subjunctive

(unë) të marr	(na, ne) të marrim
(ti) të marrësh	(ju) të merrni ~ mirrni
(ai, ajó) të marrë	(atá, ató) të marrin

Exercise 23

Translate and analyse:

Accusative

<i>mund të më marrësh vesh</i>	<i>mund të na marrësh vesh</i>
<i>mund të të marrë vesh</i>	<i>mund t'ju marr vesh</i>
<i>mund ta (të + e) marrësh vesh</i>	<i>mund t'i merrni vesh</i>

Dative + Accusative

<i>mund të ma marrësh vesh fjalën</i>	(sg.)
<i>mund të ta marr vesh fjalën</i>	<i>mund të na e marrë vesh fjalën</i>
<i>mund t'ia marr vesh fjalën</i>	<i>mund t'jua marrim vesh fjalën</i>
	<i>mund t'ua marr vesh fjalën</i>

(pl.)

<i>mund të m'i marrësh vesh fjalët</i>	<i>mund të na i marrë vesh fjalën</i>
--	---------------------------------------

mund të t'i marr vesh fjalët
mund t'ua marr vesh fjalët

mund t'jua marrim vesh fjalët
mund t'ua marr vesh fjalët

Exercise 24

Bring me a glass of water, please. Give the boy the bread. The boy took the book and gave it to his sister. Do you see me? I am at the top of the tree, i.e. on the tree. We see the football game on television. Kacel takes two friends with him too and comes here. Is your name Agim? No, my name is Genc, my brother's name is Agim. "Who blinded you?" the brothers asked him. "(I) myself (**more** = interjection) Myself, Myself!" he said to them.

Text 12

E pati a s'e pati kryet?

Dolën disa me gjuëjtë harushën. Ik harusha e atá mbas dhe ajó hyn në shpellën e thellë në shkamb. Si me ia bâ, si me ia bâ me e kapë harushën?

— Po hÿj unë tha njeni. Ju më lidhni me konóp për kambe. Kur unë ta kap harushën, luej konopin e ju më tërhiqni.

Ai hyn në shpellë e harusha e kap për koke e ia këpút. Konopi luen e atá, shokët, e tërheqin. Por çka me pá? Ai ishte pa krye!

· Bre, po ai e pati a s'e pati kryet? Pyetën shokët.

Njeni thotë: "E pati!" tjetri: "Më duket s'e pati!"

Shkojnë te grúeja në shtëpi dhe e pÿesin:

— Oj, grue, kur doli burri yt sot, a e pati kokën apo jo?

— S'di, besa! Për të hangër bukë, hangri, por a e pati a s'e pati kokën kur doli, s'e di.

Lesson 13 — Leksioni i trembëdhjetë

The Pronoun (II)

Demonstratives and Possessives

129. The essential demonstratives for proximity are:

ky (m.) — kjo (f.) 'this (m.-f.)'

Distance from the speaker is expressed by:

ai (m.) — ajó (f.) 'that (m.-f.)'

As already mentioned (§97, Notes), the element **k-** indicates proximity and the element **a-**, distance.

Notes

1. Utilizing the Tosk variant *ay* (cf. § 123, No 2), a perfect formal correspondence may be seen

ky - kjo . ay -- ajô

2. The neuter *keta* 'this' *ata* 'that', like the neuter noun, occurs regularly in earlier phases of Albanian and in the conservative variants (cf. Arberesh) Remnants of such doublets occur in the contemporary literary language in idioms

keta (n) *që po të them ka të ngjarë*

kjo (f.) *që po të them ka të ngjarë*

'what (lit. this that) I am telling you has likelihood'

3. In Geg and in older texts, emphasis is given to that which is referred to by the following forms

njký ~ njeký njekjó 'just this (m.-f.)'

njai njajô 'just that (m.-f.)'

njekëta njata (n) 'just this - just that'

As is evident, *nj- nje-* (*nj-ky ~ nje-ky*) is prefixed to the demonstrative. This is also found in Buzuku *nje* 'eccce' and in Arberesh *njo* 'idem'.

130. The true demonstratives may be used alone (nominally) and attributively (adjectivally). As demonstrative elements, comparable with the prepositive definite article, the demonstrative pronouns come before the noun. Their declensional form, alone or in the attributive function, does not change. The postpositive noun (the second member of the syntagm **demonstrative + noun**) is declined in the indef. form.

131. Declension of the demonstrative pronouns **ky — kjo**:

	sg.	m.	pl.
Nom.	<i>ky</i> (teatër) 'this (theater)'		<i>këta</i> (teatra)
Gen.	<i>i këtij</i> (teatri)		<i>i këtyne ~ këtyre</i> (teátrave)
Dat.	<i>këtij</i> (teatri)		<i>këtyne ~ këtyre</i> (teátrave)
Acc.	<i>këtë</i> (teatër)		<i>këta</i> (teatra)
Abl.	<i>këtij ~ kësi</i> (teatri)		<i>këtyne (këtyre) ~ kësi</i> (teattrash) <i>kësis</i> (only nominally)
	sg.	f.	pl.
Nom.	<i>kjo</i> (kulturë) 'this (culture)'		<i>këto</i> (kultura)
Gen.	<i>i kësaj</i> (kulture)		<i>i këtyne ~ këtyre</i> (kultúrave)
Dat.	<i>kësaj</i> (kulture)		<i>këtyne ~ këtyre</i> (kultúrave)
Acc.	<i>këtë</i> (kulturë)		<i>këto</i> (kultura)
Abl.	<i>kësaj ~ kësó</i> (kulture)		<i>këtyne (këtyre) ~ kësó</i> (kulturash) <i>kësis</i> (only nominally)

a) Sometimes, when it is necessary to emphasize the noun, constructions of the following type occur where the second member is also declined in the definite form:

ky djali 'this boy' — kjo vajza 'this girl'

b) For the declension of the demonstratives **ai** — **ajó**, see § 123; it should be noted that in an attributive function, the Abl. pl. is **kësi** (m.) — **kësó** (f.):

kësi teattrash kësó kulturash

Note

The neuter sg. declension is.

Nom.	ketà (djathë) 'this (cheese)'
Gen.	1 këtij (djathi)
Dat.	këtij (djathi)
Acc	ketà (djathë)
Abl.	kësi (djathi)

c) In connection with terms denoting materials or substances, particularly, **kësi** — **këso**, **asi** — **asó** indicate, in addition to qualitative comparison, a part of the whole as well:

kësi mielli mund të gatohen dy bukë
'from this flour it is possible to prepare two breads'

adjectivally:

asi djemsh — asó vajzash ka vetëm Korça
'only in Korça are there such (like those) boys — such (like those) girls'

pronominally, i.e. alone:

asish dhe asósh ka vetëm Korça
'only in Korça are there such (m.) and such (f.)'

d) Constructions of this type with the old Ablative are now being replaced with periphrases utilising the prepositions **prej** 'from, of', **me** 'with', etc. + noun (in the Dat. or Acc.):

prej këtij mielli mund të gatohen dy bukë ~ me këtë miell etc.
'from this flour it is possible to prepare two breads'

132. In contrast to **ky** — **kjo**, **ai** — **ajó**, the figurative demonstrative is expressed by **i**, **e** **tillë**. The derivatives of **i**, **e** **tillë** with the prefixes **kë-** and **a-** indicate their particular demonstrative character:

i, e këtillë 'such as this'
i, e atillë 'such as that'

Formally, however, they belong to the category of adjectives of the type **i**, **e** **mirë** 'good'. The **figurative demonstratives** are declined like this type of adjective and, when they stand alone, like nominalized adjectives:

adjectivally

	sg.	m.	pl.
Nom.	nji (një) burrë i tillë		burra të tillë

Gen.	i	nji (një) burri të tillë	i	búrrave të tillë
Dat.		nji (një) burri të tillë		búrrave të tillë
Acc.		nji (një) burrë të tillë		burra të tillë
Abl.		nji (një) burri të tillë		búrrave të tillë
		sg.	f.	pl.
Nom.		nji (një) mollë e tillë		molla të tilla
Gen.	i	nji (një) molle të tillë	i	móllave të tilla
Dat.		nji (një) molle të tillë		móllave të tilla
Acc.		nji (një) mollë të tillë		molla të tilla
Abl.		nji (një) molle të tillë		mollash të tilla
or Geg		nji molle së tillë		mollash së tilla

nominally

		sg.	m.	pl.	
		indef.	def.	indef.	def.
Nom.		nji (një) i tillë	i tulli	të tillë	të tillët
Gen.	i	nji (një) të tulli	i të tillit	i të tillëve	i të tillëvet
Dat.		nji (një) të tulli	të tillit	të tillëve	të tillëvet
Acc.		nji (një) të tillë	të tillin	të tillë	të tillët
Abl.		nji (një) të tilli	të tillit	të tillëve	të tillëvet
		sg.	f.	pl.	
		indef.	def.	indef.	def.
Nom.		nji (një) e tillë	e tilla	të tilla	të tillat
Gen.	i	nji (një) së tillë	i së tillës	i të tillave	i të tillavet
Dat.		nji (një) së tillë	së tillës	të tillave	të tillavet
Acc.		nji (një) të tillë	të tillën	të tilla	të tillat
Abl.		nji (një) së tillë	së tillës	së tillash	së tillavet

a) Adjectivally, **i tulli**, **e tilla** occur (as usual, in the def. form) before the noun:

mos u merr me të tilla punë 'do not occupy yourself with such things'

b) This category of the demonstrative can replace constructions with the Ablative of the type **kësi** — **kësó** + **noun** (cf. § 130, c):

así djemsh — asó vajzash s'gjenden askúnd

djem të tillë — vajza të tilla s'gjenden askúnd

'such boys — such girls are not found anywhere'

Note

In the dialect of Shkodra, **i, e atillë** occurs as an adjective with the meaning 'strong, brave': *trima t'atillë* 'strong ~ brave men'.

133. **i, e njëjtë** (Geg **i, e njajtë**) 'the same (m.-f.)' belongs to the demonstra-

tives of the type **i, e tillë**. It is declined in the same manner and occurs adjectivally before or after the noun:

na (ne) nuk kemi nji (një) **rrugë të njëjtë**

'we do not have the same road'

e njëjta fjalë u përsërit nja disa herë

'the same word was repeated several times'

Nominally: nuk ndërron! mbetet gjithnjë **i njëjti** 'he does not change! he always remains the same'.

134. The **possessives** stand at the center of the pronoun system. Like adjectives, they can occur in the syntagm either with a noun or alone, in the same manner as nominalized adjectives:

shtëpia jote 'your (sg.) house' — jotja 'yours (sg.)'

In order to understand the function of the possessives, it is necessary to know the following:

a) The **possessive pronouns** have the grammatical category of **person**, which denotes the **possessor**; in the syntagms **noun + possessive** or **possessive + noun**, the noun expresses what the person possesses, i.e. the thing possessed (Lat. *possessum*):

possessum possessor

djali im 'my son'

possessor possessum

- jot(e) bijë 'your (sg.) daughter'

b) The **gender** of the possessive pronoun relates to the **thing possessed**, i.e. the noun, in the 1st and 2nd persons sg. and pl. (cf. the examples above); the 3rd person is an exception in that the gender of the **possessor** is expressed by the pronoun:

djali i tij 'his son'

— djali i saj 'her son'

c) If the possessive pronoun stands alone, its gender agrees with the gender of the indicated thing possessed:

Eva i tha **Adamit** (m.): ti je **imi** (m.) 'Eve said to Adam: you are mine'

Adami i tha **Evës** (f.): ti je **imja** (f.) 'Adam said to Eve: you are mine'

135. The **declension of the possessive pronoun** has three aspects; two **adjectival**: a) with possessive after the noun, b) with possessive before the noun, which must be the term for a familial relation; and c) the nominal declension of the possessive pronoun that stands alone.

136. **Declension of the possessives of Groups a (designated here by I) and c (designated here by II)**

1. Person singular

	m.			
	sg.		pl.	
	I	II	I	II
Nom.	libri im (my book)	imı (mine)	librat e mi (my books)	të mitë (mine)
Gen.	i librit tim	i tmit	i libravet të mi	i të mivet
Dat.	librit tim	timit	libravet të mi	të mivet
Acc.	librin tim	timın	librat e mi	të mitë
Abl.	librit tim	tmit	libravet të mi	të mivet

Here, as in the following paradigms, a comparison with French is helpful in understanding the nominal forms: **imi**, for example, actually means 'le mien', i.e. 'the (masculine thing which is) mine', **të mitë** 'les miens', i.e. 'the (masculine things which are) mine', etc.

	f.			
	sg.		pl.	
	I	II	I	II
Nom.	pena ime (my pen)	imja (mine)	penat e mia (my pens)	të miat (mine)
Gen.	i penës sime	i simes	i pënavet të mia	i të miavet
Dat.	penës sime	simes	pënavet të mia	të miavet
Acc.	penën time	timen	penat e mia	të miat
Abl.	penës sime	simes	pënavet të mia	të miavet

a) When the noun occurs in the indef. form, the possessive pronoun declension in the singular does not change:

Nom. nji (një) libër **im** — nji (një) penë **ime**

Gen. i nji (një) libri **tim** — i nji (një) penë **sime**

In the Nom. and Acc. of the indef. plural, however, just as in the declension of the adjective (cf. §83), the linking morpheme of the definite form **e** is replaced by **të**:

def. Nom., Acc. pl.: librat **e** mi — penat **e** mia

indef. Nom., Acc. pl.: libra **të** mi — pena **të** mia

This rule applies to all similar instances in the declension of the possessives.

b) Late Geg expresses complete formal agreement between the possessives and the Class 2 adjectives (cf. §71) in that the possessives in Geg occur with the prepositive articles **i**, **e**:

libri i im ~ i em — pena e eme — i imi ~ i emi (m.) — e emja (f.)
 (my book) — (my pen) (mine m.) — (mine f.)

c) The articles **i**, **e** occur very frequently among the pronouns and are declined as is usual in the other categories of the noun, i.e. like Class 2 adjectives or, when alone, like nominalized adjectives and like the terms of familial relation (cf. def. **i nipi**, § 58).

Notes

1 In Old Albanian, in constructions of the type *noun + possessive*, the possessives were declined in the def. form, precisely like adjectives (cf. § 81 No.), according to the following type:

Nom. pl. *librat timët* 'my books'

Gen. pl. *i libravet timëvet*

Vestiges of this declension type are found even today in the Arbëresh dialects:

livrat timët 'my books'

It is illuminating, therefore, to note that in this phase of Albanian there was scarcely any difference between the adjective (I) and noun (II) declensions.

2 The contemporary declension system of the possessives, in comparison with that of the older authors, has been simplified considerably in that the vowel alternations have been strongly reduced. The following declension pattern for the 1st person is taken from the *Missale* of Gjon Buzuku (1555):

		1st person singular				
		m.		f.		n. sg
	sg	pl.	sg.	pl.		
Nom.	em (my)	e mij (my)	eme (my)	e mij (my)	tem (my)	
Gen.	tim	mive	sime	mive	tim	
Dat.	tim	mive	sime	mive	tim	
Acc.	tem	e mij	teme	e mij	tem	
Abl.	sim	së mijsh	sime	së mijsh	sim	

To some extent, this system has been retained by peripheral dialects, particularly with respect to the terms of familial relationship (cf. § 146). The neuter plural has coincided with the masculine or feminine plural.

137. Declension of the 1st person plural

		m.			
		sg.	pl.		
	I	II	I	II	
Nom.	libri ynë (our book)	yni (ours)	librat tanë (our books)	tanët (ours)	
Gen.	i librit tonë	i tonit	i libravet tanë	i tánëvet	
Dat.	librit tonë	tonit	libravet tanë	tánëvet	
Acc.	librin tonë	tonin	librat tanë	tanët	
Abl.	librit tonë	tonit	libravet tanë	tánëvet	
f.					
Nom.	pena jonë (our pen)	jona (ours)	penat tona (our pens)	tonat (ours)	

Gen.	i penës sonë	i sonës	i pénavet tona	i tónavet
Dat.	penës sonë	sonës	pénavet tona	tónavet
Acc.	penën tonë	tonën	penat tona	tonat
Abl.	penës sonë	sonës	pénavet tona	tónavet

a) The 1st person plural exhibits a striking number of variants which are difficult to divide according to dialect: -

Geg: Nom. sg. i ynë ~ i jonë (m.) 'our' Nom. pl. tonë ~ tanë (m., f.)
 Arbëresh: Nom. sg. in ~ jón (m., f.), tón (n.) Nom. pl. tón

Notes

1 The declension of the singular for the 1st person plural in Old Geg is.

	m.		f		
	sg	pl.	sg	pl	n. sg
Nom	yne (our)	tane (our)	jone (our)	tone (our)	tanë (our)
Gen	tinë	tinëve	sanë	tónëve ~ tinëve	tinë
Dat	tinë	tinëve	sanë	toneve ~ tineve	tinë
Acc	tanë	tanë	tanë	tonë	tane
Abl.	sinë	sinësh	sonë	sonësh	sinë

2 The prepositive article for possessives was not yet generalized in Old Geg. cf., e.g., *gluha jone* 'our language' (Buzuku, 1555)

138. Declension of the 2nd person possessive

2nd person singular

m.

sg.

	I	II
Nom.	libri yt (your book)	yti (yours)
Gen.	i librit tand (tënd)	i tandit (tëndit)
Dat.	librit tand (tënd)	tandit (tëndit)
Acc.	librin tand (tënd)	tandin (tëndin)
Abl.	librit tand (tënd)	tandit (tëndit)

pl.

Nom.	librat e tu (your books)	të tutë (yours)
Gen.	i libravet të tu libravet të tu	i të tuvet të tuvet
Acc.	librat e tu	të tutë
Abl.	libravet të tu	të tuvet

		f.
		sg.
	I	II
Nom.	pena jote (your pen)	jotja (yours)
Gen.	i penēs sate	i sates
Dat.	penēs sate	sates
Acc.	penën tande (tēnde)	tandën (tëndën)
Abl.	penēs sate	sates

		pl.
Nom.	penat e tua (your pens)	të tuat (yours)
Gen.	i pēnavet të tua	i të tuāvet
Dat.	pēnavet të tua	të tuāvet
Acc.	penat e tua	të tuat
Abl.	pēnavet të tua	të tuāvet

a) The neuter sg. is: Nom., Acc. **mishtë tat** (I) 'your meat' **të tat** (II) 'yours', Gen., Dat., Abl. **mishit tand (tënd)** (I) **tandit (tëndit)** (II).

b) The plural (I) has been simplified in the literary language in that the link morphemes **e** and **të** have been eliminated in the def. form:

	indef.	def.
Nom.	(disá) libra tu	penat tua
Gen.	i librave tu	pēnavet tua

Note

The old forms of the 2nd person sg. according to Buzuku are:

	m.		f.		n sg.
	sg.	pl.	sg.	pl.	
Nom	yt (your)	e tũ (your)	jote (your)	e tũ (your)	tat (your)
Gen	tit	tuve	sate	tuve	tit
Dat	tit	tuve	sate	tuve	tit
Acc.	tand	e tũ	tande	e tũ	tat
Abl.	sit	së tũsh ~ së tũ	sote	së tũ(sh)	sit

The southern Tosk definite forms according to Vilara (1801) are:

Def	sg m.	def. sg. f.	pl m.	pl f.
Nom	iti	itja	të-tu	të-tuātë
Gen	titit	sitesë	të-tuвет	së-tuāvet
Dat.	titit	sitesë	të-tuвет	së-tuāvet
Acc	tëntinë	tëntënë	të-tutë	të-tuat
Abl.				

139.

2nd person plural

		m.	
		sg.	
	I		II
Nom.	libri juej (juaj) (your book)	júeji (júaji) (yours)	
Gen.	i librit tuej (tuaj)	i túejit (túajit)	
Dat.	librit tuej (tuaj)	túejit (túajit)	
Acc.	librin tuej (tuaj)	túajin	
Abl.	librit tuej (tuaj)	túejit (túajit)	
		pl.	
Nom.	librat tuej (tuaj) (your books)	tuejt (tuajt) (yours)	
Gen.	i libravet tuej (tuaj)	i túejvet (túajvet)	
Dat.	libravet tuej (tuaj)	túejvet (túajvet)	
Acc.	librat tuej (tuaj)	tuejt (tuajt)	
Abl.	libravet tuej (tuaj)	túejvet (túajvet)	
		f.	
		sg.	
	I		II
Nom.	pena juej (juaj) (your pen)	júeja (júaja) (yours)	
Gen.	i penēs suej (suaj)	i súdejēs (súajēs)	
Dat.	penēs suej (suaj)	súdejēs (súajēs)	
Acc.	penēn tuej (tuaj)	túdejēn (túajēn)	
Abl.	penēs suej (suaj)	súdejēs (súajēs)	
		pl.	
Nom.	penat túeja (túaja) (your pens)	túejat (túajat) (yours)	
Gen.	i pénavet túeja (túaja)	i túejavet (túajavet)	
Dat.	pénaveť túeja (túaja)	túejavet (túajavet)	
Acc.	penat túeja (túeja)	túejat (túajat)	
Abl.	pénaveť túeja (túaja)	túejavet (túajavet)	

a) The forms of the possessive pronouns do not change when the noun (i.e. the *possessum*) is declined in the indefinite form.

b) The Gen., Dat. and Abl. cases often lose the final *-t* of the plural, so that the characteristic marker which distinguishes indef. from def. disappears.

c) In Geg, the nominalized forms frequently exhibit the Abl. pl. variants **tuejsh** (m.) — **suejsh** (f.).

Notes

1. The old forms of the 2nd person plural are

	m		f		n. sg
	sg.	pl	sg	pl	
Nom	yj (your)	tāj (your)	juoj (your)	tuoj (your)	taj (your)
Gen	tj [tī]	tive	sāj	túoje	tj [tī]
Dat.	tj [tī]	tive	sāj	túoje	tj [tī]
Acc.	taj	tāj	tāj	tuoj	taj
Abl.	sij [sī]	sijsh	suoj	suojsh	sij [sī]

It should be noted that morphological relevance is marked by *short long*: tāj (Acc. sg m) tāj (Nom, Acc. pl.). The consistency of such marking among the older authors has not yet been investigated

2. The following examples from Buzuku are given to show that the def forms of the possessives may also occur *adjectivally*:

tě shóhēnē vėpėrat e mira *túojtē* (def. Acc. pl. 2 f.)

'may they see your good works'

ėn vórreshit *suojsh* (def. Abl. pl. 2 f.) 'from your graves'

Zotı i prndet *tinėve* (def. Gen. pl. 1 m.) 'God our father'

140. The **3rd person possessive** is derived from the **Genitive** of the demonstrative pronoun in the shortened form (without the **a-** prefix, cf. § 123).

Demonstrative sg.		Possessive 3rd person	
		adjectivally	nominally
Gen.	i tj (m.)	Nom. i, e tij 'his'	i tiji — e tija
Gen.	i saj (f.)	Nom. i, e saj 'her'	i saji — e saja
pl.			
Nom.	i tyne (tyre)	Nom. i, e tyne (tyre)	i tyni (tyri) — e tynja (tyrja)

The morphemes **i, e** of the Gen. demonstrative pronouns, therefore, become, to all intents and purposes, prepositive articles in the possessive.

Notes

1. As mentioned above (cf. § 55,b), the linking morphemes of the Gen. are *i, e, tē, sē*: in this case, the morpheme *te* functions as the article of the possessive 3 sg neuter: *tē tjtē* 'its'.
2. The existence of a double gender series *i, e tij* (m., f.) *i, e saj* (m., f) is explained by the fact that the possessor (not the *possessum*) carries the gender in the 3rd person demonstrative pronoun (cf. § 134)

141. Declension of the 3rd person sg. possessive pronoun

	m.			
	sg.		pl.	
	I	II	I	II
Nom.	libri i tij (his book)	i tiji (his)	librat e tij (his books)	tē tjtē (his)

Gen.	i librit të tij	i të tijit	i libravet të tij	i të tijvet
Dat.	librit të tij	të tijit	libravet të tij	të tijvet
Acc.	librin e tij	të tijin	librat e tij	të tijtë
Abl.	librit të tij	të tijit	libravet të tij	të tijvet

f.

Nom.	pena e tij (his pen)	e tija (his)	penat e tija (his pens)	të tijat (his)
Gen.	i penës së tij	i së tijës	i pënave të tija	i të tijavet
Dat.	penës së tij	së tijës	pënave të tija	të tijavet
Acc.	penën e tij	të tijën	penat e tija	të tijat
Abl.	penës së tij	së tijës	pënave të tija	të tijavet

m.

	sg.		pl.	
	I	II	I	II
Nom.	libri i saj (her book)	i saji (hers)	librat e saj (her books)	të sajtë (hers)
Gen.	i librit të saj	i të sajit	i libravet të saj	i të sajvet
Dat.	librit të saj	të sajit	libravet të saj	të sajvet
Acc.	librin e saj	të sajin	librat e saj	të sajtë
Abl.	librit të saj	të sajit	libravet të saj	të sajvet

f.

Nom.	pena e saj (her pen)	e saja (hers)	penat e saja (her pens)	të sajat (hers)
Gen.	i penës së saj	i së sajës	i pënave të saja	i të sajavet
Dat.	penës së saj	së sajës	pënave të saja	të sajavet
Acc.	penën e saj	të sajën	penat e saja	të sajat
Abl.	penës së saj	së sajës	pënave të saja	të sajavet

Notes

- In Buzuku, the old Abl. pl. is *së tijsh*, cf. *ën dshipuqshut së tijsh* 'from his apprentices (disciples)'.
- In northern Geg, the dialect of the author Pjetër Bogdani (cf. *Cuneus Prophetarum*, 1685), the forms occur: *i tmaj* (tj-naj) *i sajna* (saj-na) 'his — her'. The formants *-naj* (m.), *-na* (f.) are reminiscent of *-ne* in *tine* (ti-ne) 'you (sg.)' (cf. § 123, Note 1). There is, here, a strengthening or *emphasis* which serves simply for the closer localization of the *possessum*, 'just your (sg.-pl.)'.

142. Declension of the 3rd person pl. possessive pronoun

m.

sg.

	I	II
Nom.	libri i tyne (tyre) (their book)	i tyni (tyri) (theirs)

Gen.	i librit të tyne (tyre)	i të tynit (tyrit)
Dat.	librit të tyne (tyre)	të tynit (tyrit)
Acc.	librin e tyne (tyre)	të tynin (tyrin)
Abl.	librit të tyne (tyre)	të tynit (tyrit)
		pl.
Nom.	librat e tyne (tyre) (their books)	të tynet (tyret) (theirs)
Gen.	i libravet të tyne (tyre)	i të týnevet (týrevet)
Dat.	libravet të tyne (tyre)	të týnevet (týrevet)
Acc.	librat e tyne (tyre)	të tynet (tyret)
Acc.	libravet të tyne (tyre)	të týnevet (týrevet)
		f.
		sg.
	I	II
Nom.	pena e tyne (tyre) (their pen)	e tynja (tyrja) (theirs)
Gen.	i penës së tyne (tyre)	i së tynes (tyres)
Dat.	penës së tyne (tyre)	së tynes (tyres)
Acc.	penën e tyne (tyre)	të tynen (tyren)
Abl.	penës së tyne (tyre)	së tynes (tyres)
		pl.
Nom.	penat e tyne (tyre) (their pens)	të tynet (tyret) (theirs)
Gen.	i pënavet të tyne (tyre)	i të týnevet (týrevet)
Dat.	pënavet të tyne (tyre)	të týnevet (týrevet)
Acc.	penat e tyne (tyre)	të tynet (tyret)
Abl.	pënavet të tyne (tyre)	të týnevet (týrevet)

a) There are variants in the Gen., Dat. and Abl. pl.: **librave ~ libravet të tyne (tyre)**, as well as in the nominalized forms: **të týneve ~ të týnevet**.

b) The nominalized forms sometimes occur in the Gen., Dat. and Abl. in their unshortened versions: **t'atýneve**, whereby confusion with the demonstrative is possible.

Note

The old Abl. is *së tynesh (tyresh)*.

143. The reflexive possessive **i, e vet** 'own' is closely related to the pure reflexive (cf. § 128); the prepositive article serves as the possessive marker. It is only used in those cases when the 'property' belongs to the subject:

Leka ka shtëpinë e vet 'Leka has his own house'

144. Declension of the reflexive possessive pronoun

		m.		pl.	
		sg.			
	I	II	I	II	
Nom.	libri i vet (the own book)	i veti (the own)	librat e vet (the own books)	të vetët (the own)	
Gen.	1 librit të vet	i të vetit	1 libravet të vet	i të vëtëvet	
Dat.	librit të vet	të vetit	libravet të vet	të vëtëvet	
Acc.	librin e vet	të vetin	librat e vet	të vetët	
Abl.	librit të vet	të vetit	libravet të vet	të vëtëvet	
f.					
Nom.	pena e vet (the own pen)	e vetja (the own)	penat e veta (the own pens)	të vetat (the own)	
Gen.	1 penës së vet	1 se vetës	i pënavet të veta	i të vëtavet	
Dat.	penës së vet	së vetës	pënavet të veta	të vetat	
Acc.	penën e vet	të vetën	penat e veta	të vetat	
Abl.	penës së vet	së vetës	pënavet të veta	të vëtavet	

a) Variants in the Gen., Dat. and Abl. are: **librave të vet** ~ **libravet të vet**, **pënave të veta** ~ **pënavet të veta**.

b) There is a tendency to minimize the use of **i, e vet** and to replace it with **i, e tij**—**i, e saj**:

Leka ka shtëpinë e tij 'Leka has his own house'

c) In adjectival form, **i, e vet** occurs in the Nom. in a few fossilized expressions such as: **është puna e vet kur shkon e kur vjen** 'it is his own business when he goes and when he comes'.

145. With regard to the **syntactic use** of the possessives, it should be noted that the possessive pronouns occur, as a rule, after indefinite word types in an attributive function in the definite form:

pa një (një) fjalë **timen** mos u nis për udhë
'without a word from me, do not go on a trip'

or after a demonstrative pronoun:

ai imi e di se ku janë këpurdhat në mal
'that (masculine one) of mine (i.e. my husband) knows where there are mushrooms in the mountains'

146. With terms of familial relationship, the possessive pronouns may also stand before the *possesum*:

vëllau im ~ im vëllá 'my brother'

In the 3rd person sg. possessive, with the determinative article (cf. § 58),

they may stand only before the terms of familial relationship: **i zoti** 'the ~ his lord', **e motra** 'the ~ his sister'.

The following are examples for the 1st and 2nd persons **sg.**:

	1st person		2nd person	
	m.	f.	m.	f.
Nom.	im atë (my father)	im(e) motër (my sister)	yt atë (your father)	jot motër (your sister)
Gen.	i tim et	i sime motre	i tyt atë	i sat motre
Dat.	tim et	sime motre	tyt et	sat motre
Acc.	tim et	time motër	tët atë	tët motër
Abl.	tim et	sime motre	tyt et	sat motre

a) The paradigm in § 58 applies for the 3rd person, i.e. the definite forms **i nipi** 'the nephew ~ his nephew' – **e bija** 'the daughter ~ his daughter'.

b) In the 1st and 2nd persons, the *possessum* (i.e. the kinship term) stands in the indefinite form: **im atë**, whereas in the 3rd person, it stands in the definite form:

i vëllai 'the ~ his brother' – e bija 'the ~ his daughter'

c) In the modern literary language, the plurals of kinship terms are, in general, declined like other nouns:

motra(t) tona 'our sisters' — nipat e tyne (tyre) 'their nephews'

Notes

1. In northern Geg, the pl. of the 1st and 2nd persons **sg.** still occurs in the prepositive form:

	pl. 1st pers. sg.	pl. 2nd pers. sg.
Nom. Acc.	të mij vëllazën (my brothers)	të tu motra (your sisters)
Gen. Dat.	të mij vëllazënve	të tu môtrove
Abl.	së mij vëllazësh	së tu motrash

2. The decay of a presumed pronominal system in prepositive position already began in the 16th century. As has been mentioned, there were few differences between the possessives of the preposed or postposed noun. As an example, the following is the declension with kinship terms taken from *Buzuku*.

		Singular	
		1st pers. sg.	f
Nom.	m.	em zot (my lord)	eme amë (my mother)
Gen.	i tim zot	i sime amë	
Dat.	tim zot	sime amë	
Acc.	tem zot	teme amë	
Abl.	sim zot	sime amë	
		Singular	
		1st pers. pl.	2nd pers. pl.
Nom.		ynë zot (our lord)	yj zot (your lord)

Gen	i tinë zot	i tij zot
Dat	tinë zot	tij zot
Acc	tënë zotnë ~ zonë	
Abl.	sinë zot	

- As may be seen, the prepositive possessive pronoun, as a rule, takes case marking, so that the kinship term after the possessives of the 1st and 2nd persons sg and pl with few exceptions remain unchanged.
- The possessive pronouns of the 3rd person sg., also termed demonstrative articles, in Old Albanian, have the Abl. of kinship terms in the def. form.
 en së motret 'from his sister'
 ën së tet 'from his father'
- The old forms of the 2 sg in the singular (cf. § 138, No) are generally used in prepositive position, with few variations according to dialect and linguistic development. As mentioned above, there is no doubt that the oldest forms are those with the possessive pronoun before the possessum

Vocabulary

<i>krushk-u</i> wedding guest <i>krushq</i>	<i>flori-m</i> ~ <i>floriri</i> gold piece <i>-mj</i>
<i>violinë-a</i> violin <i>-a</i>	<i>pleqërisht-e</i> in the manner of the elders
<i>tregëtar-i</i> businessman <i>-ë</i>	<i>poetik-e</i> poetic(al)
<i>mall-t</i> wares, goods <i>mallna</i> (<i>mallëra</i>)	<i>kurrkësh</i> no one
<i>fabrikë-a</i> factory <i>-a</i>	<i>mbasnesër</i> (<i>pasnesër</i>) day after, tomorrow
<i>i shoqt</i> husband	<i>ndërsá</i> while
<i>stof-i</i> cloth <i>stofna</i> ~ <i>stofa</i>	<i>dot</i> particle stressing negation
<i>valle-vallja</i> dance <i>-∅</i>	<i>megjithatë</i> although, in spite of
<i>kontribút-t</i> contribution <i>-e</i>	<i>mbaj</i> hold
<i>gazete-a</i> newspaper <i>-a</i>	<i>përgdhël</i> (<i>përkëdhël</i>) caress
<i>dijetar-i</i> scholar, savant <i>-ë</i>	<i>përcillen</i> they are accompanied
<i>zhvillim-i</i> development <i>-e</i>	<i>paska</i> he, she seems to have
<i>ekonomi-a</i> economy <i>-∅</i>	<i>të kam ndrý</i> I have locked you up
<i>kalim-i</i> advance, passing <i>-e</i>	<i>t'mos shohi</i> may not see
<i>dashuni</i> (<i>dashuri-a</i>) love <i>-∅</i>	<i>t'mos i ndjejë</i> may not feel
<i>vújttje</i> (<i>vúajtje-a</i>), pain <i>-∅</i>	<i>janë mbledhë bashkë</i> they have come together
<i>dhimbje-a</i> sorrow grief <i>-∅</i>	<i>kanë shkue me marrë</i> they went to take
<i>gjinkallë-a</i> cicada <i>-a</i>	
<i>përdorim-i</i> use usage <i>-e</i>	
<i>gji-u</i> breast <i>-∅</i>	
<i>tubë-a</i> group, crowd, band <i>-a</i>	
<i>beg-u</i> bey <i>beglerë</i>	

Aorist Indicative of **del** 'go out, come out'

(unë) dola	(na, ne) dolëm
(ti) dole	(ju) dolët
(ai, ajó) doli	(atá, ató) dolën

Exercise 25

Krushqit e tij dhe atá të saj të vijnë nesër, ndërsa të tutë mbërrijnë pasnesër. Mua më pëlqén zëri i asáj këngëtarje, ndërsa ty të pëlqén zëri i kësáj violine. Megjithatë kësó dhe asó këngëtaresh janë të rralla. Tregëtari lëvdón mallin e vet e jo tëndin. Familja e shokut tím është familje punëtore: i jati punón në fabrikë dhe e jëma rri në shtëpinë e saj (vet) e gatón për të shoqin e të bijtë. “Një stof si këtë” thotë tregëtari “s’e gjeni dot në qytetin tonë!”

Të dyja këtë valle përcillen me tekste poetike. Ató janë këngë pleqërishte apo të lashta, disá sosh ~syresh me kalimin e kohës dolën nga përdorimi.

Exercise 26

I have my brother there, my father there. Give me your book and I will give you my pen. Your newspapers are here, yours is there on a table. The scholar gave his own contribution for the development of our economy.

Text 13*Dashunia ime*

Dashunia ime,
të kam ndry
thellë
në zemër
që kurrkúsh t'mos shohi vúejtjet tona,
që kurrkúsh t'mos i ndjejë dhimbjet tona
dhe çdo natë,
ndërsa jashtë gjinkallat këndojnë,
të përgdhël
e të mbaj në gjí.

Esat Mekuli (1964)

Reading Exercise*Valle*

Nji tubë krushq janë mbledhë bashkë,
Kanë shkue me marrë nji vashë.
Ajó vashë si e bija e begut,
Paska florinjte e Skanderbegut.

(*wedding song*)

Lesson 14 — Leksioni i katërmbëdhjetë

The Pronoun (III)

Interrogatives, Relatives and Indefinites

147. The interrogatives are divided formally into two groups:

a) **Interrogative pronouns** which mark **gender, number** and **case**:

kush 'who?'

cili cila 'which? (m.-f.)'

i, e sati-a 'what?' (for numbers or quantities)

i, e sejtí-a 'from which, what material?'

sa 'how much, how many?' (inflected only in the indef. pl.)

b) **Interrogative pronouns which remain unchanged**:

çka ~ shka 'what?' (originally Geg form!)

ç' ~ çfarë 'what?' çfare 'from which, what?' (ç'fare 'what kind of?' Abl. sg.)

se 'what?' — used only with a preposition. me se 'with what?':

me se e paguen (pagan)? 'with what are you paying (for) it?'

në se e mbar ujin? 'in what are you bringing the water?'

Notes

- 1 Etymologically and paradigmatically, *se* may not be separated from the pronominal stems *si* — *so* 'of this (m.-f)'. *Sa* also belongs to this group, whereby the vowel alternation *-a-e-o-i* (*sa-so-se-si*) exhibits declensional features
- 2 The pronominal adverbs (cf § 121) *ku* 'where?', *kur* 'when?', *si* 'how?' are not separated with the interrogative pronouns

148. Declension of the interrogative pronouns

	m.		f.	
	sg.	pl.	sg.	pl.
Nom.	cili	cilët	cila	cilat
Gen.	i cilit	i cilëve(t)	i cilës	i cilave(t)
Dat.	çilit	çilëve(t)	çilës	çilave(t)
Acc.	çilin	çilët	çilën	çilat
Abl.	çilit	çilëve(t)	çilës	çilave(t)

	m.		f.	
	sg.	pl.	sg.	pl.
Nom.	i sati	të satët	e sata	të satat
Gen.	i të satit	i të sátëve(t)	i së satës	i të sátave(t)
Dat.	të satit	të sátëve(t)	së satës	të sátave(t)
Acc.	të satin	të satët	të satën	të satat
Abl.	të satit	të sátëve(t)	së satës	të sátave(t)

a) **Kush?** 'who?' occurs only in the sg. and **sa?** 'how much, how many?', only in the indef. pl.:

	sg.	pl.
Nom.	kush	sa
Gen.	i kuj(t)	i save
Dat.	kuj(t)	save
Acc.	kë ~ kënd (G. kê)	sa
Abl.	kuj(t)	save

b) **i, e sejtë** 'from, of which, what material?' is very uncommon and is declined like the adjectives of the type **i, e mirë**. The remaining interrogatives which can be inflected are declined in the def. form and occur either **nominally**:

cili arriti i pari? 'which arrived first?'

i sati je? 'which one (of a series) are you?'

or **adjectivally** (placed before the noun, cf. § 84):

i sati djalë i Gencit e mbaroi gjimnazin? 'which of Genc's sons (lit. which son of Genc) finished gymnasium?'

cili student diplomoi mbas (pas) katër vjetësh? 'which student was granted a diploma after four years?'

149. With regard to the **function** and **usage** of the interrogatives, the following should be noted: they serve to obtain information about circumstances or factors. The discourse may thus relate to a) **people** and particular **sizes** or **quantities**, such as countries, communities, etc., in which the pronouns used are **kush?** 'who?' or **cili—cila** 'which (m.-f.)':

kush e solli Garendinë te e jëma? Konstantini i Vogëlith

'who brought Garendina to her mother? Konstantin the Youngest'

cili ndër pesë klubet e fitoi çmimin e parë?

'which of (lit. among) the five clubs won the first prize?'

or b) **things, means** or **qualities**, where the interrogatives **çka ~ shka** 'what?', **çfarë** 'what kind?', etc. are used (cf. the group in b), § 147):

me çka zieni ju, me voj (vaj) apo me gjalp?

'with what do you cook, with oil or with butter?'

150. It is difficult to separate the interrogatives from the **relative pronouns**. The typical relative **që** 'which, that (m. and f.)', however, does not belong to the latter; it is used mostly in colloquial speech and does not change its form. In the contemporary literary language, **që** is replaced by the interrogatives **cili—cila**, which become relatives by the addition of the prepositive articles **i, e**.

151. The relatives **i cili—e cila** 'which, that (m.-f.)' are declined as follows:

	m.		f.	
	sg.	pl.	sg.	pl.
Nom.	icili	të cilët	e cila	të cilat
Gen.	i të cilit	i të cilëve	i së cilës	i të cilave
Dat.	të cilit	të cilëve	së cilës	të cilave
Acc.	të cilin	të cilët	të cilën	të cilat
Abl.	te cilit	të cilëve	së cilës	të cilave

Notes

1. In Arbëresh there is only one relative pronoun, *qe*, which is not declined. It corresponds to the Common Albanian *qe* (Geg *qi*).
2. In Arbëresh *cili* – *cila* ‘which (m.-f)’ are used only as interrogatives. In Old Geg, on the other hand, they occur in both pronominal categories (interrogative and relative) sg. *i silli* – *e silla* pl. *të sjte*, with softening of *ll* to *j* (cf. *sg. popull* ‘people’ pl. *popuj*).

152. The relatives **që** and **i cili** — **e cila** ‘which, that (m.-f.)’ are often replaced by **çka** ~ **ç**, **kush**:

ai që ka mend, di **atë që** ban (bën)

kush ka mend, di **çka** ban (bën)

‘who has understanding knows what to do’

vetëm **ai që** niset *or* vetëm **ai i cili** niset hyn në autobus

vetëm **kush** niset hyn në autobus

‘only he who is travelling boards the bus’

Such relative clauses are typical of proverbs and maxims:

e di luga **ç’ka** vegshi *or* **atë që** ka vegshi e di luga

‘only the spoon knows what is in the pot’

Other examples are:

atë që do të mbjellësh, do të korrësh ~ **ç** do të mbjellësh, do të korrësh
‘what you sow, you will reap’

atá (n.) **çka** teprón, ásh (është) për ju

‘that which is left over is for you’

nuk kam **se çka** të pres *or* nuk kam **seç** të pres

‘I have nothing to expect’

The following substitutions are also possible:

nga atë që = nga **ç**: nga atë që dëgjoi ~ nga **ç** dëgjoi

‘from what he heard’

gjithë atë që = gjithë **ç**: gjithë atë që u erdhi në dorë e kryen për së

mbari ~ gjithë **ç** u erdhi në dorë e kryen për së mbari

‘everything that came to hand they carried out well’

153. **Aq ... sa** 'as much ... as' are particles used with relative pronominal value:

merr aq, sa të japin 'take as much as they give you'
 sa lindin, aq vdesin 'as many are born as die'

Notes

1. The pattern *aq* + adj. — *sa* + adj or noun expresses equality in the comparative scale (cf. §86), while the pattern for relative clauses is *aq* + verb — *sa* + verb:

aq shpenzón, sa fitón 'he spends as much as he earns'

2. The relative *që* may be easily confused with the conjunction *që*. A simple way of distinguishing them is to be aware that when *që* occurs as a conjunction, it is followed immediately by *të* and the subjunctive mood (of which *të* is the marker), whereas when *që* occurs as a relative, it is followed by the indicative:

relative: ashtin *që e* hodhi në lumë e mori uji
 'the water carried off the bone that he threw into the river'

conjunction: e hodhi në lumë ashtin *që ta* (të e) marrë lumi
 'he threw the bone in the river so that the water should carry it off'

154. The **indefinite pronouns** denote indefinite individual persons, things or quantities. The most important formal characteristic of the indefinites is that they are predominantly composites. The indefinites are divided here according to the following criteria: a) inflected and uninflected; b) indefinites for animates, inanimates or both.

155. Indefinites composed with **kush** 'who' are inflected and denote persons:

- a) dikúsh (di 'know' kush) 'someone'
 ndokúsh (n-do 'any' — kush) 'anyone'
 çdokúsh (çdo 'every' — kush) 'everyone'
 kushdó (kush — do 'want') 'everyone, whoever'
 tjetërkúsh (tjetër 'other' — kush) 'another'
 gjithëkúsh (gjithë 'all' — kush) 'every, all'
 shumëkúsh (shumë 'many' — kush) 'many'
 askúsh (as 'none, no' — kush) 'none'
 kurrkúsh (kurr 'never' — kush) 'no one'

Kush, preposed or postposed in such composites, is declined as follows:

Nom.	dikúsh	askúsh	kushdó
Gen.	i dikúj(t)	i askúj(t)	i kujdó
Dat.	dikúj(t)	askúj(t)	kujdó
Acc.	dikë(nd)	askë(nd)	këdó
Abl.	dikúj(t)	askúj(t)	kujdó

b) To this group also belong the indefinites composed with **cili** — **cila**

'who, which (m. — f.)' and **njeri** 'person', which relate to human beings as well:

secili secila ~ sejcili — sejcila (sej 'whole, all' — cili) 'every, each'
 dicili dïcila (di 'know' — cili) 'someone, anyone'
 cilidó — ciladó (cili do 'want') 'anyone, everyone, each'
 gjithëcili gjithëcila (gjithë 'all' cili) 'each, every'
 asnjeri (as 'no, none' — njeri) 'no one'
 mosnjeri (mos 'no, none' — njeri) 'no one'

The components **cili** — **cila** and *njeri* are declined as follows:

	m.	f.	
Nom.	cilidó	ciladó	mosnjeri
Gen.	i cilitdó	i cilësdó	i mosnjeriu
Dat.	cilitdó	cilësdó	mosnjeriu
Acc.	cilindó	cilëndó	mosnjeri
Abl.	cilitdó	cilësdó	mosnjeriu

The composites with **cili** — **cila** also occur adjectivally and stand before the noun:

venja menden secilës fjalë që thotë
 'bear in mind every word that he says'

156. **Njeni** — **njena (njëri — njëra)** 'one (m.-f.)' and its composites, such as **ndonjeni** — **ndonjena (ndonjëri — ndonjëra)** 'anyone, someone', are declined alone and, when used attributively (before the noun), in the def. form: sense in nominalized form:

	m.	f.
Nom.	njeni (njëri) djalë	njena (njëra) fjalë
Gen.	i njenit (njërit) djalë	i njenës (njërës) fjalë
Dat.	njenit (njërit) djalë	njenës (njërës) fjalë
Acc.	njenin (njërin) djalë	njenën (njërën) fjalë
Abl.	njenit (njërit) djalë	njenës (njërës) fjalë

157. The indefinite pronouns **tjetër** — **tjetri** 'another' and **tjetër** — **tjetra** 'the other' may occur **nominally** and **adjectivally**; they possess all grammatical categories, i.e. gender, number and case:

Nominal Declension

	sg.			
	indef.		def.	
	m.	f.	m.	f.
Nom.	tjetër	tjetër	tjetri	tjetra
Gen.	i tjetri	i tjetre	i tjetrit	i tjetrës
Dat.	tjetri	tjetre	tjetrit	tjetrës

Acc.	tjetër	tjetër	tjetrin	tjetrën
Abl.	tjetri	tjetre	tjetrit	tjetrës
				pl.
Nom.	(të) tjerë	(të) tjera	(të) tjerët	(të) tjerat
Gen.	i (të) tjerëve	i (të) tjerave	i (të) tjerëvet	i (të) tjeravet
Dat.	(të) tjerëve	(të) tjerave	(të) tjerëvet	(të) tjeravet
Acc.	(të) tjerë	(të) tjera	(të) tjerët	(të) tjerat
Abl.	(të ~ së)	(të ~ së)	(të ~ së)	(të ~ së)
	tjerësh	tjerash	tjerëvet	tjeravet

It should be noted that a) in the usage of the sg. indef. form, *nji* (*një*) is usually placed before **tjetër**: **nji (një) tjetër** 'another'; b) there is a tendency to omit the morpheme **të** in the plural, as the marking of number and case are evident from the declension endings. This also applies to the plural forms of the adjectival declension in the following paradigm:

Adjectival Declension

		m.	
		sg.	
		indef.	def.
Nom.	nji (një) burrë tjetër		burri tjetër
	(another man)		(the other man)
Gen.	i nji (një) burri tjetër		i burrit tjetër
Dat.	nji (një) burri tjetër		burrit tjetër
Acc.	nji (një) burrë tjetër		burrin tjetër
Abl.	nji (një) burri tjetër		burrit tjetër
		pl.	
Nom.	burra (të) tjerë		burrat (të) tjerë
	(other men)		(the other men)
Gen.	i burrave (të) tjerë		i burravet (të) tjerë
Dat.	burrave (të) tjerë		burravet (të) tjerë
Acc.	burra (të) tjerë		burrat (të) tjerë
Abl.	burrash (të ~ së) tjerë		burravet (të) tjerë
		f.	
		indef.	def.
Nom.	nji (një) vajzë tjetër		vajza tjetër
	(another girl)		(the other girl)
Gen.	i nji (një) vajze tjetër		i vajzës tjetër
Dat.	nji (një) vajze tjetër		vajzës tjetër
Acc.	nji (një) vajzë tjetër		vajzën tjetër
Abl.	nji (një) vajze tjetër		vajzës tjetër

		pl.
Nom.	vajza (të) tjera (other girls)	vajzat (të) tjera (the other girls)
Gen.	i vajzave (të) tjera	i vajzavet (të) tjera
Dat.	vajzave (të) tjera	vajzavet (të) tjera
Acc.	vajza (të) tjera	vajzat (të) tjera
Abl.	vajzash (të ~ së) tjera	vajzavet (të) tjera

Tjetër — **tjetri** (m.) **tjetër** — **tjetra** (f.) may be placed before the noun and is then declined according to the nominal declension; the noun, in this case, is, as usual, not declined:

	sg.	
	indef.	def.
Nom.	nji (një) tjetër burrë	tjetri burrë
Gen.	i një (një) tjetri burrë	i tjetrit burrë etc.
	pl.	
Nom.	tjerë burra	tjerët burra
Gen.	i tjerëve burra	i tjerëvet burra etc.

In prepositive position, the indefinite **tjetër** expresses particular emphasis, as may be seen in this stanza by the poet Gjergj Fishta:

Tjera fushë e tjera zalle	Other plains and other beaches
Kam me pá, e tjera dete;	Will I see, and other oceans;
Kam me ndie, po, tjera valle,	Other dance-songs will I hear,
Tjera gjuhë, n'tjera qytete,	Other tongues in other cities,
Vendin tem, por s'kam me e pá,	But I will not see my land again,
Ku kam lé e jam burrnue.	Where I was born and grew to manhood.

(from "I dbuemi" — 'The banished')

Note

Arbëresh has preserved the old forms of this pronoun.

Sg. indef. njetër (një 'one' etër 'other' def. jetri 'the other')
Pl. indef. tjerë (të-jerë) 'others' - - def. tjetë (të-jer-të) 'the others'

158. The **reciprocal pronoun** is formed by the composition **njeni (njëri)** 'one' (Nom. def.) and **tjetrit** (Dat. def.), i.e. **njeni-tjetrit (njëri-tjetrit)** 'one another'. The same mode of construction is shown by **shoku-shokut** 'one another' or **shoqishójt ~ shoshójt** 'mutual, reciprocal'. They are declined in the def. sg.:

Nom.	—	—	—	—
Gen.	i njeni-tjetrit	(njëri-tjetrit)	i shoku-shokut	i shoshójt
Dat.	njeni-tjetrit	(njëri-tjetrit)	shoku-shokut	shoshójt

Acc.	njeni-tjetrin	(njëri-tjetrin)	shoku-shokun	shoshojnë
Abl.	njeni-tjetrit	njëri-tjetrit)	shoku-shokut	shoshójt

Understandably, there is no Nom. for this pronoun, as one member of the compound is already in the Nom.

159. The **indeclinable indefinites** primarily denote **things**, as the words themselves in the compounds indicate:

gjâ (gjë) 'thing, object':	s'ka gjâ (gjë)	'it does not matter'
asgjâ (asgjë) (as 'not, no' — gjâ /gjë)		'nothing'
kurrjâ (kurrjë)		'nothing'

Compounds with two words meaning 'thing':

gjëkafshë (gjë 'thing' - kafshë 'thing')	'something'
sendegjâ (send 'thing' — gjâ 'thing')	'something'
gjësendi (gjë 'thing' — sendi 'thing')	'something'

To this group also belong the indefinites used only for things, based on **çka ~ shka** 'what':

diçkâ ~ dishkâ (di 'know' — çka ~ shka)	'something'
gjithçkâ (gjithë 'all' — çka)	'everything', which occurs with an emphatic sense in nominalized form:

Kaceli humbi gjithëshkafën 'Kacel lost everything'.

Included, too, in this category of indefinites are compounds denoting **kind, type** or **part** of some material or substance:

fare (farë-a 'sort, kind')	'anything' in negative clauses:
në shtëpi nuk gjeti faregjâ (faregjë)	'he did not find anything in the house'
gjithfarë (gjithë 'all' · farë)	'all kinds'
çfaredó (çfarë 'what kind?' — do 'want')	'any, whatever'
lloj-lloj (lloj-i 'kind, sort')	'all kinds, any kind'
çdo-lloj (çdo 'each, every' — lloj 'kind, sort')	'all kinds'

These indefinites, for **things** and **persons**, may also occur adjectivally; the noun which follows is in the indef.:

dolën jashtë çdo-lloj njeriu, qen e njeri bashkë	
'every kind of person came out, dog and person together'	

160. The following indefinites, which denote indeterminate quantities or an unknown unit, may occur either alone or before a noun; in the latter case, they indicate **collectives**:

gjithë 'all'	mbarë 'all together'
shumë 'many'	mjaft 'enough, many'
pak 'few'	disá 'some, several'
nja 'several' (only before numbers)	një palë ~ parë 'a pair, couple'

Of these, **të gjithë** and **disá** are declined in the def. plural (in nominal and adjectival function):

	m.	f.	m.f.
Nom.	të gjithë	të gjitha	disá
Gen.	1 të gjithëve	i të gjithave	1 disave
Dat.	të gjithëve	të gjithave	disave
Acc.	të gjithë	të gjitha	disá
Abl.	të gjithëve	të gjithave	disave

Disá (G.) ~ **ca** (T.) 'some, several' and **nji** (**një**) 'one' mark the indefinite forms of the declension:

	indef. sg.	indef. pl.
	nji (një) shtëpi 'a house'	disá ~ ca shtëpi 'some houses'

Vocabulary

<i>automobil-i</i> automobile -a	<i>gjlpanë-a</i> (<i>gjlperë-a</i>) needle -a
<i>përkrahje-a</i> support -∅	<i>erë-a</i> wind <i>erna</i> (<i>ërëra</i>)
<i>rast-i</i> occasion -e	<i>shëndrë-u</i> November (<i>Shën Ndreu</i>
<i>petk-u</i> dress -a	'St. Andrew')
<i>përrurim-i</i> consecration, opening -e	<i>udhëtim-i</i> trip, voyage -e
<i>dramë-a</i> drama -a	<i>etnografik-e</i> ethnographical
<i>teatër-teatri</i> theater <i>teatra</i>	<i>arkeologjik-e</i> archaeological
<i>pjesëmarrës-i</i> participant -∅	1 <i>ndryshëm</i> — e <i>ndryshme</i> various
<i>suksës-i</i> success -e	<i>i, e lashtë</i> ancient, antique
<i>punë-a</i> work, situation -∅	<i>vendas-e</i> (<i>vendës-e</i>) native
<i>qëllim-i</i> aim, goal -e	<i>i, e përbashkët</i> common, joint
<i>forcë-a</i> strength -a	<i>i, e veçantë</i> special, particular
<i>vullnët-i</i> will -e	<i>i caktuem</i> — e <i>caktueme</i> (<i>i, e cak-</i>
<i>diskutim-i</i> discussion -e	<i>tuar</i>) fixed, appointed
<i>grindje-a</i> quarrel -∅	<i>i vetmuem</i> e <i>vetmueme</i> (<i>i, e vet-</i>
<i>mbledhje-a</i> meeting -∅	<i>muar</i>) secluded, lonely
<i>shkak-u</i> cause, reason <i>shkaqe</i>	<i>qafëgjatë</i> long-necked
<i>dami-i</i> (<i>dëm-i</i>) damage -e	<i>magjik-e</i> magic
<i>ndryshim-i</i> difference, change -e	<i>nja</i> several, approximately
<i>varg-u</i> verse; row; range <i>vargje</i>	<i>vetëm</i> only
<i>rapsodi-a</i> rhapsody -∅	<i>mjerisht</i> unfortunately
<i>kokë-a</i> head -a	<i>tepër vonë</i> too late
<i>kambë-a</i> (<i>këmbë-a</i>) leg -∅	<i>veç</i> except, aside from
<i>krah-u</i> wing; arm -ë	<i>nësë</i> if
<i>korrilë-a</i> crane -a	<i>pe</i> you (sg.) saw (Aor. of <i>shoh</i>)
<i>pata e egër</i> wild goose	<i>lype</i> begged (2nd pers. sg.)
<i>gjuetar-i</i> hunter -ë	<i>dëgjój, ndëgjój</i> hear
<i>gërshanë-a</i> (<i>gërshërë-a</i>) scissors -ë	<i>diskutój</i> discuss

mori vesh learned, understood
(*mori* = Aor. of *marrë*)
materiál-i material -e
gjetje arkeologjike archeological
find
periudhë-a period -a
mjeshtëri-a mastery -∅
keramikë-a ceramic -a
traditë-a tradition -a
ndërprerje-a interruption -∅
ditë-a day *dit* ~ *ditë-t*
tipár-i characteristic -e
thellësi-a depth -∅
shekull-i century *shekuj*
emërtim-i designation, denomi-
nation -e
enë-a vessel -∅
ërrtundë-a ~ *ortundë-a* clay pot -a
latinishte-ja Latin
greqishte-ja Greek
prodhim-i production -e
besim popullor folk belief -e -e
veri-u north
jug-u south
trajtë-a shape, form -a
kunj-i wedge, peg -a
rresht-i row, rank, line -a
ritëm-ritmi rhythm -e
kuptoj understand

të kihet parasýsh should be kept in
view, borne in mind
sjell bring Aor. *solla*
na ranë në sy we noticed
pengój hinder
lëviz move
lodhet becomes tired
krahásój compare
dëshmój witness
u zhvillua developed
arrij arrive, reach
fluturój fly
na kujtón he, she, it reminds us
udhëtój travel
qëndrój jashtë stop, stand outside
ç'ndodh what happens
ndalet remains, stops
gjuaj (gjuaj) hunt
shtie pour, put into
për të gjetë (in order) to find
për të fjetë (in order) to sleep
ulen në tokë they descend (to earth)
rreshti prishet the line is dissolved,
destroyed
të zuni nata the night caught you
(sg.)
vëhem në rresht enter the line,
place myself in line

Exercise 27

Ke pe dje në rrugë? I kujt është ky automobil? Përkrahjen *që* ~ *të cilën* lype e ke në çdo rast prej nesh. Ky petk nuk i pëlqën cilitdó. Në përrurimin që u organizua dje në shtëpinë e kulturës ishin pranë nja dyqind pjesëmarrës. Cili foli në atë përrurim? Shumë diskutuan, disá vetëm dëgjuan. Dikúsh pyeti: çfarë drame jepet sonte në teatër? Njëri ndër të pranishmit tha: më duket "Hamleti". Në këtë teatër dikúsh punón mirë, një tjetër keq. Kushdó punón, por jo çdonjeri mund të ketë suksës në punë. Nga *atë që* ~ *çka* (ç') dëgjoji, *mori vesh* se e kish punën keq; tjetri nga ç' dëgjoji kuptoi se e kish punën keq. Kaceli ia arriti qëllimit me forcën e vullnetit të vet. Nga një fjalë në tjetrën u rrit diskutimi deri në grindje. Duhet të kihet parasýsh atë që u tha dje në mbledhje.

Disá vargje nga rapsoditë arbëreshe janë shumë të bukura, si për shembull:
 mosnjeri nënkë më pá no one notices me
 mose zoga picëvërdh except the yellow-beaked bird

Exercise 28

He who does not have it in his head, has it in his foot; so it is said about a person who forgets easily. Which are you? I am after him who is before me. What do you see in the sky? I see every crane that moves its wings. Some one of them is tired. Everyone has a fate; to some, fate comes to their door.

Text 14

*Besim popullor mbi korrilat
 apo patat e egra*

Korrilat ose patat e egra udhëtojnë nga veriu në jug ose nga jugu në veri njena mbas tjetrës, në trajtë kunjë. Asnjë nuk qëndron jashtë rreshti, secila lëviz krahet mbas një ritmi të caktuem. Ç'ndodh nëse ndonjeha sosh lodhet dhe ndalet? Të tjerat, besoj, nuk e lanë në rrugë. Ka gjuetarë që i gjuajnë me pushkë, andaj ato fluturojnë shumë nalt dhe ulen në tokë vetëm për të fjetë ose për të gjetë ushqim në vise të vetmueme. Një besim popullor thotë: kur sheh njeriu rreshtin e korrilave apo të pátave të egra në qiell, shtie një gjasënd (diçkâ) hékuri në dhé, për shembull, një gërshanë ose një gjilpanë dhe thotë:

Korrila, kopata
 ku ju zuni mbramë nata?
 — Te Calina, te qafëgjata.
 — Sillnju, pështillnju
 si era në Shëndré,
 si Drini nën ne.

Mbas këtyne fjalëve magjike, rreshti i korrilave priset dhe ato sillen në ajër pa ndonjë qëllim. Mbas do kohe, ato vëhen në rresht përsëri dhe vijoje udhëtimin për jug apo për veri, simbas stinës.

Reading Exercise

Mjeshtëria e keramikës në Shqipëri

Materiali etnografik, i krahasuar me gjetjet arkeologjike për periudha të ndryshme, dëshmon se mjeshtëria e keramikës në Shqipëri është një traditë e lashtë vëndase, që u zhvillua pa ndërprerje deri në ditët tona. Veç mjaft tipareve të përbashkëta, prej thellësisë së shëkujve arritën deri në ditë tona dhe emërtime për enë të veçanta, siç është rasti i enës

së qëajtur *lygjyme* ose *lagjin* që vjen nga greqishtja *λάγνυος* ose emri i enës së qëajtur *ërrtundë* po nga latinishtja *rotundus*. Po kështu, emri i enës së qëajtur *shtamë* ose *stomnë*, vjen nga greqishtja e vjetër *stomnos* e na kujtón prodhimet e lashtësisë.

(*Kultura popullore*, 2/1982, by Afërdita Onuzi)

Lesson 15 — Leksioni i pesëmbëdhjetë

The Verb (I)

The Verbal Categories and their Functions

161. The verb has direct formal and functional connections with the word types discussed until now through the relations of the participial and infinitive forms with adjectives and nouns:

a) The **participle**, e.g. **prekur** 'touched' (from **prek** 'touch'), becomes an **adjective** in Tosk by means of the prepositive articles: **i, e prekur** 'touched' (for the Geg adjective, cf. §75, f).

b) The Geg **infinitive** may occur in the function of a noun:

me heshtue nuk është keq, por duhet me ditë kur
'silence is not bad, but it is necessary to know when'

In terms of categories, the verbs have **number** in common with nouns, while **time** and **person**, marked in the conjugation, are not shared with nouns.

162. Albanian has the following **verbal categories**:

a) Voices—2: active and medio-passive;

b) Moods—9: indicative, subjunctive, conditional, optative, admirative, imperative, participial, infinitive and gerundive;

c) Tenses—8: 3 synthetic and 5 analytic:

<i>synthetic</i>	<i>analytic</i>	
1. present	1. perfect	4. future
2. imperfect	2. pluperfect I	5. future perfect
3. aorist	3. pluperfect II	

163. **Distribution of the tenses according to mood**

Mood	Tense							
	Pres.	Imperf.	Aor.	Perf.	Plupf. I	Plupf. II	Fut.	Fut Pf.
Indicative	+	+	+	+	+	+	+	+
Subjunctive	+	+		+	+			
Conditional	+			+				
Optative	+			+				

Admirative	+	+	+	+
Imperative	+			
Participle	+		+	
Infinitive	+		+	
Gerundive	+		+	

As may be seen, only the indicative has all tense forms.

164. **Person** and **number**, marked in the conjugation, occupy an important place in the morphology of the verb. In view of the marking of person, the personal pronoun is, in principle, facultative and is primarily used for emphasis.

165. The constitution of the verbal categories and verbal classes, as well as the conjugational markings, result from:

- Vowel** and **consonant alternations** and **eliminations** in the verbal stem;
- Suffixes** or endings in the conjugations and tense formations;
- The **infixes -v-** (for the aorist) and **-h-** (in the medio-passive);
- The use of **particles** and of **auxiliary** and **modal verbs**.

This lesson will mainly treat the morphophonological phenomena included in a) and the analytical forms comprised under d). These morphological elements will, however, be reviewed later, as they are used in various functions.

166. **Phonemic alternation** as a morphological instrument is not confined to one particular word type. It is particularly important, however, for the morphology of the synthetic verbal forms. The phonemic alternations or eliminations are divided here under 1. vowel alternations and 2. consonant alternations.

167. The vowel alternations are divided into **apophony** (ablaut) and **metaphony** (umlaut) in traditional Albanian grammars. In the synchronic morphological structure of the language, they cannot always be separated from each other from the standpoint of function. Basically, **apophony** serves to mark the **present** and **aorist** (cf. § 105). The typical apophonic alternations are:

e/o = bredh 'run' — brodha 'ran'

je/o = mbjell 'sow' — mbolla 'sowed'

a/o = dal 'come out' — dola 'came out'

â(ë)/a = lâ (lë) 'let, leave' — lashë 'let, left'

ê(ë)/u = vê (vë) 'put, place' — vuna (vura) 'put, placed'

Notes

1. On the synchronic level, the *e o* alternation covers pl sg markings: *të vegjël* 'small (pl.)' — *vogël* 'small (sg.)' (cf. §77) or the aorist and optative forms of the auxiliary verb 'to be'. *qeshë* 'I was' — *qofsha* 'may I be'.
2. In dialects, the *qualitative change* of vowel creates the contrast present aorist:

Arbëresh: <i>ê e</i> =	<i>gjënj</i> 'I find'	<i>gjeta</i> 'I found'
Geg: <i>ê e</i> =	<i>gjëj</i> 'I find'	<i>gjeta</i> 'I found'
	<i>flëj</i> 'I sleep'	<i>fjeta</i> 'I slept'

Metaphony marks formal and semantic changes in verbal categories and classes, tense formations (in the differentiation of present and aorist as well, as does apophony) and conjugations. Metaphony participates in all morphological processes of inflected word types:

a/e = Pres. 1st person sg. *marr* 'I take' — 2nd person sg. *merr* 'you take'
e/i = Pres. pres 'I wait' — Aor. *prita* 'I waited' — Imper. *prit* 'wait!'

In the conjugation of a tense form there frequently occurs a linking of metaphony: **a-e-i**: 1st pers. sg. **dal** — 2nd pers. sg. **del** — 2 pers. pl. **dilni** 'I come out — you (sg.) come out — you (pl.) come out'.

Diphthongization is used in various word types as a means of inflectional marking (cf. §46), especially in the conjugation:

o/ue (ua) = 1st pers. due (dua) 'I want' — 2nd pers. pl. *doni* 'you want'; Pres. *bluej* (bluaj) 'I grind' — Aor. *blova* 'I ground'
e/ye = Aor. *kreva* 'I completed' — Pres. *kryej* 'I complete'

Monophthongization (the reverse of diphthongization) serves for the contrast active/passive:

Active	Passive
ue(ua)/u = due (dua) 'I want'	<i>duhem</i> 'I am wanted'
ye/y = <i>lyej</i> 'I smear'	— <i>lyhem</i> 'I am smeared'
ie~je/i = <i>shtie</i> 'I put in, pour'	— <i>shtihem</i> 'I feign'

The contrast **ie/i** also constitutes the imperfect, e.g. Pres. **shtie**, Imperf. **shtija**, and this same monophthongization **ie/i** occurs in the conjugation as well:

Pres. 1st pers. sg. *shtie* 'I put in, pour' — 2nd pers. pl. *shtini* 'you put in, pour'

Notes

1. The oldest form of the diphthongization of *o* is *uo*, which occurs in *Buzuku* (1555), as well as today in the Arbëresh dialects of *Molise* and in the northwest Geg dialects, before *l* and *j* (*duol* 'he came out', *muoj* 'month'). The diphthong *ue~ua* is reduced to *u* in many dialects:

Pres. 1 sg. <i>shkruej</i> <i>shkruej</i> 'I write'	— 2 pl. <i>shkruni</i> 'you write'
sg. <i>dorë</i> 'hand'	— pl. <i>dur</i> (from <i>duer, duar</i> 'hands')

 The intermediate step *duër* also occurs (in the dialect of *Dibra* and in Arbëresh, cf. *Falconara Alb*)

2. In the west Geg dialects from around Lake Shkodra to the sea, the alternation *o* \bar{o} occurs in the conjugation:

Pres. indic. 2 sg *don* 'you want' 2 pl. *dōni* 'you want'

Aside from this instance, the rounded *o* (cf. German *ö*) appears in the same dialects in the environment of *r*, e.g. *vō* 'egg' (Common Alb. *ve* 'idem'). In east Geg the intermediate stage between *o* \bar{o} occurs as the rare vowel cluster *oe*, i.e. *voe* 'egg'.

168. Among the **consonant alternations**, **palatalization** is used in the constitution of verbal categories and classes, as well as in the conjugation:

k q = **Pres.** *pjek* 'I bake' – **Aor.** *poqa* 'I baked'
Indicative *pjek* 'I bake' – **Passive** *piqem* 'I am baked'
1st pers. sg. *pjek* 'I bake' — **2nd pers. pl.** *piqni* 'you bake'

g ɟj = **Pres.** *djeg* 'I burn' – **Aor.** *dogja* 'I burned'
Active *djeg* 'I burn' **Passive** *digjem* 'I am burned'
1st pers. sg. *djeg* 'I burn' — **2nd pers. pl.** *digjni* 'you burn'

Assimilation

l ll = **Aor.** (Tosk) *dolla* 'I came out' — **Pres.** *dal* 'I come out'
r rr = **Aor.** *mora* 'I took' **Pres.** *marr* 'I take'

Notes

Both alternations may be clarified diachronically by examining the role of the sonorant *n*.

1. The cluster *ln* yielded *l*, while *l* between two vowels was velarized to *ll*. The following is a reconstruction of these processes

Pres **del-n-iō* > *dal* 'I come out' *Aor.* **dēlA* > *dolla* (T.) 'I came out'

2. The cluster *-rn-* yielded *-rr-*

Pres. **mer-n-iō* > *marr* 'I take' *Aor.* **mērA* > *mora* 'I took'

3. In the peripheral dialects and in earlier texts, dental *t-* was eliminated before *-m* and *-n* in dynamic synchrony

tm m = *Aor. 1 sg.* *gjeta* 'I found' – *Pres. 1 pl.* *gjemë* < *gjetmë* 'we found'

tn n = *def. Acc.* *Zotnë* > *Zonë* 'the Lord'

Assibilation

t/s = **Imperative** *prit!* 'wait!' — **Indic. Pres.** *pres* 'I wait'
Pres. 2 sg. *pret* 'you wait' — **1 sg. pres** 'I wait'

Note

The so-called *t-verb* class resulted from the assibilation of **t-iō* to *s* (**pret-iō* > *pres*) (cf. § 204).

169. The **analytic indefinite forms** are constructed by means of **particles + participle**:

me = **Infinitive:** *me qenë* 'to be' (only in Geg)

- për të = **Infinitive**: për të qenë 'to be, in order to be' (standard form)
 pa = **Privative**: pa qenë 'without being' = pa qenë ai atý, mos shko 'without his being there, do not go'
 me të = **Absolutive**: me të shkuar 'as soon as he went' = me të mbjellë farën, priste bimën 'as soon as he had sown the seed, he waited for the plant'
 tue (duke) = **Gerundive**: tue (duke) qenë 'being'

Note

The particle *duke* ~ *dyke* occurs in Tosk with the Gerundive: *duke qenë* 'being'; Arbëresh *ture*, i.e. *ture qenë* 'idem'; Geg *tuj kenë* 'idem'.

The following particles are used with conjugated forms of the verb:

- të = *Subjunctive*: të jem 'that I am'
 po = *Progressive*: po sjell 'I am bringing'

170. The **analytical conjugated verbal forms** are constructed by means of a) the auxiliary verbs **jam** 'I am' and **kam** 'I have', and b) modal verbs such as **due** (**dua**) 'I want', **mund** 'I can', etc. + meaning-bearing verbal forms.

171. Conjugation of the auxiliary verbs

INDICATIVE

Present

(unë) jam 'I am'	kam 'I have'
(ti) je	ke
(ai, ajó) ásht (është)	ka
(ne) jemi	kemi
(ju) jeni ~ jini	keni ~ kini
(atá, ató) janë	kanë

Note

Arbëresh: 3th pers. sg. *ësht* ~ *isht* ~ *ê* (cf. Geg *á* · abbr. of *ásht*)

Imperfect

isha 'I was'	kisha 'I had'
ishe	kishe
ishte ~ ish	kishte
ishim	kishim
ishit	kishit
ishin	kishin

Notes1. *Da Lecce* (1716):

jesh(etc)-ishnje-ishte-ishnjmë-ishnjtë-ishnjinë
 kesh-kishnje-kisht-kishnjmë-kishnjtë-kishjinë

2. *Arbëresh:*

- I. jesh-jenje-ish-jeshmë-jeshhtë-ishin ~ in
 II. ishnja-ishnje-ish-ishnjim-ishnjit-ishnjin
 I. kesh-kenje-kish-keshmë-keshtë-kishin ~ kin
 II. kishnja ~ keshnja-kishnje-kish-kishnjim-kishnjit-kishnjin ~ kishnë

Aorist

qeshë 'I was'	pata 'I had'
qe (G. që)	pate
qe	pati ~ pat
qemë	patëm
qetë	patët
qenë	patën

Notes

1. *Da Lecce* (1716):
 kjesh-kje-kje-kjemë-kjetë-kjene
 paç-pate-pat-patmë ~ pamë-patë-patnë ~ panë
2. *Arbëresh:*
 qësh ~ qeva-qe-qemë ~ qëm-qetë ~ qët-qenë ~ qën
 pata-pate-pati-pâtëtum ~ pam-pâtëtut ~ pät-pâtëtut ~ pän [pän]

Perfect

kam qenë 'I have been'	kam pasë (pasur ~ patur) 'I have had'
ke qenë	ke pasë
ka qenë	ka pasë
kemi qenë	kemi pasë
keni qenë	keni pasë
kanë qenë	kanë pasë

Note

In northeast Geg, the forms *jam kenë, je kenë* 'I have been, you (sg.) have been' are also used.

Pluperfect I

kisha qenë	kisha pasë (patur)
'I had been being'	'I had been having'
kishe qenë	kishe pasë
kishte ~ kish qenë	kishte ~ kish pasë
kishim qenë	kishim pasë
kishit qenë	kishit pasë
kishin qenë	kishin pasë

Note

The Geg form *kisha pasë qenë* is not used in the written language

Pluperfect II

pata qenë 'I had been'
 pate qenë
 pati ~ pat qenë
 patëm qenë
 patët qenë
 patën qenë

pata pasë (patur) 'I had had'
 pate pasë
 pati ~ pat pasë
 patëm pasë
 patët pasë
 patën pasë

Future

do të jem ~ kam për të qenë
 'I will be'
 do të jesh ~ ke për të qenë
 do të jetë ~ ka për të qenë
 do të jemi ~ kemi për të qenë
 do të jeni ~ keni për të qenë
 do të jenë ~ kanë për të qenë

do të kem ~ kam për të pasë
 (patur) 'I will have'
 do të kesh ~ ke për të pasë
 do të ketë ~ ka për të pasë
 do të kemi ~ kemi për të pasë
 do të keni ~ keni për të pasë
 do të kenë ~ kanë për të pasë

Notes

1. The Geg future forms below are being suppressed by the above variants:

kam me qenë	kam me pasë
ke me qenë	ke me pasë
ka me qenë	ka me pasë
kemi me qenë	kemi me pasë
keni me qenë	keni me pasë
kanë me qenë	kanë me pasë

2. The Arbëresh future is constructed with *kat ~ ket + Subjunctive*.

kat ~ ket jem	kat ~ ket kem
kat ~ ket jesh	kat ~ ket kesh
kat ~ ket jet	kat ~ ket ket
kat ~ ket jemi	kat ~ ket kemi
kat ~ ket jini	kat ~ ket keni
kat ~ ket jen(ë)	kat ~ ket ken(ë)

Future Perfect

do të kem qenë
 'I will have been'
 do të kesh qenë
 do të ketë qenë
 do të kemi qenë
 do të keni qenë
 do të kenë qenë

do të kem pasë (patur)
 'I will have had'
 do të kesh pasë
 do të ketë pasë
 do të kemi pasë
 do të keni pasë
 do të kenë pasë

Other variants constructed with the **Infinitive**:

kam për të pasë qenë ~ kam me pasë qenë
 ke për të pasë qenë ~ ke me pasë qenë
 kam për të pasë pasë ~ kam me pasë pasë
 ke për të pasë pasë ~ ke me pasë pasë

SUBJUNCTIVE

Present

të jem 'that I am'	të kem 'that I have'
të jesh	të kesh
të jetë	të ketë
të jemi	të kemi
të jeni	të kenë
të jenë	të kenë

Imperfect

të isha 'that I was'	të kisha 'that I had'
të ishe	të kishe
të ishte	të kishte
të ishim	të kishim
të ishit	të kishit
të ishin	të kishin

Note

De Rada (1871) *t'ija* 'that I was'

Perfect

të kem qenë	të kem pasë (patur)
'that I have been'	'that I have had'
të kesh qenë	të kesh pasë
të ketë qenë	të ketë pasë
të kemi qenë	të kemi pasë
të keni qenë	të keni pasë
të kenë pasë	të kenë pasë

Pluperfect

të kisha qenë	të kisha pasë (patur)
'that I had been'	'that I had had'
të kishe qenë	të kishe pasë
të kishte qenë	të kishte pasë
të kishim qenë	të kishim pasë
të kishit qenë	të kishit pasë
të kishin qenë	të kishin pasë

CONDITIONAL

Present

do të isha 'I would be'	do të kisha 'I would have'
do të ishe	do të kishe
do të ishte	do të kishte
do të ishim	do të kishim

do të ishít
do të ishín

do të kishít
do të kishín

Note

Very rare Geg variant: *do të ishja/kishja*.

Perfect

do të kisha qenë
'I would have been'
do të kishe qenë
do të kishte qenë
do të kishim qenë
do të kishít qenë
do të kishín qenë

do të kisha pasë (patur)
'I would have had'
do të kishe pasë
do të kishte pasë
do të kishim pasë
do të kishít pasë
do të kishín pasë

OPTATIVE**Present**

qofsha 'may I be'
qofsh
qoftë
qofshim
qofshi
qofshín

paça 'may I have'
paç
pastë
paçim
paçi
paçín

Note

The -ç- morph in *paça* is derived from *-tsh-* (cf. § 8):

*pat-sha > paça.

Synchronically, sg. 3 *pastë* < *pat-të*, as *-tt-* > *-st-*; cf. Aorist 3 sg. *prítte* ~ *prístte* 'waited'.

Perfect

paça qenë 'if only I had been'
paç qenë
pastë qenë
paçim qenë
paçi qenë
paçín qenë

paça pasë 'if only I had had'
paç pasë
pastë pase
paçim pasë
paçi pasë
paçín pasë

ADMIRATIVE**Present**

qenkam 'I am!'
qenke
qenka

paskam 'I have!'
paske
paska

qénkemi	páskemi
qénkeni	páskeni
qenkan	paskan

Imperfect

qénkësha 'I was!'	páskësha 'I had!'
qénkëshe	páskëshe
qenkësh ~ qenkej	paskësh ~ paskej
qénkëshim	pákëshim
qénkëshit	pákëshit
qénkëshin	pákëshin

Perfect

paskam qenë 'I have been!'	paskam pasë 'I have had!'
paske qenë	paske pasë
paska qenë	paska pasë
páskemi qenë	páskemi pasë
páskeni qenë	páskeni pasë
paskan qenë	paskan pasë

Pluperfect

pákësha qenë 'I had been!'	pákësha pasë 'I had had!'
pákëshe qenë	pákëshe pasë
paske qenë	paske pasë
pákëshim qenë	pákëshim pasë
pákëshit qenë	pákëshit pasë
pákëshin qenë	pákëshin pasë

IMPERATIVE**Present**

jí 'be! (sg. 2)'	kí 'have (sg. 2)'
jini 'be! (pl. 2)'	kini 'have! (pl. 2)'

Note

A special hybrid form is derived from *ki*: *të kihet* (të k1-h-et), i.e. a medio-passive sg. 3 subjunctive. When followed by words or word groups in idioms, the meaning is 'may one have': *të kihet parasýsh* 'may one have in mind!' This form is classed with the Aor. Middle of 'have'.

Impersonal Forms

Subjunctive Pres.	Aorist
të kihet	u pat
të kihen	u patën

INFINITIVE

me qenë (për të qenë) 'to be'	me pasë (për të pasur) 'to have'
-------------------------------	----------------------------------

PARTICIPLE

Present

qenë 'been'

pasë (pasur ~ patur) 'had'

Notes

- 1 Old Albanian *klenë*, Arbëresh *kljenë* ~ *qenë*, Da Lecce (1716) *kjenë*
2. De Rada (1871) *pasur*.

Perfect

pasë (pasur) qenë 'had been'

pasë pasë (patur ~ pasë) 'had had'

GERUND

Present

tue (duke) qenë 'being'

tue pasë (duke pasur ~ patur)
'having'

Perfect

tue (duke) pasë qenë 'having been'

tue pasë pasë (duke patur ~ pasë)
'having had'

172. The modal verbs **due (dua)** 'I want, like, love' and **mund** 'I can, am able, conquer' are used for the construction of the **analytical** verbal and modal forms. They are classified together with other modal particles derived from verbs (cf. §§ 186-9) in a sub-group of the auxiliary verbs, as they — in contrast to **kam** and **jam** — do not completely lose their original meaning, even when they occur in abbreviated form. Their complete conjugations follow:

*Active**Medio-passive*

INDICATIVE

Present

due (dua) 'want'	mund 'can'	duhem 'am wanted'	mundem 'am able ~ conquered'
do(n)	mund	duhesh	mundesh
do(n)	mund	duhet	mundet
duem (duam)	mundim	dúhemi	múndemi
doni	mundni	dúheni	múndeni
duen (duan)	mundin	duhen	munden

Notes

- 1 Geg variant *muj-mun-mun-mujmë-muni-mujnë*
- 2 The older Geg authors use both variants, although not very clearly differentiated semantically. Nevertheless, they may be classified in the following small verbal categories

Present

Active	Medio-Passive
vgjanj ~ gjenj 'find'	gjen dem ~ gjendem 'am found, am'
lëj 'give birth'	lindem 'am born'
muj 'conquer, can'	mundem 'am conquered, can'

Imperfect

doja ~ dosha	mundja	dúhesha	múndesha
'wanted'	'could'	'was wanted'	'was conquered'
doje ~ doshe	mundje	dúheshe	múndeshe
donte	mundte	duhej	mundej
donim ~ doshim	mundnim	dúheshim	múndeshim
donit ~ doshit	mundnit	dúheshit	múndeshit
donin ~ doshin	mundnin	dúheshin	múndeshin

Note

Geg Variants *mujsha-mujshe-munte-mujshum-mujshit-mujshun* or *mundsha-mundshe-munte* etc.

Aorist

desha ~ deshta	munda	u desha ~ deshta	u munda
'wanted'	'could'	'was wanted'	'was conquered'
deshe ~ deshte	munde	u deshe ~ deshte	u munde
deshi ~ deshti	mundi	u desh ~ desht	u mund
deshëm ~ deshtëm	mundëm	u deshëm ~ deshtëm	u mundëm
deshët ~ deshtët	mundët	u deshët ~ deshtët	u mundët
deshën ~ deshtën	mundën	u deshën ~ deshtën	u mundën

Notes

Geg variant:

1. *mujta-mujte-mujt-mujtëm-mujtët-mujten* (Active)
2. *u mujta-u mujte-u mujt-u mujtëm-u mujtët-u mujtën* (Passive)
3. for *desha* (cf. Da Lecce, § 229, Note).

Perfect

kam dashë (dashur)	jam dashë (dashur)
'have wanted'	'have been wanted'
ke dashë (dashur)	je dashë (dashur)
ka dashë (dashur)	është (është) dashë (dashur)

kemi dashë (dashur)
keni dashë (dashur)
kanë dashë (dashur)

jemi dashë (dashur)
jeni dashë (dashur)
janë dashë (dashur)

kam mundë (mundur)
'have been able'
ke mundë (mundur)
ka mundë (mundur)
kemi mundë (mundur)
keni mundë (mundur)
kanë mundë (mundur)

jam mundë (mundur)
'have been conquered'
je mundë (mundur)
âsht(ëshhtë) mundë (mundur)
jemi mundë (mundur)
jeni mundë (mundur)
janë mundë (mundur)

Note

Geg: *kam-ke* etc. *dashë; mujtë*

jam-je etc. *dashë; mujtë*.

Pluperfect I

kisha dashë (dashur)
'had been wanting'
kisha dashë (dashur)
kishte dashë (dashur)
kishim dashë (dashur)
kishit dashë (dashur)
kishin dashë (dashur)

isha dashë (dashur)
'had been being wanted'
ishe dashë (dashur)
ishte dashë (dashur)
ishim dashë (dashur)
ishit dashë (dashur)
ishin dashë (dashur)

kisha mundë (mundur)
'had been able'
kisha mundë (mundur)
kishte mundë (mundur)
kishim mundë (mundur)
kishit mundë (mundur)
kishin mundë (mundur)

isha mundë (mundur)
'had been conquered'
ishe mundë (mundur)
ishte mundë (mundur)
ishim mundë (mundur)
ishit mundë (mundur)
ishin mundë (mundur)

Note

Geg. *kisha-kisha* etc. *dashë; mujtë*; *isha-ishe* etc. *dashë; mujtë*.

Pluperfect II

pata dashë (dashur)
'had wanted'
pate dashë (dashur)
pati dashë (dashur)
patëm dashë (dashur)
patët dashë (dashur)
patën dashë (dashur)

qeshë dashë (dashur)
'had been wanted'
qe dashë (dashur)
qe dashë (dashur)
qemë dashë (dashur)
qetë dashë (dashur)
qenë dashë (dashur)

NoteGeg variant: *pata etc. dashtë* *qeshë dashte*

pata mundë (mundur) 'had been able'	qeshë mundë (mundur) 'had been conquered'
pate mundë (mundur)	qe mundë (mundur)
pati mundë (mundur)	që mundë (mundur)
patëm mundë (mundur)	qemë mundë (mundur)
patët mundë (mundur)	qetë mundë (mundur)
patën mundë (mundur)	qenë mundë (mundur)

NoteGeg variant: *pata mujte* *qeshë mujte***Future**

do të due (dua) ~ kam për të dashë (dashur) 'will want'	do të duhem ~ kam për t'u dashë (dashur) 'will be wanted'
do të duesh (duash) ~ ke për të dashë (dashur)	do të duhesh ~ ke për t'u dashë (dashur)
do të dojë ~ ka për të dashë (dashur)	do të duhet ~ ka për t'u dashë (dashur)
do të duem (duam) ~ kemi për të dashë (dashur)	do të dúhemi ~ kemi për t'u dashë (dashur)
do të doni ~ keni për të dashë (dashur)	do të dúheni ~ keni për t'u dashë (dashur)
do të duen (duan) ~ kanë për të dashë (dashur)	do të duhen ~ kanë për t'u dashë (dashur)

NoteGeg variant: *kam me dashtë* *kam m'u dashtë*

do të mund ~ kam për të mundë (mundur) 'will be able'	do të mundem ~ kam për t'u mundë (mundur) 'will be conquered'
do të mundesh ~ ke për të mundë (mundur)	do të mundesh ~ ke për t'u mundë (mundur)
do të mundë ~ ka për të mundë (mundur)	do të mundet ~ ka për t'u mundë (mundur)
do të mundim ~ kemi për të mundë (mundur)	do të mündemi ~ kemi për t'u mundë (mundur)
do të mundni ~ keni për të mundë (mundur)	do të mündeni ~ keni për t'u mundë (mundur)
do të munden ~ kanë për të mundë (mundur)	do të munden ~ kanë për t'u mundë (mundur)

Note

Geg variant *kam me mujtë* *kam m'u mujtë*

Future Perfect

do të kem dashë (dashur) 'will have wanted'	do të jem dashë (dashur) 'will have been wanted'
do të kesh dashë (dashur)	do të jesh dashë (dashur)
do të ketë dashë (dashur)	do të jetë dashë (dashur)
do të kemi dashë (dashur)	do të jemi dashë (dashur)
do të keni dashë (dashur)	do të jeni dashë (dashur)
do të kenë dashë (dashur)	do të jenë dashë (dashur)
do të kem mundë (mundur) 'will have been able'	do të jem mundë (mundur) 'will have been conquered'
do të kesh mundë (mundur)	do të jesh mundë (mundur)
do të ketë mundë (mundur)	do të jetë mundë (mundur)
do të kemi mundë (mundur)	do të jemi mundë (mundur)
do të keni mundë (mundur)	do të jeni mundë (mundur)
do të kenë mundë (mundur)	do të jenë mundë (mundur)

Note

The variant *kam për të pasë dashë* ('dashur) *mundë* ('mundur), systematically analogous to and justified by the future variant *kam për të dashë* ('dashur):*mundë* ('mundur), has not yet succeeded in being used in the contemporary normalized language.

The Geg *Future Perfect* is constructed according to the simple future *kam me dashë, mundë* as follows:

kam me pasë dashë ~ *dash të* *kam me pasë mundë* ~ *mujtë*, etc. (Active)
kam me qenë dashë ~ *dash të* *kam me qenë mundë* ~ *mujtë*, etc. (Passive)

SUBJUNCTIVE**Present**

të due (dua) 'that (I) want'	të mund 'that (I) can'	të duhem 'that (I) am wanted'	të mundem 'that (I) am able ~ conquered'
të dësh (duash)	të mundësh	të duhesh	të mundesh
të dojë	të mundë	të duhet	të mundet
të duem (duam)	të mundim	të dúhemi	të mündemi
të doni	të mundni	të dúheni	të mündeni
të duen (duan)	të mundin	të duhen	të munden

Note

Geg variants:

të muj-të mujsh-të mujë-të mujmë-të muni-te mujnë (Active)*të munem-të munesh-të munet-të münemi-te müneni-te munen* (Passive)**Imperfect**

të doja ~ dosha 'that (I) wanted'	të mundja 'that (I) could'	të dühesha 'that (I) was wanted'	të mündesha 'that (I) was conquered'
të doje ~ doshe	të mundje	të düheshe	të mündeshe
të donte	të mundte	të dühëj	të mundej
të donim ~ doshim	të mundnim	të düheshim	të mündeshim
të donit ~ doshit	të mundnit	të düheshit	të mündeshit
të donin ~ doshin	të mundnin	të düheshin	të mündeshin

NoteGeg variants *të mujsha-te mujshe-te munte-te mujshim-të mujshit-të mujshin* (Active)**Perfect**

të kem dashe (dashur) 'that (I) have wanted'	të jem dashë (dashur) 'that (I) have been wanted'
të kesh dashë (dashur)	të jesh dashë (dashur)
te ketë dashë (dashur)	të jetë dashë (dashur)
të kemi dashë (dashur)	të jemi dashë (dashur)
të kenë dashë (dashur)	te jeni dashë (dashur)
të jenë dashë (dashur)	të jenë dashë (dashur)
të kem mundë (mundur) 'that (I) have been able'	të jem mundë (mundur) 'that (I) have been conquered'
të kesh mundë (mundur)	të jesh mundë (mundur)
të ketë mundë (mundur)	të jetë mundë (mundur)
të kemi mundë (mundur)	të jemi mundë (mundur)
të kenë mundë (mundur)	të jeni mundë (mundur)
të jenë mundë (mundur)	të jenë mundë (mundur)

NoteGeg variant: *të kem dashtë mujtë* *të jem dashtë mujtë***Pluperfect**

të kisha dashë (dashur) 'that I had wanted'	të isha dashë (dashur) 'that I had been wanted'
të kishe dashë (dashur)	të ishe dashë (dashur)
të kish(te) dashë (dashur)	të ish(te) dashë (dashur)
të kishim dashë (dashur)	të ishim dashë (dashur)
të kishit dashë (dashur)	të ishit dashë (dashur)
të kishin dashë (dashur)	të ishin dashë (dashur)

të kisha mundë (mundur)	të isha mundë (mundur)
'that had been able'	'that had been conquered'
të kishe mundë (mundur)	të ishe mundë (mundur)
të kish(te) mundë (mundur)	të ish(te) mundë (mundur)
të kishim mundë (mundur)	të ishim mundë (mundur)
të kishit mundë (mundur)	të ishit mundë (mundur)
të kishin mundë (mundur)	të ishin mundë (mundur)

Note

Geg variant: *të kisha dashtë|mujtë, të isha dashtë|mujtë*

CONDITIONAL**Present**

do të doja ~ dosha	do të mundja
'would want'	'would be able'
do të doje ~ doshe	do të mundje
do të donte	do të mundte
do të donim ~ doshim	do të mundnim
do të donit ~ doshit	do të mundnit
do të donin ~ doshin	do të mundnin
do të dúhesha	do të múndesha
'would be wanted'	'would be conquered'
do të dúheshe	do të múndeshe
do të duhej	do të mundej
do të dúheshin	do të múndeshim
to të dúheshit	do të múndeshit
do të dúheshin	do të múndeshin

Note

Geg variants: *do të mujsha* – *do të mujshe* – *do të munte* — *do të mujshim* *do të mujshit* *do të mujshin*

Perfect

do të kisha dashë (dashur)	do të isha dashë (dashur)
'would have wanted'	'would have been wanted'
do të kishe dashë (dashur)	do të ishe dashë (dashur)
do të kishte dashë (dashur)	do të ishte dashë (dashur)
do të kishim dashë (dashur)	do të ishim dashë (dashur)
do të kishit dashë (dashur)	do të ishit dashë (dashur)
do të kishin dashë (dashur)	do të ishin dashë (dashur)
do të kisha mundë (mundur)	do të isha mundë (mundur)
'would have been able'	'would have been conquered'

do të kisha mundë (mundur)	do të ishe mundë (mundur)
do të kish mundë (mundur)	do të ish mundë (mundur)
do të kishim mundë (mundur)	do të ishim mundë (mundur)
do të kishit mundë (mundur)	do të ishit mundë (mundur)
do të kishin mundë (mundur)	do të ishin mundë (mundur)

Note

Geg variants: *do të kisha dashtë mujtë, do të isha dashtë mujtë*

OPTATIVE**Present**

dashça ~ daça	mundça ~ mundsha
'may (I) want'	'may (I) be able'
dashç ~ daç	mundç ~ mundsh
dashtë	mundtë
dashçim ~ daçim	mundçim ~ mundshim
dashçi ~ daçi	mundçi ~ mundshi
dashçin ~ daçin	mundçin ~ mundshin
u dashça ~ daça	u mundça ~ mundsha
'may I be wanted'	'may I be conquered'
u dashç ~ daç	u mundç ~ mundsh
u dashtë	u mundtë
u dashçim ~ daçim	u mundçim ~ mundshim
u dashçi ~ daçi	u mundçi ~ mundshi
u dashçin ~ daçin	u mundçin ~ mundshin

Note

Geg variant: *mujsha — mujsh — mujtë — mujshim — mujshit — mujshin (Active)*
u mujsha etc (Passive)

Perfect

paça dashë (dashur)	qofsha dashë (dashur)
'if only I had wanted'	'if only I had been wanted'
paç dashë (dashur)	qofsh dashë (dashur)
pastë dashë (dashur)	qoftë dashë (dashur)
paçim dashë (dashur)	qofshim dashë (dashur)
paçi dashë (dashur)	qofshi dashë (dashur)
paçin dashë (dashur)	qofshin dashë (dashur)

Note

Geg variants: *paça dashtë, qofsha dashtë*

paça mundë (mundur)	qofsha mundë (mundur)
'if only I had been able'	'if only I had been conquered'
paç mundë (mundur)	qofsh mundë (mundur)
pastë mundë (mundur)	qoftë mundë (mundur)
paçim mundë (mundur)	qofshim mundë (mundur)
paçi mundë (mundur)	qofshi mundë (mundur)
paçin mundë (mundur)	qofshin mundë (mundur)

Note

Geg variants: *paça mujte* *qofsha mujtë*

ADMIRATIVE

Present

dashkam	mundkam	u dashkam	u mundkam
'(I) want!'	'(I) can!'	'I am wanted!'	'I am conquered!'
dashke	mundke	u dashke	u mundke
dashka	mundka	u dashka	u mundka
dëshkemi	mùndkemi	u dëshkemi	u mùndkemi
dëshkeni	mùndkeni	u dëshkeni	u mùndkeni
dashkan	mundkan	u dashkan	u mundkan

Note

Geg variants:

mujkam — *mujke* — *mujka* — *mujkemi* *mujkeni* *mujkan* (Active)
u mujkam — *u mujke* *u mujka* — *u mujkemi* etc. (Passive)

Imperfect

dëshkësha	mùndkësha	u dëshkësha	u mùndkësha
'(I) wanted!'	'(I) could!'	'(I) was wanted!'	'(I) was conquered'
dëshkëshe	mùndkëshe	u dëshkëshe	u mùndkëshe
dashkësh	mùndkësh	u dashkësh	u mundkësh
dëshkëshim	mùndkëshim	u dëshkëshim	u mùndkëshim
dëshkëshit	mùndkëshit	u dëshkëshit	u mùndkëshit
dëshkëshin	mùndkëshin	u dëshkëshin	u mùndkëshin

Note

Geg variants: *mujkësha* *mujkëshe* — *mujkesh* ~ *mujkej* *mujkëshum* *mujkëshut*
— *mujkëshin* (Active)
u mujkësha — *u mujkëshe* etc (Passive)

Perfect

paskam dashë (dashur)	qenkam dashë (dashur)
'(I) have wanted!'	'(I) have been wanted!'

paske dashë (dashur)	qenke dashë (dashur)
paska dashë (dashur)	qenka dashë (dashur)
paskemi dashë (dashur)	qënkemi dashë (dashur)
paskeni dashë (dashur)	qënkeni dashë (dashur)
paskan dashë (dashur)	qenkan dashë (dashur)

Note

Geg variant *paskam dashtë* *qenkam dashte*

paskam mundë (mundur)	qenkam mundë (mundur)
'(I) have been able!'	'(I) have been conquered!'
paske mundë (mundur)	qenke mundë (mundur)
paska mundë (mundur)	qenka mundë (mundur)
paskemi mundë (mundur)	qënkemi mundë (mundur)
paskeni mundë (mundur)	qënkeni mundë (mundur)
paskan mundë (mundur)	qenkan mundë (mundur)

Note

Geg variant: *paskam mujte* *qenkam mujte*

Pluperfect

paskësha dashë (dashur)	qënkësha dashë (dashur)
'(I) had wanted!'	'(I) had been wanted!'
paskëshe dashë (dashur)	qënkëshe dashë (dashur)
paskësh dashë (dashur)	qenkësh dashë (dashur)
paskëshim dashë (dashur)	qënkëshim dashë (dashur)
paskëshit dashë (dashur)	qënkëshit dashë (dashur)
paskëshin dashë (dashur)	qënkëshin dashë (dashur)

Note

Geg variant: *paskësha dashtë* *qënkësha dashtë*

paskësha mundë (mundur)	qënkësha mundë (mundur)
'(I) had been able!'	'(I) had been conquered!'
paskëshe mundë (mundur)	qënkëshe mundë (mundur)
paskësh mundë (mundur)	qenkësh mundë (mundur)
paskëshim mundë (mundur)	qënkëshim mundë (mundur)
paskëshit mundë (mundur)	qënkëshit mundë (mundur)
paskëshin mundë (mundur)	qënkëshin mundë (mundur)

Note

Geg variant: *paskësha mujtë* *qënkësha mujtë*

IMPERATIVE

duej (duaj) 'want!'	të duhesh 'be wanted!'
dúeni (dúani)	të dúheni
mund 'be able!'	të mundesh 'be conquered!'
mundni	të múndeni

INFINITIVE

Present

me dashë ~ dashtë	me u dashë ~ dashtë
(për të dashur) 'to want'	(për t'u dashur) 'to be wanted'
me mundë ~ mujtë	me u mundë ~ mujtë
(për të mundur) 'to be able'	(për t'u mundur) 'to be conquered'

PARTICIPLE

Present

dashë (dashur) 'wanted'	mundë (mundur) 'able'
-------------------------	-----------------------

Note

Geg *dashte*, *mujtë*, Arbëresh. *dashur* ~ *dashhtë*

Perfect

pasë dashë (dashur) !	qenë dashë (dashur) j
mundë (mundur)	mundë (mundur)
'having wanted/been able'	'having been wanted/conquered'

Note

Geg *pasë dashhtë*! *mujtë*

GERUND

Present

tue dashë (duke dashur) 'wanting'	tue mundë (duke mundur) 'being able'	tue u dashë (duke u dashur) 'being wanted'
		tue u mundë (duke u mundur) 'being conquered'

Note

Geg variants: *tue dashhtë mujtë* (Active) *tue u dashhtë mujtë* (Passive)

Perfect

tue pasë dashë (duke pasë dashur) tue pasë mundë (duke pasë mundur) 'having been wanting' 'having been able'

173. As will be seen below, the modal verbs may occur either in their full form or abbreviated, e.g. **do**, **mund**.

Notes

1. The fossilized form *do* appears also in the composition of the indefinite pronoun (cf. § 155) *kushdò* 'whoever, anyone', *cilidò* 'whoever, anyone', etc.
2. The 3rd person of the Optative Present appears in the fossilized form *ndashte* 'it is all the same, it does not matter' (< *në dashtë*), while *në do* 'if he wants' yields *ndo* 'or, either . . . or':
ndashte, nësë gjeli këndon tri herë në natë
 'it does not matter if the rooster sings three times at night'
njeni (njeri) nesh del jashte, ndo une, ndo ai
 'one of us goes outside, either I or he'

174. **The connection of the verbal forms with their corresponding functions.** Every **change**, i.e. type of inflection, in the verb implies at least one **semantic change**. This rule seems at first to be contradictory, as there are many cases of redundancy (several variant forms for a single function) in the language, as may be seen from the paradigms, such as two forms for the future:

do të mund ~ kam për të mundë (mundur)

Frequently, such forms are dialectal variants which express the same idea. This is not, however, always the case, as the so-called doublets or formal facultative variants within one language branch (Geg or Tosk) have meanings which differ either considerably or in nuance. In other words, it should be noted that differences of meaning often exist among the more or less varying forms which occur in the paradigms classified under one and the same category or tense form.

In the first section on the verb, the full paradigms of the auxiliary verbs were given because they are formally indispensable for the construction of the **analytical verbal forms**. It should be further borne in mind that the **sequence** of the constituent parts of an **analytical verbal construction** is relevant with respect to the meaning, as e.g.:

Indicative Perfect: *kam pasë* 'I have had'

Admirative Present: *paskam* (< *pasë-kam*) 'I have!'

This type of sequence also clarifies the fact that many auxiliary verbs **at the beginning of an analytical tense form** either lose their original meaning or have it considerably weakened, such as **kam** 'have' in the Indicative Perfect: **kam sjellë** 'I have brought', where the meaning **'bring'** is borne by this form.

175. Beginning with the form, the Albanian verb may be reduced to three functions:

- a) Forms expressing **time**;
- b) Categorization of forms according to **aspect** (in verbal inflections);
- c) Constructions with verbal forms (inflected or fossilized) which, as **analytical unities**, express **modalities**, e.g. **necessity** (the modal verbs **duhet** and **lypet** 'it must' are typically used for this) or **possibility** (contained in **mund** 'it can'), etc.

All three functions of the verb (**time**, **aspect** and **modality**) may be clarified only in relation to each other (cf. the table § 180).

176. **Tense**, as a grammatical category of the verb, is divided into **8 sub-categories**, all of which are included in the Indicative (cf. §§ 162-163). In terms of actual time, they are divided into categories of present, past and future.

Beginning with the synthetic forms — Present, Imperfect and Aorist — correlations of **aspect** must also be taken into account; these occur in the Present and Preterite of the Indicative.

177. In Albanian, there is a tendency to a **double aspect correlation**, in the Present as well as in the Preterite:

I. Perfective/imperfective

II. Actual/habitual

Typical for correlation I is the relation of Aorist (perfective) to Imperfect (imperfective) whereby the Aorist in itself (without the addition of adverbs or word groups) represents the form of 'completed action in the past'; the Imperfect, by contrast, is the form of 'uncompleted action in the past'. The following example characterizes this correlation:

ndërsa mjeku **flinte** (Imperfect imperfective), pacienti **vdjq** (Aorist/perfective) 'while the doctor slept, the patient died'

The doctor's sleeping is an **uncompleted condition**, while the dying is completed in the past.

178. The **Present**, the temporal midpoint relative to past and future, is divided according to aspect into:

Present a), which expresses an action or condition that is undetermined or generalized: **ha bukë** 'I eat bread' (habitually);

Present b), constructed with **po** + the **Present forms** of the Indicative: **po ha bukë** 'I am eating bread' (right now). Here, the action of eating is determined and thus the construction includes the component of the actual aspect.

Present Indicative

Present a) -- imperfective habitual	Present b) — imperfective/actual
unë ha bukë 'I eat bread'	unë po ha bukë 'I am eating bread'
tí ha bukë	tí po ha bukë
ai, ajó ha bukë	ai, ajó po ha bukë
ne hamë bukë	ne po hamë bukë
ju hani bukë	ju po hani bukë
atá, ató hanë bukë	atá, ató po hanë bukë

Present b), as the form of actualization of an action, may also be constructed with the auxiliary verb **jam** + **Gerund**:

zogjtë janë tue (duke) sjellë kandrra në çerdhe
'the birds are bringing insects to (their) nest'
zogjtë po sjellin kandrra në çerdhe
idem.

Notes

1. The same aspect correlations exist in Arbëresh, Present b), however, is constructed differently, viz. with the Present Indicative of the auxiliary verb *jam* + *e* + Present a):

Present Indicative

Present a) imperfective habitual	Present b) imperfective actual
qell 'I bring'	jam e qell 'I am bringing'
qell	je e qell
qell	është e qell
qëllimë	jam e qëllimë
qellni	jeni e qellni
qëllinë	janë e qëllinë

2. The component of *actuality* is expressed in northern Geg by means of the morphologized construction *jam+kah+verb*, where both the auxiliary and meaning-bearing verbs are inflected:

jam kah sjell 'I am bringing'	jemi kah sjellim
je kah sjell	jeni kah sillni
është kah sjell	janë kah sjellin

3. Through the morphologized construction *po+Present Indicative* of verbs of *wishing, feeling*, etc., the speaker imbues his statements more with *emphasis* than actuality, particularly in negative clauses, as e.g.:

As *po dini*, as *po doni* you certainly do not know, you certainly do not want,
as *po keni çka m'i thoni* so you certainly have nothing to say
(verse from a *Geg epic song*)

179. The **Imperfect** exhibits the same aspect components as the Present Indicative and is similarly divided into Imperfect a) and Imperfect b):

Imperfect Indicative

Imperfect a) — imperfective/habitual	Imperfect b) — imperfective. actual
haja bukë 'I ate bread'	po haja bukë 'I was eating bread'
haje bukë	po haje bukë
hante bukë	po hante bukë
hanim bukë	po hanim bukë
hanit bukë	po hanit bukë
hanin bukë	po hanin bukë

Imperfect b), corresponding to Present b), may be replaced by the construction **isha + Gerund of the meaning-bearing verb: isha tue hangër (duke hëngër)** 'I was eating'. As with **jam**, the auxiliary verb **isha** is conjugated (cf. § 178):

jam tue hangër (duke hëngër)	isha tue hangër (duke hëngër)
'I am eating'	'I was eating'
je tue hangër (duke hëngër)	ishe tue hangër (duke hëngër)
'you (sg.) are eating', etc.	you (sg.) were eating, etc.

Notes

- The same correlation, *haja/po haja*, exists in Arbëresh, but the latter form is constructed by means of the Imperfect of the auxiliary verb *jesh + e + Imperfect Indicative of the meaning-bearing verb*:

Imperfect Indicative

Imperfect a) - imperfective/habitual	Imperfect b) - imperfective/actual
qellnja 'I brought'	jesh e qellnja 'I was bringing'
qellnje	jenje e qellnje
qelli	ish e qelli
qellimë	ishm e qellim(ë)
qellit	jesht e qellit(ë)
qellin	ishn ~ in e qellin(ë)

- The northern Geg construction of Imperfect b) is *isha + kah + Present Indicative*:

isha kah sjelli 'I was bringing'	ishim kah sjellim
ishe kah sjellë	ishit kah sillni
ish(te) kah sjell	ishin kah sjellin

Sometimes the particle *po + Imperfect* conveys the idea of a verified true statement:

shkova dhe e pashë se *po hante bukë*
'I went and saw that he *was really eating* bread'

180. **The relations of tense and aspect** are illustrated by the following table. It should be noted that the Aorist occupies a special place in these relations.

TENSE		ASPECT			
		Correlation I		Correlation II	
		perfective	imperfective	habitual	actual
Present Time	Present a)		+	+	+
	Present b)		+		+
Past Time	Imperfect a)		+	+	+
	Imperfect b)		+		+
	Aorist	+			+

181. **The analytical tense forms of the past**, with regard to function, must be considered in relation to **the synthetic tense forms of the Indicative** treated above.

a) **The Perfect**, for example, constructed with **kam+Participle** in the Active and **jam+Participle** in the Passive, stands closest to the Aorist (perfective/actual) in terms of meaning, but leads to the Present by its temporal force:

prozën që po lexojmë e ka shkruar (shkruar) Kristoforidhi
 'Kristoforidhi has written the prose which we are reading'

The Perfect may be slightly modified semantically by adverbs and other indicators of time, especially in colloquial speech and in folk literature:

dallëndysia ia ka prë (prerë) fluturimthi me gërshanë (gërsherë) shlligës
 gjuhën
 'the swallow, on the wing (i.e. swiftly), cut off the viper's tongue with a
 scissors'

The adverbial form **fluturimthi** indicates the instantaneous speed of the action.

Notes

1. The Perfect is gradually being replaced in the literary language by the Aorist.
2. In Geg dialects, as has already been mentioned, there is also a Perfect form constructed with the Perfect of the auxiliary verb *kam pasë* + Participle of the meaning-bearing verb:

Lumi në atë kohë ka pasë sjellë me vete edhe arka të vjetra
 'At that time, the river had also carried along old chests'

3. The Perfect form is rare in Arbëresh, but when it does occur it sometimes contains a component of *probability*: *ka vdekur* '(perhaps) he has died'. Cf. De Rada (1871) *passato dubitativo* (cf. p 94)

b) The **Pluperfect I** stands formally and functionally in close relation to the **Imperfect**, as does the **Pluperfect II** to the **Aorist**.

Pluperfect I = **kisha + Participle** (active) — **isha + Participle** (passive)

Pluperfect II = **pata + Participle** (active) -- **qeshë + Participle** (passive).

The Pluperfects I and II express a completed action before a point in time in the past. Like the Imperfect a), the Pluperfect I has a durative, nonpunctual quality and thus it indicates, as a rule, an unbroken contact with the act which occurred in the past:

Luka para se të **vinte** në qytët, **kishte jetue (jetuar)** në fshat
 'before Luka came to the city, he had been living in a village'

The Pluperfect II, on the other hand, is almost independent in terms of aspect, in complex clauses, from the completed act in the past, as may be seen in the following construction which includes both tense forms with the component **perfective/actual**:

Luka, mbasi ia **pat dalë** qëllimit, **e theu** besën
 'Luka, after he had attained the goal, broke his word of honor'

In independent clauses, the Pluperfects I and II express the end-point of an action occurring in the distant past; the Pluperfect II (constructed with the Aorist) is actually better-suited for this purpose:

Mbas shumë vjetësh Luka **pat ardhë (ardhur)** përsëri në fshat
 'after many years Luka had come back to (the) village'

Notes

1. In Geg, by means of the combination of the Pluperfect of the auxiliary verb *kisha pasë* or *isha qenë* + Participle of the meaning-bearing verb, a variant of this tense form has arisen which may be called Pluperfect III and which expresses action occurring in an even more remote past: *kishte pasë thanë plaku* 'the old man had said (a very long time ago)'.
 2. Arbëresh has both forms of the Pluperfect: constructed with the Imperfect of the auxiliary verb: *kisha shkruar-kishe shkruar*, etc. 'I had been writing you (sg.) had been writing'; and with the Aorist: *qeshë dashur mirë* 'I had been well-liked, loved'.

182. The **Future**, with **two temporal degrees**, is constructed analytically.

a) The **Future** (simple or temporal degree 1) indicates an action arising after the act of speech. In Albanian it is constructed in two ways:

I. By means of the fixed form of the modal verb **due (dua)** 'I want', i.e. **do + Present Subjunctive**:

do të sjellë 'I will bring'

II. By means of the auxiliary verb in the Present **kam + Infinitive**, i.e. with one of the two different Infinitive forms (cf. § 196):

kam për të sjellë or kam me sjellë 'I will bring'

Both variants (I and II) of the simple future fulfill the same function in

terms of temporal degree; their modality differs in that variant I with **do + Present Subjunctive** expresses **intention** or **obligation** (still not fully lost in contemporary usage), as variant I, although an analytical tense form, has undoubtedly been derived from a modal construction of purpose.

In contrast, the construction with **kam + Infinitive** (when it is not accompanied by other indicators such as adverbs or the negative particles **s'** and **nuk**) expresses indetermination: **kam me-sjellë** 'I will bring (sometime)'. Variants of the type **do të sjell** are being favored in the contemporary literary language.

Notes

1. In Buzuku (1555), a simple Present Subjunctive occurs as a variant of the Future with Infinitive

ai qi ën tëje *ka me lëm*, shenjët *ka me u grishunë*
 ai qi ën tëje *te lindetë*, shenjët të greshitetë
 'id quod ex te nascitur, sanctum vocabitur'

2. In the southern Tosk dialects, the particle *te* of the Subjunctive in variant I of the Future is frequently eliminated. *do sjell* < *do të sjell*.

3. Arbëresh has its own analytical future, which is formally a combination of variants I and II, i.e. auxiliary verb *kam* + *Present Subjunctive* becomes the fixed form *kat* ~ *ket* + *Present Subjunctive*

u kat ~ ket qell	na kat ~ ket qellm(ë)
ti kat ~ ket qellsh	ju kat ~ ket qellm
ai kat ~ ket qell	ata kat ~ ket qellm(ë)

b) **The Future Perfect** (temporal degree 2), also called *futurum exactum*, stands structurally in correlation to the Perfect or perhaps rather to the Pluperfect Indicative and is rare in Albanian. It expresses a preexisting action in relation to the simple Future. Like the latter, it has two variants:

I. Future of the auxiliary verb **do të kem** or **do të jem** + **Participle** of the meaning-bearing verb: **do të kem sjellë** 'I will have brought' — **do të jem sjellë** 'I will have been brought'.

II. Future of the auxiliary verb constructed with the Infinitive **kam me pasë** + **Participle** of the meaning-bearing verb: **kam me pasë sjellë** or **kam për të pasë sjellë** 'I will have brought'.

183. The **modal verbs** (cf. complete conjugation, §172) may occur as auxiliary verbs in modal constructions in the following forms:

a) as **verbal particles**, such as **do** (from the Present 3 sg.) or **mund** (from the Present passive 3 sg.), etc.;

b) as **impersonals**, e.g. **duhet** (from the Present passive 3 sg.) or **mundet** (from the Present passive 3 sg.);

c) in fully conjugated form: **mundem** — **mundesh**, etc.

184. The **verbal particles** are used to constitute analytical tense forms, as well as aspectual and modal constructions:

a) **do** serves in the construction of, among others, the Future (variant I, § 182) and the Present and Preterite Conditional (cf. § 189). In the area of modality, **do + Participle** expresses **necessity** and may also be replaced by the impersonal form **duhet** (which is stylistically preferable):

do marrë para sysh or (*better*) duhet marrë para sysh
'it must be borne in mind'

b) **mund + Subjunctive** constitutes constructions of **possibility** or **intention**, e.g.:

<i>Present</i>	<i>Imperfect</i>
mund të vij 'I can come'	mund të vija 'I was able to come'
mund të vish	mund të vije
mund të vijë	mund të vinte
mund të vijnë	mund të vinim
mund të vini	mund të vinit
mund të vijnë	mund të vinin

c) **le + Present Subjunctive** constitute modal constructions with a **jussive** function. The particle **le** derives from the Imperative (2 sg.) of the verb **lë** (**lë**) 'I let, leave'. In various contexts, constructions of this type also express a wish or indifference. It usually occurs without the personal pronoun:

le të sjell 'I should bring'	le të sjellim
le të sjellësh	le të sillni
le të sjellë	le të sjellin

Notes

1. This analytical verbal construction, which may also be considered a mood approximating the Subjunctive or Optative, corresponds in a certain sense with the Arbëresh construction *kat ~ ket + Present Subjunctive*, i.e. the Future form *kat ~ ket fjerë* 'he has to sleep'. The Jussive of Common Albanian sometimes resembles the Causative constructions of Calabria Arbëresh, constructed with *bën + e + Participle*.

u bën e partirti mëma 'I make (my) mother travel'

2. It should also be noted that Arbëresh uses the auxiliary verbs *jam* and *kam* as particles or in conjugated form not only for the construction of analytical tense forms with aspectual function, but for the expression of modality as well, e.g. *ka vdekur* '(perhaps) he has died' (i.e. with the component of *probability*). (Cf. W. Breu, 'Forme verbali perifrastiche arbërisht' in *Etnia albanese e minoranze linguistiche in Italia*. Palermo, 1982)

185. The impersonal forms from **due** (**dua**) usually occur in the 3 sg. of the passive tense forms. They are divided here into three groups according to their manner of construction:

a) With personal marker (cf. § 127) **më-të-i**, etc. + **Subjunctive** = **necessity**

<i>Present</i>	<i>Aorist</i>
më duhet të vij	m'u desh të vij ~ vija
'I must come'	'I had to come'
të duhet të vish	t'u desh të vish ~ vije
i duhet të vijë	iu desh të vijë ~ vinte
na duhet të vijmë	na' u desh të vijmë ~ vinim
ju duhet të vini	ju u desh të vini ~ vinit
u duhet të vijnë	iu desh të vijnë ~ vinin

The meaning-bearing verb **të vij/të vija** may be replaced by the Infinitive in Geg without changing the modal component of necessity:

më duhet me ardhë 'I must come'	m'u desh me ardhë 'I had to come'
të duhet me ardhë, etc.	t'u desh me ardhë, etc.

b) **Impersonal** without marking of person + **Preterite Subjunctive** = **probability**:

duhet të kem qenë ne gjumë 'I must have been asleep'
duhej të isha në gjumë 'I should (probably) have been asleep'

c) **Impersonal Passive** + **Participle** or **Infinitive** = **necessity**:

duhet ardhë (ardhur) 'one must come'
u desh me ardhë 'one must have come'

Note

Lypet ~ *lipset* have the same semantic and modal function as the impersonal passive *due* (*dua*), but *lypet* ~ *lipset* may not replace all the inflectional forms of *duhet*. Cf. Buzuku (1555) *kam rangë* 'idem'.

186. The more completely the modal verbs are conjugated, the more semantic independence they achieve, i.e. their original meaning is strengthened:

- due** (**dua**) 'want, love; require' (active)
- duhem** 'am necessary, required' (passive)
- mund** 'vanquish' (active); am able
- mundem** 'can; am forced; am defeated' (passive)

The modal functions of these verbs are not dependent upon whether they are fully conjugated or not, but upon the sequence of their periphrastic constructions. As *quasi*-auxiliary verbs, they always come at the beginning: **conjugated modal verb** + **Subjunctive**, where **due** (**dua**) expresses **intention**:

unë due (dua) të vij 'I want to come'	na duem (ne duam) të vijmë
ti do(n) të vish	ju doni të vini
ai, ajo do të vijë	ata, ato donë të vijnë

and **mund** expresses **possibility**:

unë munda të vija	na (ne) mundëm të vinim
'I was able to come'	
ti munde të vije	ju mundët të vinit
ai, ajo mundi të vinte	ata, ato mundën të vinin

The reduced constructions or analytical tense forms, such as Future **do të vij** 'I will come', are derived from such fully conjugated forms.

187. The following rule will help clarify the use of the auxiliary verbs: all modal verbs, as well as **jam** 'I am' and **kam** 'I have', are generally conjugated before the indefinite verbal forms according to the pattern: **conjugated auxiliary verb + Infinitive or Participle**:

Future: kam-ke-ka, etc. + Infinitive (kam me ardhë ~ për të ardhur)

Perfect: kam-ke-ka, etc. + Participle (kam ardhë ardhur)

Thus, all finite, i.e. conjugated forms of **due** (**dua**) or **mund** may come before the infinitive, e.g.

Present Admirative

dashkam me ardhë 'I want to come!'
dashke me ardhë
dashka me ardhë
dashkemi me ardhë
dashkeni me ardhë
dashkan me ardhë

Present Indicative

mundem me u nisë 'I can depart'
mundesh me u nisë
mundet me u nisë
múndemi me u nisë
múndeni me u nisë
munden me u nisë

The essential character of the analytical verbal system lies in the fact that either the first member, i.e. the auxiliary verb, or the second member of the verbal construction is conjugated. The conjugation of the second member (the meaning-bearing verb) appears to be more characteristic of the southern Albanian dialects, as they do not have an original infinitive.

Vocabulary

shportë-a basket -a
botë-a world -na (-ra) hota
çashtje-a ~ *çëshhtje-a* question -∅
gjuhësi-a linguistics
Perëndi-a God
rrufë-a flu -a
konstrukt-i construction -e
orë muri wall clock *orë muresh*
pastërti-a cleanliness
pastrim-i cleaning, cleansing -e
ballkón-i balcony -e

minút-i minute -a
shef-i chief -a
zbulim-i discovery -e
letrár-i ~ *letror-i* literary man -ë
shkrimtar-i writer -ë
orvatje-a effort, endeavor -∅
sukull-i dustcloth, rag *sukuj*
jetë-a life -ë
valixhe-valixhja suitcase, trunk -∅
mbërritje-a arrival -∅
qetësi-a silence -∅

<i>fshehësi-a</i> secret -∅	<i>tehú</i> until now
<i>ankim-i</i> complaint, grievance -e	<i>akoma</i> yet, more, still
<i>pakujdesi-a</i> carelessness, neglect -∅	<i>ndërmjët të tjerave</i> among others
<i>mesnatë-a</i> midnight -a	<i>sikursë</i> as, like
<i>të afërm-it</i> pl. relatives	<i>kurdís</i> wind
<i>të dashur-it</i> pl. lovers, loved ones	<i>qes-qet</i> bring out
<i>anije-a</i> ship -∅	<i>pres-pret</i> wait
<i>urdhër-i</i> order -a	<i>marr me mend</i> assume, presume
<i>motór-i</i> motor -a	<i>kujtoj</i> remind, recall, think
<i>hartim-i</i> composition -e	<i>mbyll</i> shut
<i>dridhje-a</i> shivering, throbbing -∅	<i>luej (luaj)</i> play
<i>shkak-u</i> cause, reason <i>shkaqe</i>	<i>vetullój</i> shine
<i>kodër-kodra</i> hill <i>kodra</i>	<i>përgatis</i> prepare
<i>kuvertë-a</i> deck -a	<i>përshtëndës-përshtëndët</i> greet
<i>parashikim-i</i> prediction -e	<i>shuaj</i> put out, extinguish, shut off
<i>largësi-a</i> distance -∅	<i>pipëtiç</i> be silent
<i>milje-a</i> mile -∅	<i>sos</i> finish reach, achieve
<i>spirancë-a</i> anchor -a	<i>hedh</i> throw, launch
<i>Doktrina e Krështenë</i> Christian Doctrines	<i>përjashtëj</i> exclude, exempt, expel
<i>në gjuhët tonë</i> = <i>në gjuhën tonë</i>	<i>na bënte të heshtur</i> made us silent
<i>në jetët tonë</i> = <i>në jetën tonë</i>	<i>të shkruhet e të flitet</i> that it is written and spoken
<i>Atlantik-u</i> Atlantic Ocean	<i>i hyj punës</i> I begin work
<i>Mesdhë-u</i> Mediterranean	<i>për ta pastrue</i> in order to purify
<i>dies-i</i> learned man, savant -∅	<i>ka ndodhë (ndodhur)</i> it happened
<i>interesim-i</i> interest, concern -e	<i>janë kujdesë (kujdesur)</i> they were diligent, careful
<i>krahasim</i> comparison -e	<i>nuk e vritshin mendjen</i> they took no thought for
<i>arbnësh-e</i> Albanian (adj.)	<i>la shkret</i> left alone, forsaken
<i>të njohur-it</i> pl. acquaintances	<i>po prishej</i> was decaying
<i>i, e mundur (mundur)</i> possible	<i>po bdarej</i> was being lost
<i>i, e pastër</i> clean	<i>rrihen e bisedohen</i> it is discussed
<i>i, e huej (huaj)</i> foreign	<i>kanë çfaqë (shfaqur)</i> they dis- played, revealed
<i>i, e qëruem-e (qëruar)</i> cleaned, cleansed	<i>janë përpjekë (përpjekur)</i> they en- deavored
<i>i, e heshtur</i> silent	
<i>i, e hamundur</i> thoughtful	
<i>interesue (interesuar)</i> interested	
<i>atëherë</i> then	

Exercise 29

Një fjalë popullore thotë: kur shporta ka fiq, gjithë bota janë miq. Tek është dashuria, është vetë Perëndia. Kam qenë i sëmurrë. Çka keni pasur? Kisha rrufë dhe pak ethe. Tash jam më mirë. Qoftë e shkuar! Nuk po ec

ajó orë muri, ç'ka? Nuk po punón, duhet kurdisur. Eshtë dashur të vijë pranvera për të qitur lulet në ballkón. A mund të prisni pesë minuta? Tash po vjen shefi! Unë nuk kam qenë kurrë në Butrint, por e marr me mend se atjë do të jenë shumë zbulime të reja arkeologjike. Le ta dinë të gjithë — tha nusja — se nuk dua të luhet me mua si luan qeni me sukull.

Exercise 30

He can come any time. To be happy is a great thing. Tomorrow I will be near you. We are preparing the suitcases. Can I come to you tonight? Now I am closing the door and starting. Are you coming with us? Unfortunately, I cannot. I will wait a little more.

Text 15

Për pastërtinë e gjuhës shqipe

Nji nga çashtjet që rrihen e bisedohen shumë herë në gjuhësi është edhe ajó e pastrimit të gjuhës nga fjalë e nga konstrukte të hùeja. Letrorët e shkrimtarët e çdo gjuhe të botës janë interesue dhe përpjekë që gjuha e tyre të shkruhet e të flitet, sa është e mundun, e pastër dhe e qerúeme nga elemente të hùeja. Ky interesim për ta pastrue gjuhën nga fjalë e konstrukte jo shqipe ka ndodhë edhe në gjuhën tonë. Nuk duhet të kujtojmë se kjo orvatje e jona për gjuhën është nji gjá e ré në jetët tonë si popull. Kjo i ka të vjetra rranjat; për këtë pastrim të gjuhës janë kujdesë shkrimtarët tonë të hershëm qysh prej Budit e tehú, d.m.th. qysh prej shékullit 16. Budi në veprën e parë të tij, në Doktrinën e Krështenë, thotë ndërmjet të tjerave se i hyni punës së hartimit të kësáj vepre edhe nga shkaku se gjuha arbneshe (sikursé quhej atëherë gjuha shqipe) po prishej má fort nga pakujdesia e diësvet dhe të letrórëvet t'asáj kohe, të cilët, si duket, nuk e vritshin mendjen për punë të gjuhës, por e kishin lanë shkret, si thotë aty Budi. Gjithë këtë interesim e ankim se po bdarej, po prishej gjuha arbneshe prej fjalëvet të hùeja e kanë çfaqë edhe Frangu i Bardhë e Bogdani në veprat e veta.

(Aleksandër Xhuvani, 1956. *Vepra I*, Tiraná 1980)

Reading Exercise

Dy milje larg Dúrrësit

Dhe ja, më në fund Dúrrësi vezullonte nga larg; dritat e qytetit na përshëndetnin me atë qetësi dhe flohtësi që ka natyra pas mesnate: ishin dritat e të áfërmëve dhe të dáshurve tanë që i kishin sytë mbi anijen tonë.

U dha úrdhëri të shuhej motori kryesór, — tani punonte vetëm motori i dritave, me një zhurmë të lehtë, si një dridhje zemre. Dët nuk kishte.

Një erë e ngrohtë vinte nga kodrat e Dúrrësit. Të gjithë kishin dalë në kuvertë. Askush nuk pipëtinte. Kishin sosur parashikimet e pafund për orën e mbërritjes. Largësia prej dy miljesh, ku kishim hedhur spirancën, ishte e vogël në krahasim me largësinë e Atlantikut e të Mesdheut nga vinim, – por megjithatë, edhe kjo largësi e vogël na përjashtonte akoma nga familjet, nga të dëshurit e nga të njohurit tanë, e kjo gjë na bënte të heshtur e të hamendur.

(by Kiço Blushi, published in *Nëntori*, 5/1983)

Lesson 16 — Leksioni i gjashtëmbëdhjetë

The Verb (II)

The Moods and their Functions; Verb Classes; Active Conjugation

188. In contrast to the **Indicative**, the mood of concrete statement, the **Subjunctive** expresses a personal attitude on the part of the speaker: a possibility, a wish, an order, etc. Functionally, therefore, there exist close points of contact between modal verbs and the Subjunctive, whose tense forms tend rather to indicate components of modality than defined temporal degrees.

As mentioned above, the Subjunctive has four tenses (cf. § 163) which are constructed with the particle **të** (rarely **që të**) + synthetic or analytic tense forms.

a) The **Present Subjunctive** is a synthetic tense used in independent clauses, e.g. **të jetë si të jetë** 'come what may', or in dependent clauses, frequently governed by modal verbs, e.g. **mund të shkojë** 'he can go'. These tense forms, in independent clauses also, may be replaced by the Geg Infinitive in which there is a **deliberative** function:

Tosk: **ç'të bëj? Ku t'ia mbaj?** 'what should I do? Where should I go?'

Geg: **çka me bâ? Kah me ia mbajtë?** 'idem.'

Notes

1. The Present Subjunctive occurs, facultatively, without *të* in the older authors, particularly in negative clauses, e.g. Buzuku (1555):

përsë edhe mos vijnënë ëndë këto visët të munduome
'ne et ipsi veniant in hunc locum tormentorum'

On the other hand, *të* occurs regularly with the Jussive:

le të ëndiglónjënë ata 'audiant illos'

2. The prohibitive particle *mos* may occur before or after the *të* of the Subjunctive:

mos të vijë marre ~ të mos vijë marre 'you should not be embarrassed'

mos ta marrë vesh kush ~ të mos e marrë vesh kush 'no one should hear it'

The first construction is the one most used; the second is, however, also documented as a variant in the older authors, e.g. *Buzuku* (1555)

të mos flerë 'he should not sleep'

b) The **Imperfect Subjunctive** is constructed with **të + Imperfect Indicative**:

Kaceli nuk mund të delte për ditë në punë

'Kacel could not go to work every day'

In this case the Imperfect Subjunctive indicates an **impossibility** in the past. There is broader application of this tense form in the area of the Conditional.

c) The **Perfect** and **Pluperfect Subjunctive** are constructed with the Present Subjunctive of the auxiliary verbs **të kem** or **të jem + Participle** and with the Imperfect Subjunctive **të kisha** or **të isha + Participle** of the meaning-bearing verb:

Perfect: ai mund të ketë dalë herët nga shtëpia

'he could have left the house early'

Pluperfect: po të kishte dalë herët nga shtëpia, do ta dinim

'if he had left the house early, we would have known'

Note

The Subjunctive is often dependent on verbs which express either manner of action (aspect in a wider sense) such as *marr, nis, filloj* 'begin' (ingressive or initial component) + meaning-bearing verb, or *modalities*, such as *hâj (hëj)* 'make' + verb. In such cases, the Subjunctive and Infinitive forms alternate:

Present Subjunctive

drita filloi të dalë

'the (day)light began to appear'

Infinitive

drita filloi me dalë

'idem.'

189. The **Conditional** in Albanian has two tense forms:

Present = **do + Imperfect Subjunctive**: do të sillje 'I would bring'

Perfect = **do + Pluperfect Subjunctive**: do të kisha sjellë 'I would have brought'

These tense forms, formal extensions of the Future (variant I, § 182), are also called **Future Imperfect** and **Future Pluperfect**. They are, in fact, 'fictitious futures', dependent upon a hypothetical action expressed in the subordinate clause:

sikûr të kisha të holla, do të udhëtoja 'if I had money, I would travel'

i.e. *the travelling* (in the imagined future) is dependent upon *money*. Thus, the function of the Conditional may be fully clarified only on the syntactic level, i.e. in the correlation with a subordinate clause beginning with a conjunction of hypothesis: **si, sikûr, po**, etc., + Imperfect or Pluperfect Subjunctive:

sikûr hajni t'î kish qitë (qitur) mish qenit, ky s'do të kish lehë (lehur)

'if the thief had thrown meat to the dog, it would not have barked'

The hypothetical subordinate clause may also be replaced with a syntagm:
 pa urdhër të shefit, sekretari nuk do t'a kish firmuar shkresën
 'without the chief's order, the secretary would not have signed the document'.

Notes

1. The Geg Conditional is constructed with the Future variant II, i.e. the Infinitive form (cf. § 182).

<i>Present</i>	<i>Perfect</i>
kisha me sjellë	kisha me pasë sjellë
'I would bring'	'I would have brought'
kishe me sjellë, etc	kishe me pasë sjellë, etc.

In the Geg system, an Infinitive occurs in the subordinate clause:

me pasë të holla, kisha me udhetue 'if I had money, I would travel'

The Geg variants of the Conditional, just as the Infinitive and the Future constructed with it, are being repressed by the parallel forms described above, *do + Imperfect* and *Pluperfect Subjunctive*

2. Within the system of construction of the Arbëresh Future (*kat ~ ket + Present Subjunctive* *ket lanj* 'I will wash'), forms of the Conditional with *kat ~ ket + Imperfect* and *Pluperfect Subjunctive* are encountered in several Albanian dialects of southern Italy

Present *ket lanja* 'I would wash'
 Perfect *ket kinja larë* 'I would have washed'

In the Arbëresh dialects of Calabria, the Conditional is replaced by modal periphrastic forms with *mund + Imperfect* or *Pluperfect Subjunctive*:

mund ~ mënd qellnja 'I would bring' *mund kish qellur* 'I would have brought'

3. All Conditional forms (and, to some extent, the periphrastic forms of the Future too) of the three language variants originate in modal clauses; it is apparent that despite their assumption of the temporal function, they have never completely given up the function of modality.

190. The **Optative** is used primarily to express wishes or curses. It has two tenses:

- a) Present — synthetically constructed: *roftë paqja!* 'may peace live!'
- b) Perfect — Present Optative of the auxiliary verbs **qofsha** or **paça** +

Participle:

fëmija pastë lindë (lindur) me jetë të gjatë!

'may the child have been born with a long life! (wish for the newborn)

This mood is especially widely used in colloquial speech and in folk-literature with components of wishes for good or ill, as in the following verses in which a woman curses the mountains for the cruel deed her husband carried out there to their own child:

Në jù mâ kroje mos bunofshin
e shka janë, o krejt humbofshin,
zogjt e malit n'jù mos këndofshin!

May springs no longer flow in you
and may such as exist dry up,
may the mountain birds no longer
sing in you!

(Folksong)

As is apparent from these examples, the prohibitive particle **mos** 'not' is used before the Optative.

The Optative, like the Conditional, stands functionally in close relation to the Subjunctive. The latter sometimes replaces the Optative, as e.g.:

të rrojë paqja! 'may peace live!'

In conditional constructions, a **hypothetical potentiality** is expressed by **në + Optative** in a dependent clause:

në mos ardhtë sonte, s'vjen as nesër

'if he does not come this evening, he is not coming tomorrow either'

191. The **Admirative** is an unusual mood and is not easily integrated into the Albanian verbal system. It exhibits formal and functional relations with the Indicative, the mood of concrete statement, but differs from the Indicative in that the Admirative contains, aside from the observation of a concrete action, the feeling on the part of the speaker of surprise or wonder.

Surprise in the present, from the speaker's perspective, regarding an already completed action is formally expressed by means of a reversed Perfect Indicative:

Perfect Indicative

kam sjellë 'I have brought'

Present Admirative

sjellkam 'I bring!'

Word order inversion originally had an **emphatic function**; the auxiliary verb **kam** binds the action closer to the present and actualizes it. The aspectual component, achieved by the transfer in position of the auxiliary verb, should not be overlooked (cf. § 172).

Aside from wonder and surprise, the Albanian Admirative also expresses **reported** action and thus removes the speaker further from the statement made by a third person:

fshatari ankohet se nuk **paska** bukë në shtëpi

'the peasant complains that he does not have bread at home'

or there is an expression of irony which does not exclude report and surprise:

ani kush, fshatari s'na **paska** bukë në shtëpi

'just imagine (lit. just he), the peasant does not have bread at home!'

Beginning with the reversed Perfect, several moods and tense forms with various emphatic nuances of the Admirative have developed.

Notes

1. The Admirative is attested in Buzuku and other authors, in both Tosk and Geg, but does not appear in the dialects of the Southern Italian Albanians, where the function of the Perfect remains unclear (cf. § 181). The Admirative also occurs with the function of the narrative tense form, the *historical present*, very widely in folk literature. The following is an example from the folktale *Termeku* 'The Earthquake', collected in Shllaku, near Shkodra (northeast Geg), by M Lambertz:

E ky t-lujtun, qí *báka* (ba-ka) ky mzat, *tramke* (tramē-ke) shëkullin n-kater themelet, e ky të tramun e *çujkan* (çuj-kan) termeku.

'And this movement which the bull makes causes the universe to tremble on (its) four foundations, and this trembling is called the earthquake.'

(from *Albanische Marchen*, Vienna, 1922, p. 162)

2. The Admirative forms in the Subjunctive serve, in both older and modern writers, for the construction of hypothetical clauses where the connection with conditional clauses is normal.

të fryke era, s'kishim me ndeje jashtë

'if the wind were blowing, we would not sit outside'

192. Contemporary Albanian grammars give four tense forms for the Admirative:

- a) Present = **Participle** of the meaning-bearing verb + auxiliary verb **kam**:
sjellkam 'I bring!'
- b) Imperfect = **Participle** + **kisha** (auxiliary verb, Imperfect Indicative):
sjëllkësha 'I brought!'
- c) Perfect = auxiliary verb, **Present Admirative** + **Participle**:
paskam sjellë 'I have brought!'
- d) Pluperfect = auxiliary verb, **Imperfect Admirative** + **Participle**:
paskësha sjellë 'I had brought!'

Notes

1. According to the aspectual contrast *habitual/actual* the Present and Imperfect Admirative may be differentiated in the same manner as the respective forms of the Indicative (cf. §§ 179-180):

Present Admirative a) = sjellkam 'I bring!'

Present Admirative b) = po sjellkam 'I am bringing!'

Imperfect Admirative a) = sjëllkësha 'I brought!'

Imperfect Admirative b) = po sjëllkësha 'I was bringing!'

2. Kristoforidhi (1882) gives, besides the above tense forms:
— a Perfect II as an extension of the Perfect Admirative:
paskam pasë sjellë 'I have been bringing!';
— a Pluperfect II as an extension of the Pluperfect Admirative:
paskësham pasë kërkUARë 'I had been seeking!'

In terms of the verbal system, this type of construction is in line with the extension of the Perfect and Pluperfect Indicative (cf. § 181, Notes). Similarly, a Geg Future Admirative is attested: *paskam për të sjellë* 'I will bring!, I would

certainly bring!'. Further constructions by Kristoforidhi of the Admirative in the *Subjunctive*, however, appear problematic (it should be mentioned that Kristoforidhi was a renowned expert in Albanian and translated the Bible into both Tosk and Geg):

<i>Present</i> : të kërkúakam	<i>Imperfect</i> : të kërkúakëshe
<i>Perfect</i> : të pásëkam kërkúarë	<i>Pluperfect</i> : të páskëshe kërkúarë
<i>Perfect II</i> të pásëkam pasë kërkúarë	<i>Plupf. II</i> : të páskëshe pasë kërkúarë

The same forms of the Admirative in the *Subjunctive* occur in Kristoforidhi also with *do + të* (dotë) + *Present* or *Perfect*, etc.:

Present (Future a): do të kërkúakam 'I will seek!'
Perfect (Future b): do të pásëkam kërkúarë 'I will have sought!'
Perfect II (Future c): do të pásëkam pasë kërkúarë 'I will have been seeking'
Imperfect (Present Conditional): do të kërkúakëshe 'I would seek!', etc

The reconstruction of the full system is certainly exaggerated, individual forms may, however, occur in Albanian colloquial speech as *periphrastic constructions* (not yet morphologized).

193. The **Imperative** is used to express an order, a wish, advice or a request:

Ndajnju! Ku veni, burra?	Halt! Where are you going, men?
Pash Zotin, l'shoni hutat!	In God's name, leave your weapons.
Pse teper gjak ásht derdhun,	Too much blood has flowed,
Pse teper bajtë kem' futat.	Too long have we been wearing black.

(From Gj. Fishta's *Gjaksorvet* /'The Bloodshedders')

The Imperative has two persons: sg. 2 and pl. 2: **shko** 'go!' (sg. 2) – **shkoni** 'go!' (pl. 2.).

In addition, the sg. 2 frequently occurs in the function of an historical present for all three persons, singular and plural:

lëshó-një punë, merr një tjetër; kështú e humbi ditën
 'he loses one job, takes another; thus he loses the day'

The Jussive with **le + Present Subjunctive** or simply the **Present Subjunctive** are used for polite forms of the Imperative:

le të bini me vete edhé qentë *or* të bini me vete edhé qentë
 '(please,) bring the dogs too!'

194. The **non-finite forms of the verb** are those which are not conjugated with respect to person, number, mood, tense and voice. As already indicated (cf. §161), they exhibit a formal and functional affinity with adjectives and nouns.

They are, then, themselves uninflected forms which build, either alone or in compound, analytical morphological units and they occupy a special place in the Albanian verbal system. It has been established that the non-finite parts of the verb serve not only for the construction of the classic tense forms, such as the Preterite, but also to mark components in the modal area.

195. The Participle, as an uninflected verbal form, is meaning-bearing in itself and in its morphological compositions. It constructs:

- a) **finite tense forms** in which the auxiliary verbs mark the grammatical categories (time, voice and person) (cf. §§ 181-182, 189, etc.);
- b) **non-finite forms** such as variants of the Infinitive and Gerund.

Notes

1. The Participle often occurs by itself in the function of an adjective which, in each individual, concrete case, is derived from it (cf. § 75):

fjeti veshe e ngjeshe *or* fjeti i veshun e i ngjeshun
 'he slept dressed and girded (with a sword)'

2. A Participle in *-t(ë)*, in fossilized form, occurs in a predicative function with auxiliary verbs and verbs of state (cf. § 290):

rri rate 'lie, remain lying'
 jam çuet 'am awake' (cf. Arbëresh *zguat* 'idem')

196. In the normalized official language, the following **variants** of the **Infinitive** exist:

- a) Privative = particle **pa** 'without' + **Participle**:

qëndruan një copë herë pa folur
 'they remained for a time without speaking'

Such Infinitives stand in dependence upon verbs of state, such as **qëndroj** 'remain', **rri** 'sit', **jam** 'am', **kam** 'have', etc. In colloquial speech they occur in conditional constructions:

pa ngrënë hudhra, s'të vjen erë goja
 'without eating garlic, the mouth does not smell'

- b) **me të** or **me një të** + **Participle** has an ingressive or inchoative function; hence it may be replaced by an Aorist:

me t'u hapur dera, të gjithë kthyen kryet andëj
or sa u hap dera, të gjithë kthyen kryet andëj
 'as soon as the door opened, all turned their heads that way'

- c) **për të** '(in order) to' + **Participle** = purposive function:

kemi edhe shumë punë për të bërë 'we still have much work to do'

197. The Geg Infinitive is constructed with the particle **me** + **Participle** in the Present and with **me** + **Participle** of the auxiliary verbs **pasë** 'having had' and **qenë** 'having been' in the Perfect:

me sjellë 'to bring' — me pasë sjellë 'to have brought'

In subordinate clause it may replace the Subjunctive and it also constructs the following tense forms:

Future: kam me sjellë 'I will bring'

Future Perfect: kam me pasë sjellë 'I will have brought'

Present Conditional: kisha me sjellë *or* pata me sjellë 'I would bring'

Perfect Conditional: kisha (*or* pata) me pasë sjellë 'I would have brought'

Notes

1. There are no derived forms of Infinitives a) and b) in § 196. These are deverbal nouns which have taken over a verbal function in the active or passive.
2. The variant *për të + Participle*, of Tosk origin, has a restricted, i.e. only purposive, function. It constructs the same tense forms as does the variant *me + Participle* and in addition to tense values, indicates modal components of necessity or firm intention:

Future: kam për të sjellë 'I have to bring'

Future Perfect: kam për të pasë sjellë 'I will have had to bring'

Present Conditional: kisha (*or* pata) për të sjellë 'I would (certainly) bring'

Perfect Conditional: kisha (*or* pata) për të pasë sjellë 'I would (certainly) have brought'

198. The **Gerund** is constructed with **tue (duke) + Participle**:

Present: tue (duke) sjellë 'bringing'

Perfect: tue (duke) pasë sjellë 'having brought'

In terms of aspect, the Gerund corresponds to the Present b) and Imperfect b) (cf. § 178), particularly in the compounds constructed with the auxiliary verb **jam** or **isha** + **Present Gerund**:

ai ishte tue (duke) sjellë dy kuaj për dore = ai po sillte dy kuaj për dore
'he was leading two horses with (his) hand'

The Gerund may have various functions, as e.g. an action contemporaneous with that of the main clause:

duke u nisur, harroi në shtëpi portafolin
'going out, he forgot his wallet at home'

It also replaces hypothetical phrases in dependence upon a conditional clause:

do të kishe humbë (humbur) drejtimin tue ecë (duke ecur) nëpër mal
'you (sg.) would have lost your orientation going through the mountains'

Note

The Gerund in Arbëresh is constructed in the same manner: *tue ~ ture qellur* 'bringing'. In many cases it is replaced by Present b): *jam e qell* 'I am bringing'.

199. In negative constructions, both the Gerund and the Infinitive variants are provided with the prohibitive article **mos**:

duke **mos** u kujdesuar për pastërtinë e ujit, dëmtojmë vetveten
'not being concerned about the purity of the water, we harm ourselves'

200. In this section, the **categories of verbal inflection** will be described:

- a) with respect to the constitution of the **verbal classes** according to Present, Aorist and Participle stems;
- b) with respect to the **conjugation** according to tense forms in the active voice. The same morpho-phonological alternations as described in § 166, and various other formants and affixes are valid for the morphological differentiations. The Albanian conjugation, then, includes — aside from the constitution of the verbal classes — the formation of the passive and its conjugations.

201. Using the Present stem as a point of departure, the Albanian verb falls into **two classes**:

1. Verbs in a stem vowel: **punój** 'work'
2. Verbs in a stem consonant: **hap** 'open'

202. **Class I** is divided into **3 subclasses**:

- a) Verbs with stems in **o** or **ue (ua)** and (unnasalized) **e** or **ye**. They construct the Aorist with the affix **-v-**, attached to the stem vowel, while the diphthongized form occurs in the Participle:

<i>Present</i>	<i>Aorist</i>	<i>Participle</i>	<i>Altern.</i>
jetój 'live'	jetova	jetue (jetuar)	o/ue (ua)
dërgój 'send'	dërgova	dërgue (dërguar)	o/ue (ua)
besój 'believe'	besova	besue (besuar)	o/ue (ua)
banój 'dwell'	banova	banue (banuar)	o/ue (ua)
bashkój 'unite'	bashkova	bashkue (bashkuar)	o/ue (ua)
shkruej (shkruej) 'write'	shkrova	shkrue (shkruar)	ue (ua)/o
rruej (rruaj) 'shave'	rrova	rrue (rruar)	ue (ua)/o
paguej (paguaj) 'pay'	pagova	pague (paguar)	ue (ua)/o
dëfrēj 'amuse'	dëfreva	dëfrye (dëfryer)	e/ye
rrëfēj 'tell'	rrëfeva	rrëfye (rrëfyer)	e/ye
gënjēj 'lie'	gënjeva	gënjye (gënjyer)	e/ye
thej ~ thyej 'break'	theva	thye (thyer)	e/ye
kryej 'complete'	kreva	krye (kryer)	ye/e
lyej 'smear'	leva	lye (lyer)	ye/e
shqyej (G. shkyej) 'rip'	shqeva (shkjeva)	shqye (shqyer) (shkye)	ye/e; k/kj

Two verbs which demonstrate accent shift in the diphthong should also be placed in this group:

ndiej 'feel'	ndjeva	ndie (ndier)	ie/je
ziej 'cook'	zjeva	zie (zier)	ie/je

Several verbs in **e** (unnasalized, unable to diphthongize) and **a, i, y** (unnasalized) belong in this group as well:

çaj 'split'	çava	çá (çarë)
ndaj 'divide'	ndava	ndá (ndarë)
laj 'wash'	lava	lá (larë)
pi 'drink'	piva	pí (pirë)
fshij 'sweep'	fshiva	fshí (fshirë)
ndyj 'soil'	ndyva	ndý (ndyrë)
blej 'buy'	bleva	blé (blerë)

Notes

Another characteristic of this subclass with the Aorist in **-v-** is the ending of the Participle which was *-m(ê)* in Old Geg:

1. Old Geg *menduum* > *menduem* > *mëndue* 'thought', *lamë* ~ *lá* 'washed'. The disappearance of *-mê* after an undiphthongized stem vowel caused a compensatory lengthening of that vowel; thus the Geg verbal system sometimes exhibits the morphemic contrast *long short*.

Participle blé [blē] 'bought' - Imperative 2 sg. blē! 'buy!'

2. In Arbëresh, *-m(ê)* is used as the formant for nominalized Participles or abstracts: *të shkruam* 'the writing', *të mpsuam* 'the learning'.
3. The Tosk Participle ending *-rë* (< *-në*) is also generalized in this subclass. In Buzuku, the variant *-në* occurs, however, after undiphthongized stem vowels: *hlenë* 'bought', *panë* 'seen' *lenë* 'born'

b) This subclass comprises verbs with the Aorist in **-n-** (Tosk **-r-**). In Geg, the nasal occurs in the Present and Participle stem:

<i>Present</i>	<i>Aorist</i>	<i>Participle</i>
bāj (běj) 'make'	bana (bëra)	bâ (bërë)
fshāj 'sigh'	fshana	fshâ
pëgāj (pëgēj) 'stain'	pëgana (pëgëra)	pëgâ (pëgërë)
vrāj (vrěj) 'dim'	vrana (vrëra)	vrâ (vrërë)
rrēj 'lie'	rrena ~ rrëjta	rrê ~ rrëjtë
shkrīj (shkrij) 'melt'	shkrina (shkrira)	shkrî (shkrirë)
shtrīj (shtrij) 'spread out'	shtrina (shtrira)	shtrî (shtrirë)
frīj (frij) 'blow'	fryna (fryra)	frý (fryrë)
hīj (hyj) 'enter'	hyna (hyra)	hÿ (hyrë)

Subclass b) is not numerous, as the nasal verbs always tend to pass over into subclass a) and, especially, into subclass c).

Notes

1. Several irregular verbs with apophonic zero-grade (cf. § 105) belong to the old category of nasal verbs, among these are:

<i>Present</i>	<i>Aorist</i>	<i>Participle</i>
vê (vê) 'place'	vuna (vura)	vû (vënë)
zâ (zê) 'seize'	zuna (zura)	zanë (zënë)
lâ (lê) 'let, leave'	lashë (â-ê a)	lanë (lënë)

arënj 'arrive' (Arb)	arura	arurë ~ arënë
shpie 'carry'	shpuna (shpura)	shpunë (shpënë)
shtie 'put in'	shtina (shtira)	shti (shtënë)

2. As mentioned in the section on Phonology, there are also long and short nasal vowels (cf. §9). Among few cases of relevance, cf [vë] 'I place' -- [vë!] 'place!' (Imperative 2 sg)

c) This subclass comprises verbs in a stem vowel whose Aorist and Participle are formed with **-t-**; they thus come halfway under the category of **t-** verbs (cf. § 205):

<i>Present</i>	<i>Aorist</i>	<i>Participle</i>
gjej 'find'	gjeta	gjetë (gjetur)
brej 'gnaw'	brejta	brejtë (brejtur)
mbaj 'hold, keep'	mbajta	mbajtë (mbajtur)
di 'know'	dita	ditë (ditur)

There was and still is a tendency for verbs in a stem vowel of subclasses a) and b) to pass over into this verbal category, hence doublets are unavoidable:

mbroj 'defend'	mbrojta	mbrojtë (mbrojtur)
rroj 'live'	rrojta	rrojtë (rrojtur)
prej 'cut'	prejta ~ preva	prë (prerë)
vërej 'observe'	vërejta	vërejtë ~ vërejtë (vërejtur)
vuej (vuaj) 'suffer'	vúejta (vúajta)	vúejtë (vúajtur)
luej (luaj) 'play'	lúejta (lúajta)	lúejtë (lúajtur)
quaj (quaj) 'name'	qúejta (qúajta)	qúejtë (qúajtur)
arrij 'arrive'	arrijta	arrijtë (arrijtur)
teshtij 'sneeze'	teshtijta ~ teshtiva	teshtijtë (teshtitur)

Notes

- The assimilation of this subclass to the *t*-verbs is quite striking also in that Aorist and Participle have the same stem. The fact may not be clarified on purely formal grounds, but on the level of morphological function, that the 1st and 2nd conjugations have become strongly mixed at precisely this point.
- The following irregular verbs belong to subclass c) as well:

flëj ~ fle 'sleep'	fjeta	fjetë (fjetur)
ngre 'lift'	ngrita	ngritë (ngritur)
- It should be noted that the Participle endings *-m(ë)* < **-mo* and *-në (-rë)* < **-no* are found in Verbal Class 1. The old **-to* formant for the Albanian participle is found only in fixed forms, such as *ratë* (ra-të) 'lying', *çuet* (çue-t) 'awake' from *çoj prej gumit* 'I awake from sleep'. Their alternation was originally made on the basis of morphological function.

203. **Verbal Class 2** or the **2nd Conjugation** comprises verbs ending in a stem consonant in the Present sg. 1, 2 and 3; they are thus also denoted as the zero class. They are divided into two main groups:

I. Verbs whose roots do not undergo any change or modification in the tense forms or conjugation, such as:

<i>Present</i>	<i>Aorist</i>	<i>Participle</i>
sos 'complete'	sosa	sosë (sosur)
mat 'measure'	mata	matë (matur)
preh (mbreh) 'sharpen'	preha (mbreha)	mbrehë ~ prehë (mbrehur)
vendôs 'place; decide'	vendosa	vendosë (vendosur)

Note

Also included in this group are *ik* ~ *ikt* 'flee', *hup* ~ *hupt* 'climb', *ec* ~ *ect* 'walk, go'.

II. Verbal groups ending in a consonant whose verb roots are changed or modified in inflection through apophony, metaphony, diphthongization, palatalization and assibilation (cf. § 167).

204. Verbal group II is divided into 3 subclasses:

a) Verbs with simple **apophony** in the basic form:

<i>Present</i>	<i>Aorist</i>	<i>Alternation</i>	<i>Participle</i>
hedh (G. <i>hjedh</i>) 'throw'	hodha	e/o	hjedhë (hedhur)
breth 'hop, play'	brodha	e/o	bredhë (bredhur)
mbledh 'collect'	mblodha	e/o	mbledhë (mbledhur)
dredh 'twist, turn'	drodha	e/o	dredhë (dredhur)
zgjedh 'choose'	zgjodha	e/o	zgjedhë (zgjedhur)
vjedh 'steal'	vodha	je/o	vjedhë (vjedhur)
rjep 'flay'	ropa	je/o	rjepë (rjepur)
rrjedh 'flow'	rrodha	je,o	rrjedhë (rrjedhur)
vjel 'reap'	vola	je/o	vjelë
mbjell 'sow'	mbolla	je/o	mbjellë
sjell 'bring'	solla	je/o	sjellë
dal 'come out'	dola	a/o	dalë

b) Verbs which exhibit both **apophony** and **consonant change** in the basic form:

<i>Present</i>	<i>Aorist</i>	<i>Alternation</i>	<i>Participle</i>
pjek 'bake'	poqa	je/o:k,q	pjekë (pjekur)
djeg 'burn'	dogja	je/o:g/gj	djegë (djegur)
hjek ~ heq 'pull'	hoqa	je ~ e/o:k/q	hjekë (hequr)
nxjerr 'pull out, take out'	nxora	je/o:rr/r	nxjerrë
vjerr 'hang up'	vora	je/o:rr/r	vjerrë
bjerr 'lose'	bora	je/o:rr:r	bjerrë
marr 'take'	mora	a'o:rr'r	marrë

In this subclass, the Present and Participle exhibit the same basic form. The verbs ending in **-rr** have Participle variants in Tosk: **nxjerrë ~ nxjerrur**.

Notes

- 1 The *e o* apophony, as has been mentioned (cf. § 105, Notes), is a qualitative ablaut grade which has been derived from a quantitative grade *e:è*:
Present. *marr* < **mer-nia* Aorist *mora* < **mēr-A*
- 2 The contrast *rr,r* is explained historically by the fact that in the basic form of the Present an assimilation *-rn- -rr-* has occurred, as is seen in the above example *marr* < **mer-nto*.
3. The contrast *l'll*, as in Present *dal* Aorist *dolla*, is attested only in Tosk. In many Arbëresh dialects there is a contrast *j l* in the same position: Present *daj* 'come out' Aorist *dola*

c) This subclass includes the verbs that are usually called **t-verbs**; their main characteristic is **assibilation**, i.e. the change **t/s**. They are divided, in turn, into two groups: Group 1 comprises those verbs which have only assibilation:

<i>Present</i>	<i>Aorist</i>	<i>Alternation</i>	<i>Participle</i>
<i>avis</i> 'approach'	<i>avita</i>	s t	<i>avitë</i> (<i>avitur</i>)
<i>kalis</i> 'temper, forge'	<i>kalita</i>	s t	<i>kalitë</i> (<i>kalitur</i>)
<i>këpús</i> 'pick, snap off'	<i>këputa</i>	s,t	<i>këputë</i> (<i>këputur</i>)
<i>mbys</i> 'kill'	<i>mbyta</i>	s,t	<i>mbytë</i> (<i>mbytur</i>)
<i>kullós</i> 'pasture'	<i>kullota</i>	s,t	<i>kullotë</i> (<i>kullotur</i>)
<i>pyes</i> 'ask'	<i>pýeta</i>	s,t	<i>pýetë</i> (<i>pýetur</i>)

Group 2 exhibits, aside from assibilation, the vowel change **a ~ e/i** in Present/Aorist with the same function as apophony:

<i>zbres</i> 'descend'	<i>zbrita</i>	s t:e i	<i>zbritë</i> (<i>zbitur</i>)
<i>shes</i> 'sell'	<i>shita</i>	s,t:e i	<i>shitë</i> (<i>shitur</i>)
<i>qes</i> 'take out'	<i>qita</i>	s,t:e,i	<i>qitë</i> (<i>qitur</i>)
<i>trokás</i> 'knock at a door'	<i>trokita</i>	s/t:a/i	<i>trokitë</i> (<i>trokitur</i>)
<i>përkás</i> 'touch'	<i>përkita</i>	s/t:a/i	<i>përkitë</i> (<i>përkitur</i>)
<i>gërthás</i> 'shout'	<i>gërthita</i>	s/t:a/i	<i>gërthitë</i> (<i>gërthitur</i>)

Note

There is a small group of verbs which belong in the Present to the *t*-verbs and in the Aorist to Verbal Class 1; they thus contrast symmetrically with the type *gjej-gjeta* (cf. § 202, b):

<i>Present</i>	<i>Aorist</i>	<i>Alternation</i>	<i>Participle</i>
<i>vras</i> 'kill'	<i>vrava</i>	s/∅	<i>vrá</i> (<i>vvarë</i>)
<i>pres</i> 'cut'	<i>preva</i>	s/∅	<i>prë</i> (<i>prerë</i>)
<i>ngas</i> 'excite'	<i>ngava</i>	s/∅	<i>ngá</i> (<i>ngarë</i>)
<i>shkas</i> 'slide'	<i>shkava</i>	s/∅	<i>shká</i> (<i>shkarë</i>)

It is apparent that the basic form of these verbs is the Aorist and that the Present stem is augmented by the ending *s/t* in the inflection as well. The following irregular verbs which belong to this category exhibit their basic form as the Aorist, although without the *t*-augmentation:

<i>Present</i>	<i>Aorist</i>	<i>Participle</i>
flas 'speak'	fola	folë (folur)
shklas 'walk, tread'	shkela	shkelë
këllás 'insert'	kalla	kallë
humbás 'lose'	humba	humbë (humbur)
bërtás 'shout'	bríta	brítë (britur)
thërrás 'summon, call'	thirra	thirrë
gërshás 'invite'	grisha (Buzuku)	grishë (grishur)

In the contemporary language situation, a mixing of verbal systems has occurred, in an older phase, attested by authors and by peripheral dialects, it may be clearly recognized that the augment of the Present by *t s* had a morphological function which expressed aspect (in the wider sense):

Present: këllás 'insert' = *inchoative* (i.e. the gradual beginning of an action) in contrast to *Aorist*: kalla 'inserted' = *ingressive* (i.e. the sudden start of an action). The irregular verb *vdes* (v-des) 'die' demonstrates this contrast very well:

Present: vdes < *v-det-iō < *v-dekt-iō (basic form -dek-) = inchoative, i.e. actual aspect

Aorist: vdiqa = ingressive, i.e. perfective-punctual aspect

Participle: vdekë (vdekur)

205. **Conjugation** is to be understood here as the inflection of the Verbal Classes according to number and person. The Verbal Classes (cf. §201) are thus only partially identified with the **1st Conjugation in a stem vowel** and the **2nd Conjugation in a stem consonant**, indicating that the subdivision of both categories (i.e. Verbal Classes and Conjugations) often derive from one another. On this basis, the subdivisions of the Conjugation will be called **subgroups** in order to differentiate them from the **subclasses** of the Verbal classes.

206. The 1st Conjugation and 2nd Conjugation, as an independent category, is divided into two main groups:

- a) Conjugation of the synthetic tense forms
- b) Conjugation of the analytic tense forms

The analytic tense forms do not exhibit any structural differences in their conjugation. For that reason, they will not be treated separately, but will be presented in the complete paradigm, together with the synthetic tense forms, in Lesson 19.

The following sections will deal in detail with the conjugation of the synthetic tense forms, as these present complicated inflectional structures.

207. Synthetic conjugation forms are derived from all three verbal stems:

	Present Stem	Aorist Stem	Participle Stem
Indicative	Present & Imperfect	Aorist	
Subjunctive	Present & Imperfect		
Imperative	Present		
Optative		Present	
Admirative			Present & Imperfect

Note

Verbs ending in *-as* of the type *flas fola* 'speak spoke' (cf. §204; Note on subclass c) construct the Imperative from the Aorist stem, which is the basic form of this category

208. The 1st Conjugation has the following subgroups in the **Present** system:

- Verbs in (unnasalized) vowels and in the diphthongs **ue (ua)**, **ye** and **ie** + **-j**, which do not exhibit stem changes;
- Verbs in a vowel without end-morpheme, with or without stem changes (mainly Tosk);
- Verbs in a nasal vowel (in Geg, cf. §202, subclass b).

209.

Present Indicative

- Examples of the **a) subgroup** conjugation

End-morphemes: **-j -n -n -jmë -ni -në**

jetój	brej	çaj	kruej	kryej	ziej
'live'	'gnaw'	'split'	'scratch'	'fulfil'	'cook'
jetón	bren	çan	kruen	kryen	zien
jetón	bren	çan	kruen	kryen	zien
jetojmë	brejmë	çajmë	krúejmë	kryejmë	ziejmë
jetoni	breni	çani	krúeni	kryeni	zieni
jetojnë	brejnë	çajnë	krúejnë	kryejnë	ziejnë

A few verbs in **e** alternate with **i** in the 2 pl.: *blej* 'buy' — *blini* 'you (pl.) buy'.

- Examples of the **b) subgroup** conjugation

Branch I: without stem alternation (Common Albanian)

Branch II: with stem alternation (Tosk)

End-morphemes: **-∅ -∅ -∅ -më -ni -në**

Alternations:		<i>ë/i</i>	<i>ë/ji</i>	<i>ë/ji</i>
I. ha	pi	II. zë	vë	lë
'eat'	'drink'	'seize'	'place'	'leave'
ha	pi	zë	vë	lë
ha	pi	zë	vë	lë
hamë	pimë	zëmë	vëmë	lëmë
hani	pini	zini	vini	lini
hanë	pinë	zënë	vënë	lënë

3. Examples of the **c) subgroup** conjugationEnd-morphemes: **-j -θ -n -n -(j)më -ni -(j)në**

Alternations:		<i>e/i</i>	<i>â/ê</i>	<i>â/ê</i>
bâj (běj)	flej ~ fle	zâ	vê	lâ
'make'	'sleep'	'seize'	'place'	'leave'
ban (bën)	flen ~ fle	zen	ven	len
ban (bën)	flen ~ fle	zen	ven	len
bâjmë (bějme)	flejmë ~ flemë	zamë	vemë	lamë
bani (bëni)	fleni ~ flini	zeni	veni	leni
bâjnë (bëjnë)	flejnë ~ flenë	zanë	venë	lanë

210.

*Present Subjunctive*1. Examples of the **a) subgroup** conjugationPrepositive particle: **të**End-morphemes: **-j -sh -jë -jmë -ni -jnë**

të jetój	të brej	të çaj	të kryej	të ziej
'that I live'	'that I gnaw'	'that I split'	'that I fulfil'	'that I cook'
të jetósh	të bresh	të çash	të kryesh	të ziesh
të jetojë	të brejë	të çajë	të kryejë	të ziejë
të jetojmë	të brejmë	të çajmë	të kryejmë	të ziejmë
të jetoni	të breni	të çani	të kryeni	të zieni
të jetojnë	të brejnë	të çajnë	të kryejnë	të ziejnë

NoteOld Geg: *të jetónj-të jetósh-të jetón-të jetojmë-të jetoni-të jetojnë*2. Examples of the **b) subgroup** conjugationPrepositive particle: **të**End-morphemes: I. **-θ -sh -jë -më -ni -në**II. **-θ -sh ~ ç -rë -më -ni -në**

Alternations:		<i>ë/i</i>	<i>ë/i</i>	<i>ë/i</i>
I. të pi	të ha	II. të zë	të vë	të lë
'that I drink'	'that I eat'	'that I seize'	'that I place'	'that I leave'
të pish	të hash	të zësh ~ zëç	të vësh ~ vëç	të lësh ~ lëç

të pijë	të hajë	të zërë	të vërë	të lërë
të pimë	të hamë	të zëmë	të vëmë	të lëmë
të pini	të hani	të zini	të vini	të lini
të pinë	të hanë	të zënë	të vënë	të lënë

The verbs **bie** 'bring' and **shtie** 'insert' construct the 3 sg. in the same manner as the above Branch II: **të bjerë** 'that he brings', **të shtjerë** 'that he inserts'.

Note

In Arbëresh, *-r-* appears also in the 2 sg. of Branch II:

të vë — të vësh të vërë të vëmë të vëni — të vënë

i.e. without the alternation *ë* *ɪ*.

3. Examples of the **c) subgroup** conjugation

Prepositive particle: **të**

End-morphemes: **-j ~ -θ -sh -jë -(j)më -ni -(j)në**

Alternations: *á é* *á' é'*

të báj (běj)	të zâ	të lâ	të vë
'that I make'	'that I seize'	'that I leave'	'that I place'
të bâsh (bësh)	të zâsh	të lâsh	të vësh
të bájë (bějë)	të zâjë	të lâjë	të vëjë
të bájëmë (bějëmë)	të zamë	të lamë	të vemë
të bani (bëni)	të zeni	të leni	të veni
të bájñë (bějñë)	të zanë	të lanë	të venë

211. The **Imperfect** is divided into two subgroups:

a) Verbs without stem changes;

b) Verbs which exhibit alternations between the Present and Imperfect.

For the Imperfect stem in these cases, the Present 2 pl. stem is taken:

Present

1 sg. lë — 2 pl. lini

1 sg. lâ — 2 pl. leni

Imperfect

lija 'I left'

lësha 'idem.'

1. Examples of the **a) subgroup** conjugation

End-morphemes: **-je -je -nte -nim -nit -nin** (common Albanian)

-sha -she -nte -shim -shit -shin (Geg)

<i>Common Albanian</i>	<i>Geg</i>	<i>Common Albanian</i>	<i>Geg</i>
jetoja 'lived'	jetosha 'idem.'	zëja 'cooked'	zëshja 'idem.'
jetoje	jetoshe	zëje	zëshje
jetonte	jetonte	zënte	zëshnte
jetonim	jetoshim	zënim	zëshnim
jetonit	jetoshit	zënit	zëshnit
jetonin	jetoshin	zënin	zëshnin

2. Examples of the **b) subgroup** conjugation

<i>Common Albanian</i>	<i>Geg</i>	<i>Common Albanian</i>	<i>Geg</i>
flija 'slept'	flêsha 'idem.'	lija 'left'	lêsha 'idem.'
flije	flêshe	lije	lêshe
flinte	flente	linte	lente
flinim	flêshim	linim	lêshim
flinit	flêshit	linit	lêshit
flinin	flêshin	linin	lêshin

Notes

1. Common Albanian is the term used for the first stage of the variant attested in the older authors (see below) and utilized in all the dialects of the language. The following are the four known forms of the Imperfect from this stage:

<i>Buzuku</i> (1555)	<i>Da Lecce</i> (1716)	<i>Old Tosk</i>	<i>Arbëresh</i>
banjë 'made'	këndónjete 'sang'	martonjë 'married'	çanja 'split'
banje	këndonje	martonje	çanje
banji ~ bani	këndont	marton	çai ~ çanej
banjmë	këndónjimë	martónjëmë	çajm
banjitë	këndónjitë	martónjëtë	çajt ~ çajit
banjinë	këndónjinë	martónjënë	çajnë ~ çajin

2. The end-morphemes of the above four variants of the Imperfect are:

Buzuku (1555). -një -nje -nji ~ ni -njimë -njitë -njinë
Da Lecce (1716): -njete -nje -ont -njimë -njitë -njinë
Old Tosk. -një -nje -n -njëmë -njëtë -njene
Arbëresh: -nja -nje -i -jim -jitë ~ jit -jnë ~ jin

3. The end-morphemes of the Geg Imperfect according to Kristoforidhi (1882) are:

-(j)shem -(j)she -nte ~ te -(j)shim -(j)shit -(j)shin

212. The Imperfect Subjunctive is constructed with the prepositive particle **të** + the representative forms of the Imperfect Indicative.

213. The **Imperative of the 1st Conjugation** is constructed in three ways:

- a) Present stems in **-o -e -y** and **-i** remain unchanged in the 2 sg. and do not undergo any stems changes in the 2 pl.:

jetó [jetô] 'live!' - jetoni	hÿ 'enter!' — hyni
bre [brë] 'gnaw!' — breni	shkrÿ 'melt!' — shkrini

To this group also belong verbs in a vowel, without **-j** augment, such as **ha** [hã] 'eat!' — **hani**, **pÿ** [pÿ] 'drink' — **pini** (Regarding the short vowels, see § 202, No. 1).

b) Present stem in **-ie**: these few verbs such as **bie** 'bring', **shtie** 'insert' augment the stem through **-r** in the 2 sg.; in the 2 pl. they exhibit the alternation with **-i**. Verbs of the type **zë** 'seize' belong to this group as well (cf. § 209, 2. Branch II):

bjer 'bring!' — bini (altern. je i) shtjer 'insert!' — shtini (je/i)
 zër 'seize!' — zini (altern. ë i) vër 'place!' — vini (ë/i)

c) Present stems in diphthongs **-ue (-ua) -ie -ye + -j** augment and, consequently, verbs in **-aj** and **-uj** remain unchanged in the 2 sg.:

<i>Present</i>	<i>Imperative</i>	<i>Present</i>	<i>Imperative</i>
shkruaj 'write'	shkruaj	shkrúani	ziej 'cook'
kryej 'fulfil'	kryej — krýeni	mbruj 'knead'	ziej — zieni
			mbruj — mbruni

214. From the **Aorist stem** the Aorist and Present Optative are constructed (cf. § 207).

215. The Aorist Conjugation is divided into three subgroups:

- Verbs in **-a -i -y -ie** and **-e** (which cannot be diphthongized) + **-v**-augment, which is eliminated in the 3 sg. and in all persons of the plural;
- Verbs in a vowel + **-n- (-r-)**, which is eliminated in the plural;
- Verbs in **-o** or **-e** + **-v-** augment. These are diphthongized in the plural: **o > ue (ua)**, **e > ye**. The augment **-v-** is eliminated in the 3 sg. and in all persons of the plural.

1. Examples of the **a) subgroup** conjugation

End-morphemes: **-v + a -v + e -u** pl. **-m(ë) -t(ë) -n(ë)**

çava 'split'	piva 'drank'	zjeva 'cooked'	bleva 'bought'	ndyva 'soiled'
çave	pive	zjeve	bleve	ndyve
çau	piu	zjeu	bleu	ndyu
çamë	pimë	ziem	blemë	ndymë
çatë	pitë	ziet	bletë	ndytë
çanë	pinë	zien	blenë	ndynë

2. Examples of the **b) subgroup** conjugation

End-morphemes: **-n(r) + a -n(r) + e -n(r) + i** pl. **-më -të -në**

bana (bëra)	vuna (vura)	shkrina (shkrira)	hyna (hyra)
'made'	'placed'	'melted'	'entered'
bane (bëre)	vune (vure)	shkrine (shkrirë)	hyne (hyre)
bani (bëri)	vuni (vuri)	shkrini (shkriri)	hyni (hyri)
bamë (bëmë)	vumë	shkrimë	hymë
bâtë (bëtë)	vûtë	shkritë	hÿtë
banë (bënë)	vunë	shkrinë	hynë

Notes

- In Geg, the variant *vû* occurs in the 3 sg., derived from the form *vun-* after the loss of the vowel *-i*: cf. *zân-* > *zâ* (indef.) 'voice' as contrasted with *zâni* 'the voice'. The assimilatory process of *-nn-* between two vowels (cf. 3 pl. *bannë* >

hâne, vunnë > vunë) corresponds with the Old Geg Accusative *zannë > zânë*, both forms attested in the older authors and in idioms:

të ndjefsha zân' e mirë 'may I hear good news (of you)'

- The non-retention of the -v- augment, especially in the plural, may be explained by the language's intolerance of the clusters -vm- (1 pl) and -vn- (3 pl) *çavnë > çanë 'they split'.
- Cf. also the change from *oe > é. ti pae > ti pé* 'you saw' (Aor. 2. sg.).
- Examples of the **c) subgroup** conjugation

End-morphemes: -v + a -v + e -i ~ u pl. -m -t -n

jetova 'lived'	rrëfeva 'told'
jetove	rrëfeve
jetoi	rrëfeu
jetuem (jetuam)	rrëfyem
jetuet (jetuat)	rrëfyet
jetuen (jetuan)	rrëfyen

216. The **Present Optative** is constructed with the basic Aorist stem + **-fsh-, -ft-**

End-morphemes: -fsha -fsh -fte -fshim -fshi -fshin

Examples of the **Present Optative** conjugation

rrëfefsha 'may I tell'	rrofsha 'may I live'	bâfsha (bëfsha) 'may I make'
rrëfefsh	rrofsh	bâfsh (bëfsh)
rrëfeftë	rroftë	bâftë (bëftë)
rrëfefshim	rrofshim	bâfshim (bëfshim)
rrëfefshi	rrofshi	bâfshi (bëfshi)
rrëfeshin	rrofshin	bâfshin (bëfshin)

Notes

- Several c) subclass verbs of the type *rroj rrojte* (cf. §202) appear to be exceptions in that they construct the Present Optative from the Present stem. On closer examination, however, it may be clearly seen that these verbs have a double Aorist form, and they utilise the one in a vowel for the construction of the Present Optative:

<i>Present</i>	<i>Aorist</i>	<i>Present Optative</i>
rroj 'live'	rrova :rrojta	rrofsha
gjuj (gjuaj) 'hunt'	gjova gjúejta (gjuájta)	gjofsha

- The morphemes *-fsh-* and *-ft-* are derived from *-v + sh* and *-v + t*:

**rro-v-sh-a > rrofsha*; they have been generalized for the Present Optative

217. The **Present** and **Imperfect Admirative** synthetic forms are derived from the Participle stem. According to their construction type, they are divided into two subgroups:

- Verbs which form the Admirative without variants of the Participle stem;

b) Verbs which form the Admirative with variants of the Participle stem through the contrast **o/ue (ua), e/ye**:

1. Examples of the **a) subgroup** conjugation

<i>Admirative</i>			
<i>Present</i>		<i>Imperfect</i>	
çakam 'I split!'	pikam 'I drink!'	çákēsha 'I split!'	pikēsha 'I drank!'
çake	pike	çákēshe	pikēshe
çaka	pika	çakesh	pikesh
çákemı	píkemi	çákēshım	pikēshım
çákenı	píkeni	çákēshıt	pikēshıt
çakan	pıkan	çákēshın	pikēshın

2. Examples of the **b) subgroup** conjugation

<i>Admirative</i>			
<i>Present</i>		<i>Imperfect</i>	
jetúekam (jetúakam) ~ jetokam	jetúkēsha (jetúakēsha) ~ jetókēsha	'I lived!'	
jetúeke (jetúake) ~ jetoke	jetúkēshe (jetúakēshe) ~ jetókēshe		
jetúeka (jetúaka) ~ jetoka	jetúkēsh (jetúakēsh) ~ jetokēsh		
jetúekemi (jetúakemi) ~ jetókemi	jetúkēshım (jetúakēshım) ~ jetókēshım		
jetúekeni (jetúakeni) ~ jetokeni	jetúkēshıt (jetúakēshıt) ~ jetókēshıt		
jetúekan (jetúakan) ~ jetokan	jetúkēshın (jetúakēshın) ~ jetókēshın		

Note

The auxiliary verbs *kam* 'have' and *kısha* ~ *keshe* 'had' have experienced changes as components of the Present and Imperfect Admirative, characteristic of which are reductions or eliminations, conspicuously:

1. Reduction of e > ě in *-kēsha* from *keshe* (old form of the Imperfect);
2. In the 3 sg *-ke* ~ *-kej* also occur as variants of *-kēsh*.

218. The following is a summary of the 1st Conjugation tense form endings:

I. Endings of the Present System

Person	Indicative	Subjunctive (particle tē)	Imperative	Optative	Admirative
	Present	Present	Present	Present	Present
sg. 1	-j ~ ∅	-j ~ ∅		-fsha	-kam
2	-n ~ ∅	-sh	∅ ~ -j	-fsh	-ke
3	-n ~ ∅	-jē ~ rē		-ftē	-ka
pl. 1	-jmē ~ mē	-mē ~ m		-fshim	-kemı
2	-ni	-ni	-ni	-fshı	-kenı
3	-jnē ~ nē	-jnē ~ nē		-fshın	-kan

II. Endings of the Preterite System

Person	Indicative		Subjunctive (particle tē)	Admirative
	Imperfect	Aorist	Imperfect	Imperfect
sg. 1	-ja ~ sha	-va ~ na (ra)	-ja ~ sha	-kēsha
2	-je ~ she	-ve ~ ne (re)	-je ~ she	-kēshe
3	-nte	-ı ~ u ~ ni (ri)	-nte	-kēsh ~ ke ~ kej
pl. 1	-nim ~ shim	-mē ~ m	-nim ~ shim	-kēshim
2.	-nit ~ shit	-tē ~ t	-nit ~ shit	-kēshit
3	-nin ~ shın	-nē ~ n	-nin ~ shın	-kēshın

219. As mentioned above, the 2nd Conjugation is divided into two groups:

- Verbs which do not modify their stems in the inflection according to number and person;
- Verbs which modify their basic form.

The division into subgroups is made on the basis of morphophonemic changes — as in the classification according to stems and in the 1st Conjugation: umlaut and monophthongization, as well as palatalization and assibilation, in the **Present system** and, in the standard language, diphthongization alone in the **Aorist stem**.

220. The **Present** of the **2nd Conjugation** is divided into four subgroups:

- Verbs without stem changes in the inflection according to number and person (type: **qep** 'sew');
- Verbs with vowel alternation in the stem (umlaut and monophthongization):

Alternation **e/i** = 1 sg. **dredh** 'twist' — 2 pl. **dridhni**

Alternation **a/e/i** = 1 sg. **dal** 'go out' — 2 sg. **del** — 2 pl. **dilni**

Alternation **je/i** = 1 sg. **rjep** 'flay' — 2 pl. **ripni**

c) Verbs with monophthongization and palatalization in the stem:

Alternation **je/i:k/q** = 1 sg. **pjek** 'bake' — 2 pl. **piqni**

Alternation **je/i:g/gj** = 1 sg. **djeg** 'burn' — 2 pl. **digjni**

d) **t**-verbs with assibilation and possible umlaut.

221. Examples of the **a)** and **b)** subgroups conjugation

End-morphemes: **- \emptyset - \emptyset - \emptyset -im -ni -in**

Alternation:	<i>e, i</i>	<i>a, e, i</i>	<i>je, i</i>
qep 'sew'	dredh 'twist'	dal 'go out'	rjep 'flay'
qep	dredh	del	rjep
qep	dredh	del	rjep
qepim	dredhim	dahm	rjepim
qepni	dridhni	dilni	ripni
qepin	dredhin	dahn	rjepin

Notes

- Verbs in a consonant in Old Albanian and in Arbëresh augment the \emptyset -stem with (unstressed) *-inj* ~ *-ënj* in the 1 sg., thus two conjugation variants occur in the Present:

I **- \emptyset - \emptyset - \emptyset -(i)më -(i)ni -inë ~ ënë**

II. **-inj** ~ **-i -ën -ên -(i)më -(i)ni -inë ~ ënë**

	<i>Arbëresh</i>	<i>Da Lecce (1716)</i>
I. qep	II. qepinj	lidhinj 'tie'
qep	qepën	lidhen
qep	qepën	lidhën
qepmë	qepmë	lidhimë
qepni	qepni	lidhini
qepënë	qepënë	lidhinë

- Several verbs, which also occur in the standard language in similar forms, are remnants of the second conjugation variant, e.g. *ik* 'depart', *hip* 'climb', *eci* 'go'. They are generally used with \emptyset endings or with the old conjugation endings. The plural is regular

1 sg. ik ~ ıki	hip ~ hipı
2 sg. ik ~ ikën	hip ~ hipën
3 sg. ik ~ ikën	hip ~ hipën

- Another characteristic of Old Albanian and Arbëresh is regressive assimilation in the verbal stem due to the conjugation morphemes:

1 pl. qepmë > qepmë
2 pl. qepni > qepni

(Cf. § 229, No. 3)

222. Examples of the **c)** subgroup conjugation

End-morphemes: **- \emptyset - \emptyset - \emptyset -im -ni -in**

Alternation:	<i>je/i:k/q</i>	<i>je/i:g/gj</i>	<i>je ~ e/i:k/q</i>
	pjek 'bake'	djeg 'burn'	hjek ~ heq 'pull out'
	pjek	djeg	hjek ~ heq
	pjek	djeg	hjek ~ heq
	pjekim	djegim	hjekim ~ heqim
	piqni	digjini	hiqni
	pjekin	djegin	hjekin ~ heqin

223. The **d) subgroup** or **t-verbs** exhibit three types of Present inflection:

- I. Verbs with simple **t/s** assibilation;
- II. Verbs with **t/s** assibilation and **e/i** umlaut.
- III. Verbs with **t/s** assibilation and **a/e/i** umlaut.

Examples of the **d) subgroup** or **t-verb** conjugation

End-morphemes: **-∅-∅-∅ -im -ni -in**

Alternation:	<i>t/s</i>	<i>t/s:eli</i>	<i>t/s:a/e/i</i>
I. pyes 'ask'	pyet	pyet	pyet
	pýesim	zbresim	gërthasim
	pýetni	zbritni	gërthitni
	pýesin	zbresin	gërthasin

224. *Present Subjunctive*

Examples of the **a) and b) subgroup** conjugation

Prepositive particle: **të**

End-morphemes: **-∅ -ësh -ë -im -ni -in**

Alternation:	<i>eji</i>	<i>aji</i>	<i>je/i</i>
të qep	të dredh	të dal	të rjep
'that I sew'	'that I twist'	'that I go out'	'that I flay'
të qepësh	të dredhësh	të dalësh	të rjepësh
të qepë	të dredhë	të dalë	të rjepë
të qepim	të dredhim	të dalim	të rjepim
të qepni	të dridhni	të dilni	të ripni
të qepin	të dredhin	të dalin	të rjepin

There are no alternations in the 1, 2 and 3 sg. Present Subjunctive; the 1 sg. occurs as the basic form.

2. Examples of the **c) subgroup** conjugation

Prepositive particle: **të**

End-morphemes: **-∅ -ësh -ë -im -ni -in**

Alternation:	<i>je/i:k/q</i>	<i>je/i:g/gj</i>	<i>je ~ e/i:k/q</i>
	të pjek	të djeg	të hjek ~ heq
	'that I bake'	'that I burn'	'that I pull out'

të pjekësh	të djegësh	të hjekësh ~ heqësh
të pjekë	të djegë	të hjekë ~ heqë
të pjekim	të djegim	të hjekim ~ heqim
të pıqıı	të digjıı	të hiqıı
të pjekin	të djegin	të hjekin ~ heqin

3. Examples of the **d) subgroup** conjugation

Prepositive particle: **të**

End-morphemes: **-Ø -ësh -ë -im -ni -in**

Alternation:	<i>t's</i>	<i>t's e i</i>	<i>t s' a i</i>
të pyes	të zbres	të gërthás	
'that I ask'	'that I descend'	'that I shout'	
të pýesësh	të zbresësh	të gërthasësh	
të pýesë	të zbresë	të gërthasë	
të pýesım	të zbresim	të gërthasim	
të pýetıı	të zbritıı	të gërthitıı	
të pýesin	të zbresin	të gërthasin	

225. The **Imperfect Indicative** is divided into three subgroups:

- a) Verbs which exhibit no alternation in the basic form between the stem of the 2 pl. Present and the Imperfect stem;
 b) Verbs which exhibit alternations between the Present stem and the Imperfect stem (cf. §211):

<i>Present</i>		<i>Imperfect</i>	<i>Alternation</i>
1 sg. dredh	2 pl. dridhni	dridhja	e/i
1 sg. dal	2 pl. dilni	dilja	a/i
1 sg. pjek	— 2 pl. piqıı	piqja	je/i: k/q
1 sg. zbres	— 2 pl. zbritni	zbritja	t's: e/i
1 sg. gërthás	— 2 pl. gërthitni	gërthitja	t's: a/i

- c) Verbs which, according to their system, belong structurally to the b) subgroup, but are differentiated in that the **t**-verbs exhibit a **t/s** alternation in the inflection according to number and person.

1. Examples of the **a) and b) subgroup** conjugation

End-morphemes: **-ja -je -te -nim -nit -nin** (Common Albanian)

-sha -she -te -shim -shit -shin (Geg)

<i>Common Albanian</i>	<i>Geg</i>	<i>Common Albanian</i>	<i>Geg</i>
qepja	qepsha	dilja	dilsha ~ delsha
'sewed'	'idem'	'went out'	'idem'
qepje	qepshe	dilje	dilshe
qepje	qepje	dilte	dilte
qepnim	qepshim	dilnim	dilshim
qepnit	qepshit	dilnit	dilshit
qepnin	qepshin	dilnin	dilshin

2. Examples of the **c) subgroup** conjugation

End-morphemes: **-ja -je -te -nim -nit -nin** (Common Albanian)
-sha -she -te -shim -shit -shin (Geg)

Variant in *t/s*

Common Albanian		Common Albanian	
	Geg		Geg
pËtjta 'asked'	pËtsha	gërthitja 'shouted'	gërthitsha
pËtje	pËtshje	gërthitje	gërthitshje
pËste ~ pËtete	pËtete	gërthiste ~ gërthitite	gërthitite
pËtnim ~ pËtesnim	pËtshim	gërthitnim ~ gërthisnim	gërthitshim
pËtnit	pËtshit	gërthitnit	gërthitshit
pËtnin	pËtshin	gërthitnin	gërthitshin

Notes

In an earlier phase of Albanian, the Imperfect variants of the 2nd Conjugation had the following end-morphemes:

1 Da Lecce (1716): *-njetë -nje -l'ë)te -njimë -njutë -njëne*2. Old Tosk: I. *-ë -e -i ~ Ø -(ë)me -(ë)të -inë*II. *-(ë)një -(ë)nje -ën -(ë)njëmë -(ë)njetë -jnë*

The presence of both variants in a single dialect (cf. Arbëresh or Old Tosk), almost always parallel with two Present forms, gives reason to assert that these variants represent semantic differentiations, although this function appears very weakly today:

Present		Imperfect	
I	II	I	II
marr 'take'	marrënj	marrë 'took'	marrënjë
merr	merrën	marre	marrënje
merr	merrën	mirr	mirrën
marrmë	marrimë	marrëmë	marrënjëmë
mirrni	mirrni	marrëtë	marrënjëtë
marrënë	marrënjënë	mirrin	mirrënjë

3. *Arbëresh*: *-nja -nje -i -im -itë -inë*

Arbëresh, too, exhibits two Imperfect forms in the verbal category of the type *vraj -- vras*:

		II	
I	II	I	II
vranja 'killed'	vritnja	fjitnja 'said'	folnja
vranje	vritnje	fjitnje	folnje
vrai	vriti	fjiti	foli
vraim	vritim	fjitim	folim
vrait	vritit	fjitit	folit
vraim	vritin	fjitin	folin

4. *Kristofordhu* (1882). *-shem -she -te -shim -shit -shin* (Geg)

226. The Imperfect Subjunctive is constructed with the prepositive particle **të** and the appropriate forms of the Imperfect Indicative.

227. The **Imperative** of the 2nd Conjugation is constructed from the Present stem. The **t**-verbs of the type **flas — fola** are an exception, as they utilise the Aorist stem:

<i>Aorist</i>		<i>Imperative</i>
fola 'spoke'	2 sg. fol 'speak!'	— 2 pl. folni
thirra 'called'	2 sg. thirr 'call!'	— 2 pl. thirrni
shkela 'stepped on'	2 sg. shkel 'step on!'	- 2 pl. shkëlmi

The conjugation is divided into two groups:

- a) Imperatives which do not exhibit any changes in the stem, such as **hap** 'open!' **hapni**, **ec** 'go!' **ecni**;
 b) Imperatives which exhibit changes in the stem according to the 2 pl. Present:

<i>Present</i>		<i>Imperative</i>
2 pl. dilni 'you go out'	2 sg. dil 'go out!'	2 pl. dilni
2 pl. shitni 'you sell'	2 sg. shit 'sell!'	2 pl. shitni
2 pl. piqni 'you bake'	2 sg. piq 'bake!'	— 2 pl. piqni
2 pl. digjni 'you burn'	2 sg. digj 'burn!'	- 2 pl. digjni

228. In the category of the 2nd Conjugation, all Aorists are integrated whose final consonant is not eliminated in the inflection according to number and person; this contrasts with the Aorist construction of the 1st Conjugation in which the augments **-v-** and **-n(r)-** are not retained beyond the 3 sg. (cf. § 215).

229. The conjugation of the Aorist in a stem consonant is divided into two subgroups:

- a) Aorists which do not exhibit alternations in the inflection according to number and person;
 b) Aorists in a consonant which end in **-or-**, **-ol-**, **-oll-** and which diphthongize **-o-** (result of apophony) into **-ue(ua)-** (cf. § 204).

1. Examples of the **a) subgroup** conjugation

End-morphemes: **-a -e -i ~ u -ëm -ët -ën**

qepa 'sewed'	fjeta 'slept'	poqa 'baked'	shita 'sold'	pýeta 'asked'
qepe	fjete	poqe	shite	pýete
qepi	fjeti	poqi ~ poq	shiti	pýeti
qepëm	fjetëm	poqëm	shitëm	pýetëm
qepët	fjetët	poqët	shitët	pýetët
qepën	fjetën	poqën	shitën	pýetën

Aorists in **-k -g -h** take the ending **-u** in the 3 sg. Those in **-q** and **-gj** (result of palatalization of **k** and **g**) have a \emptyset variant as the 3 sg. ending.

2. Examples of the **b) subgroup** conjugation

End-morphemes: **-a -e -i ~ \emptyset -ëm -t -ën**

Alternation	<i>o ue'(ua)</i>	<i>o'ue'ua)</i>	<i>o:ue'(ua)</i>
	mora 'took'	vola 'reaped'	mbolla 'sowed'
	more	vole	mbolle
	mori ~ muer (muar)	voli ~ vuel	mbolli ~ mbuell (mbuall)
	morëm	volëm	mbollëm
	muert (muart)	vuel't (vualt)	mbuellit (mbuallt)
	morën	volën	mbollën

Notes

1. The following end-morphemes for the Aorist are attested in earlier phases of Albanian.

Da Lecce (1716). I. -a -e -i ~ u ~ Ø -më -të -në

II -a -e -i ~ Ø -tim(ë) -të -tin(ë)

Examples: I. lidha-lidhe-lidhi-lidhmë-lidhtë-lidhnë (tied)

II. desha-deshe-desh(i)-deshtim-deshtë-deshtin (wanted)

2. Double end-morphemes occur in Arbëresh as well, often regularized as follows

I. -a -e -i ~ u -më -të -në

II. -ta -te -ti -tim(ë) -të -tin(ë)

or combined III. -a -e -i ~ u ~ Ø -tim -tit -tin (cf. *Da Lecce*)

Example of I. dola-dole-doli-dualmë-dualtë-dualnë

Example of II. dolta-dolte-dolti-dualtim-dualtit-dualtin

Example of III. mora (Old T. muarç)-more-muar-muartim-muartit-muartin

3. In Arbëresh there is also an assimilatory process occasioned by suffixing the end-morphemes to the Aorist stem, e.g. *qepme* > *qepmë* 'we sewed', *qepnë* > *qepnë* 'they sewed' (cf. § 221, Note 1) The same process occurs in the Albanian dialects of Greece (Attica and Peloponnesus), cf. also C. Haebler: *Grammatik der albanischen Mundart von Salamis*. Wiesbaden, 1965.
4. For the so-called "sigmatic" and "asigmatic" forms of the Aorist, see also the irregular verbs, § 283. It should be noted that the doublets of the sg. I Aorist *dhae/dhashë* 'I gave' (Buzuku, 1555) must be of internal Albanian development (cf. K. Klingenschmitt, *Münchener Studien zur Sprachwissenschaft*, Heft 40, 1981, p. 96 ff.).

230. The **Present Optative** is essentially constructed with the Aorist stem. Verbs whose basic form has been modified by apophony, however, construct the Present Optative with the Present stem (I sg.).

Examples of the **Present Optative** conjugation

End-morphemes: **-sha -sh -të -shim -shim -shit -shin**

-ça -ç -të -çim -çit -çin

qepsha	pjeksha	marrsha	pritsha ~ priça
'may I sew'	'may I bake'	'may I take'	'may I wait'
qepsh	pjeksh	marrsh	prish ~ priç
qeptë	pjektë	marrtë	prittë
qepshim	pjekshim	marrshim	prishim ~ priçim
qepshit	pjekshit	marrshit	prishit ~ priçit
qepshin	pjekshin	marrshin	prishin ~ priçin

In many southern dialects, the **-ç-** morpheme, derived from **t+sh**, has become generalized, sometimes derived also from the Participle stem, e.g. **dhënça** (dhën-ça) 'may I give', **bënça** (bën-ça) 'may I make, etc.

Notes

1. Like the *Admirative*, the *Present Optative* appears to be an internal linguistic construction of Albanian, most likely from a synthetic tense form of the Subjunctive. Its most striking components are the close connection with the Aorist stem and the modal character of *wishing*. Da Lecce calls the Present Optative *imperfetto imprecatorio*.
2. The Present Optative is well attested

<i>Da Lecce</i> (1716)	<i>Vilarà</i> (1801)	<i>Arberesh</i>
lidhsha 'may I tie'	gjeça 'may I find'	djegsha ~ djegça 'may I burn'
lidhsh	gjeçe	djegsh ~ djegç
lidhtë	gjetë	djegtë
lidhshim	gjeçim	djegshim
lidhshi	gjeçi	djegshit ~ djegshi
lidhshin	gjeçin	djegshin

It may be assumed that the generalization of the morph **-ç-** in southern Albanian dialects is due not only to the stem of the *t*-verbs, but also to the *-t-* morph of the second Aorist variant *dolta* (cf. § 229, No. 2). Thus, *t+sh* has merged into the affricate **-ç-** in the conjugation *dal-t-sha* ~ *dalça*, *dal-t-sh* ~ *dalç*. The *-v-* augment in the Aorist of the 1st Conjugation, on the other hand, has become voiceless in the same position, i.e. before *-sh-* (cf. § 216, Note).

231. The synthetic forms of the **Admirative** are derived from the Participle stem + **-kam** (Present) and **-kësha** (Imperfect).

Examples of the **Admirative** conjugation

<i>Present</i>	<i>Imperfect</i>
marrkam 'I take!'	márrkësha 'I took!'
marrke	márrkëshe
marrka	márrkësh ~ marrke
márrkemi	márrkëshim
márrkeni	márrkëshit
márrkan	márrkëshin

232. The following is a summary of the 2nd Conjugation tense form endings:

I. Endings of the Present System

Person	Indicative	Subjunctive (particle <i>të</i>)	Imperative	Optative	Admirative
	Present	Present	Present	Present	Present
sg. 1	∅	∅		-sha ~ <i>ça</i>	-kam
2	∅	-ësh	∅	-sh ~ <i>ç</i>	-ke
3	∅	-ë		-të	-ka
pl 1	-im	-im		-shim ~ <i>çim</i>	-kemı
2	-ni	-ni	-ni	-shı ~ <i>çı</i>	-kenı
3	-in	-in		-shın ~ <i>çın</i>	-kan

II. Endings of the Preterite System

Person	Indicative		Subjunctive (particle <i>të</i>)	Admirative
	Imperfect	Aorist	Imperfect	Imperfect
sg 1	-ja ~ -sha	-a	-ja ~ -sha	-kësh
2	-je ~ -she	-e	-je ~ -she	-kësh
3	-te	-i ~ u ~ ∅	-te	-kësh ~ -ke
pl 1	-nim ~ -shim	-ëm	-nim ~ -shim	-këshim
2	-nit ~ -shit	-ët	-nit ~ -shit	-këshit
3	-nin ~ -shin	-ën	-nin ~ -shin	-këshin

Vocabulary

mitologji-a mythology -∅
Perëndi-a God, god -∅
vneshtë-a (*vreshtë-a*) vineyard -a
amforë-a amphora -a
venë-a (*verë-a*) wine (*verëra*)
lashtësi-a antiquity -∅
hallet e jetës the troubles of life
sarkofag-u sarcophagus -ë
pjesë-a part -∅
qeramikë-a ceramic -a
enë-a vessel -∅
luks-i luxury -e
shtresë-a layer, stratum -a
kryeqendër-kryeqendra center -a
provincë-a province -a

Epiri i Ri (place name)
antikitet-i antiquity -e
popullsi-a population -∅
liri-a freedom -∅
tren-i train -a
talënt-i talent -e
gji-ni (*gji-ri*) breast; gulf, bay
gjina ~ gjine (*gjinj*)
orizore-ja rice field -∅
vlerë-a value, worth -a
mur-i wall -e
monument-i monument -a ~ -e
një tok monumentesh a group of
 monuments
gërmim-i excavation -e

<i>muzé-u ~ muzeum-i</i> museum -∅ -e	<i>mbishkrimór-e</i> epigraphic
<i>mbishkrim-i</i> epigraph -e	<i>i, e ndrymë-e</i> locked
<i>grup-t</i> group -e	<i>i, e pasun (pasur)</i> rich
<i>punim-i</i> work, study -e	<i>t, e vonë</i> late
<i>mënyrë-a</i> manner, way -a	<i>t, e gjetun (gjetur)</i> found
<i>qëllim-i</i> intention, aim -e	<i>t, e rregullt</i> regular, uniform
<i>kërkesë-a</i> request, demand -a	<i>i, e pabotuem-e (pabotuar)</i> un-
<i>botim-i</i> publication -e	published
<i>pikëpamje-a</i> view, viewpoint -∅	<i>t, e panjohun (panjohur)</i> un-
<i>përshkrim-i</i> description -e	known
<i>përdorim-i</i> use, utilization -e	<i>t ndryshëm, e ndryshme</i> different,
<i>pamje-a</i> view, aspect, sight -∅	various
<i>deshifrim-i</i> decipherment -e	<i>t lejueshëm, e lejueshme</i> permitted
<i>transkribim-t</i> transcription -e	<i>i jashtëm, e jashtme</i> outer, external
<i>shqyrtim-i</i> examination, analysis -e	<i>kurdoherë</i> always
<i>shkrojë-a</i> letter (of alphabet) -a	<i>ndërmjet</i> prep. with Gen. among,
<i>fund-i</i> end; depth, grounds -e	between
<i>komént-i</i> comment -e	<i>kam ndërmënd</i> intend
<i>përmbajtje-a</i> content -∅	<i>pendohem</i> regret, repent
<i>veçori-a</i> characteristic -∅	<i>përbáj (përbëj)</i> constitute, form
<i>latin-e</i> Latin	<i>shqyrtój</i> analyse, characterize
<i>grek-e</i> Greek	<i>botój</i> publish
<i>arkeologjik-e</i> archeological	<i>shquej</i> distinguish, discern

Exercise 31

Sipás mitologjisë së lashtë, perëndia i vërshtave vdiste atëherë kur njërezit vilnin rrushin: shpirtu i tij rrinte i mbyllë në amfora. Vera edhe në lashtësi i shkëpuste njërezit nga hallet e jetës. Qysh në lashtësi, një pjesë e ëndëve qeramike u zëvendësuan nga enët druri. Në kohë të lashtë sarkofagu ishte një luks i lejueshëm vetëm për njërezit e shtrësave të pàsura. Dúrrësi, kryeqendra e provincës Epiri i Ri, ka qenë edhe në antikitetin e vonë një qytét i madh; popullsia e këtij qyteti mbrojti kurdoherë lirinë e vet. Qenke lodhur! Sa orë punove sot? Në gjetsha vend në tren, do të nisem nesër për në dét; atjë kam ndërmënd të pushój nja disá ditë.

Exercise 32

A proverb says: *who sows, reaps*; but we sowed and did not reap. Show your talent! Do not lose time, because one day you will regret it. Our city contains * very old strata with archeological value. There, outside the old walls where there are rice fields, we once played football.

* (lit.: keeps in its bosom i.e. in itself)

Text 16

Mbishkrime latine të pabotùeme të Shqipnisë

Në vjetët e fundit, në vendin tonë u zbuluen një tok monumentesh arkeologjike, ndërmjet të cilave edhe një numër jo i vogël materialesh mbishkrimore (epigrafike). Këtò monumente të gjëtuna rastësisht ose në gërmime të rrëgullta ruhen në muzetë tona. Në pjesën më të madhe ky material kaq i pasun, që përbahet nga mbishkrime në gjuhët greke e latine, asht i pabotuem, pra i panjoftun. Ne mendojmë t'i botojmë të dy grupet dhe po fillojmë prandaj me mbishkrimet latine. Në këtë punim që po paraqesim, jemi përpjekë me i shqyrtue në mënyrë sa ma të plotë, me qëllim që atò t'u shërbejnë studiuesve të ndryshëm. Tue pasë parasysh kërkesat e një botimi materialesh mbishkrimore, nga pikëpamja arkeologjike, për çdo monument kemi dhanë përshkrimin, materialin, përdorimin dhe pamjen e jashtme të tij; nga pikëpamja tjetër asht dhanë deshifrimi, transkribimi i tëksteve, shqyrtimi i shkrojvet etj. Në fund atò janë mbyllë me një komént nganjëherë të shkurtë, rreth përmbajtjes dhe veçorive të tjera që shquëjnë nenin apo tjetrin mbishkrim.

Hasan Ceka

Skëndër Anamali (1961, *Buletin i Shkencave shoqërore*)

Lesson 17 — Leksioni i shtatëmbëdhjetë

The Verb (III)

Construction and Conjugation of the Medio-Passive; Impersonals

233. In this chapter, the categories of the **Medio-Passive** will be deliberately treated together with those of the **Impersonal verbs**, because in both these groups it is not always possible to harmonize form and function, as has been the procedure until now.

a) There exist verbs in Albanian — as in other languages — which, according to their form, belong to the **Active conjugation**, but which are and **remain intransitives**, such as **kam ardhë (ardhur)** 'I have come' or **qesh intrans.** 'laugh'.

b) There is a formal coincidence of Middle and Passive in that tense forms of the same type are inflected partly in a Passive manner and partly in a Reflexive manner, consequently fulfilling both functions:

Present (formally Passive)	Aorist (formally Middle-Reflexive);
digjem	u dogja
<i>Passive</i> 'I am burned'	'I was burned'
<i>Middle</i> 'I burn myself'	'I burned myself'
<i>Middle</i> lodhem 'I tire myself,	u lodha 'I tired myself, was tired'
am tired'	

c) The Impersonals may occur in either **Active** or **Passive** forms, often without exhibiting essential semantic differences in usage.

234. For the constitution of the **Passive system**, it is necessary to proceed from verbs having both voices (Active and Passive). The procedure is similar to that for the constitution of the **Verbal Classes** (cf. § 202):

- a) **Umlaut, monophthongization** and **palatalization** are required;
 b) An augment **-h-** occurs between the Passive stem and the end-morphemes (1st Conjugation).

The Present stem is used to construct the Passive; the tense forms of the Aorist and Participle stems occur in the Reflexive conjugation (cf. §§ 239, 249).

- c) The **Participle stem** in combination with the auxiliary verb **jam** constructs the periphrastic tense forms of the Passive.
 d) *t*-verbs retain their basic form in the Passive.

235. In the overall constitution of the Passive, verbs are divided into:

- a) those which do not modify the Present stem of the Active and
 b) those which do modify the Present stem of the Active.

236.

Present stem in a vowel (Active)	Present stem (Passive)	Alternation
kritikój 'criticise'	kritiko-h-em	ø/ø
dërgój 'send'	dërgo-h-em	ø/ø
dëbój 'expel'	dëbo-h-em	ø/ø
bashkój 'unite'	bashko-h-em	ø/ø
mbaj 'hold, keep'	mba-h-em	ø/ø
laj 'wash'	la-h-em	ø/ø
shkrij 'melt'	shkri-h-em	ø/ø
gënjëj 'lie'	gënje-h-em	ø/ø
dëfrëj 'amuse'	dëfre-h-em	ø/ø
shkruej (shkruej) 'write'	shkru-h-em	ue(ua)/u
rruej (rruaj) 'shave'	rru-h-em	ue(ua)/u
paguej (paguaj) 'pay'	pagu-h-em	ue(ua)/u
quej (quaj) 'call'	qu-h-em	ue(ua)/u
lyej 'smear'	ly-h-em	ye/y
kryej 'complete, fulfill'	kry-h-em	ye/y
shqyej 'tear'	shqy-h-em	ye/y
ziej 'cook'	zi-h-em	ie/i
ndiej 'feel'	ndi-h-em	ie/i
blej 'buy'	bli-h-em ~ ble-h-em	e/i
vë 'place'	vi-h-em	ë/i

zâ (zë) 'seize'	zê-h-em (zi-h-em)	â(ë):ê(i)
lâ (lë) 'let, leave'	lê-h-em (li-h-em)	â(ë)/ê(i)

In the transition from Active to Passive, the verb may exhibit certain semantic changes:

Present stem Active	Present stem Passive
pi 'drink'	pi-h-em 'become drunk'
dredh 'turn'	dridh-em 'shiver'

A small number of verbs occur only in the Passive form, such as **zotohem** 'promise', **sëmuhem ~ sëmunem (sëmurem)** 'become sick', **motohem** 'become old'.

Notes

In early Common Albanian and in Arbëresh, two different augments are used in the construction of the Passive from a Present stem in a vowel:

1. *-h-* augment occurs after Present stems in stressed *-a-*, *-e-*, *-i-*, *-u-*:

<i>Present stem Active</i>	<i>Present stem Passive</i>
ha 'eat'	ha-h-em
dej 'intoxicate'	de-h-em
pëlqënj 'please'	pëlqe-h-em 'find pleasing'
ndenj 'spread out'	nde-h-em 'stretch out'
frij 'blow'	fri-h-em
shtje 'insert'	shti-h-em
zienj 'cook'	zi-h-em
ruanj 'guard, watch'	ru-h-em

2. *-n-* augment occurs in Arbëresh and in Old Albanian, as a rule, after Passive stems in stressed *-o-* and sometimes after those in stressed *-e-*:

<i>Present stem Active</i>	<i>Present stem Passive</i>
shërónj 'heal'	shëro-n-em
mësónj 'teach'	mëso-n-em
çonj 'find'	ço-n-em
martónj 'marry'	marto-n-em
thenj 'break'	the-n-em

It appears, especially in Arbëresh, that the *-h-* augment began to be generalized at a very early period, as it was in Common Albanian as well.

3. The augments *-h-* and *-n-* also appear as variants in Old Geg, attested in Da Lecce (1716): *Active*: banj 'make, do' – *Passive*: banem ~ bahem (cf. §§ 239, 240, Note 1).
4. There is one exception in the construction of the Passive
Active: gjej 'find' *Passive*: gjendem (Geg gjindem) 'find myself, am'. And perhaps also *Active*: lej 'bear' *Passive* lindem 'am born', from which may be traced both modern forms in the Present Active, *lej* (Geg) and *lind* (Tosk).

237. Present stem in a consonant.

Active	Passive	Alternation
qep 'sew'	qep-em	∅/∅
ter 'dry'	ter-em	∅/∅

këpús	'tear off, pick' √këpút	këput-em	∅/∅
ndris	'illuminate' √ndrit	ndrit-em	∅/∅
avis	'bring near' √avit	avit-em	∅/∅
pyes	'ask' √pyet	pyet-em	∅/∅
thërrás	'call' √thirr	thirr-em	ë/i
shes	'sell'	shit-em	e/i
mbledh	'collect'	mblidh-em	e/i
vesh	'draw, pull'	vish-em	e/i
vras	'kill' √vret	vrit-em	e/i
rjep	'flay'	rip-em	je/i
vjel	'harvest'	vil-em	je/i
sjell	'bring'	sill-em	je/i
vjerr	'hang'	virr-em	je/i

As may be seen, the stem of this Passive category is identical with that of the Imperfect Indicative (cf. § 225).

238. A number of verbs occur in the Middle or Reflexive which have no corresponding Active forms; these are mostly derived from nouns or adjectives, such as: **sëmunem (sëmurem)** 'become ill' from **i, e sëmunë (sëmurë)** 'ill'; **turrem** 'rush, set upon' from **turr-i** 'attack, rush' (cf. § 236). Others derive from little used or obsolete Active forms, such as **dirgjem** 'come down' from **djerg** 'bring down'.

The difference between Passive and Middle or Reflexive usage is usually apparent in the government of the verb:

Passive: vajza e vogël lahet prej s'amës (s'ëmës)
'the little girl is washed by her mother'

Reflexive: vajza e vogël lahet 'the little girl washes herself'

239. The tense forms are divided into three groups according to type of conjugation:

a) Inflected with Passive endings: Present and Imperfect Indicative, Subjunctive.

b) Inflected with the reflexive particle **u** 'self': Aorist, Imperative, Present Optative, Present and Imperfect Admirative (cf. § 249), Infinitive, Gerundive and Future constructed with Infinitive.

c) All other tense forms of the Medio-Passive are constructed **analytically** with forms of the auxiliary verb **jam**.

The following synthetic tense form conjugation examples are arranged in the same manner as those of the Active voice. For the analytic tense forms, compare §§ 189-194 (structure and function) and the general conjugation paradigm in Lesson 19.

Notes

- 1 The Perfect Gerund may be constructed a) *medially* or *reflexively* and b) *passively*; no semantic differences arise thereby, however
 a) tue (duke) u pasë sjellë
 b) tue (duke) qenë sjellë
- 2 In many Arbëresh dialects hybrid forms of a periphrastic type occur with *have* and the reflexive participle *u* (a phenomenon which is not usual in Common Albanian, as e.g. in Greci (cf. M. Camaj, *La parlata di Greci*, 1971):
 kam/ket or kinja + u + Participle
 ket kinja u lar 'I had to wash myself'

240. Examples of the Present Indicative Medio-Passive Conjugation

End-morphemes: 1st Conjugation **-hem -hesh -het -hemi -hëni -hën**2nd Conjugation **-em -esh -et -emi -ëni -ën**

I dërgohem	shkruhem	lahem	II hapem	dridhem
'am sent'	'am written'	'wash myself'	'open myself'	'shiver'
dërgohesh	shkruhesh	lahesh	hapesh	dridhesh
dërgohet	shkruhet	lahet	hapet	dridhet
dërgohemi	shkrùhemi	lâhemi	hâpemi	dridhemi
dërgohëni	shkrùhëni	lâhëni	hâpëni	dridhëni
dërgohen	shkruhen	lahen	hapen	dridhen

Variants of the 2 sg.: **dërgohe, shkruhe, lahe, hape, dridhe****Notes.** Examples of the Old Albanian and Arbëresh conjugations

- 1.
- Da Lecce*
- (1715): I -nem -ne -net -nemi -ni -nen

II -hem -he -het -hemi -hi -hen

III -em -e -et -emi -i -en

I banem	II mbahem	III pshtullem
'become'	'keep myself'	'wrap myself up'
bane	mbahe	pshtille
banet	mbahet	pshtillet
bânemi	mbâhemi	pshtillemi
bâni	mbâhi	pshtilli
banen	mbahen	pshtillen

- 2.
- Vilará*
- (1801) I -nemë -ne -netë -nemi -neni -nenë

II -hemë -he -hetë -hemi -hëni -hënë

III -emë -e -etë -emi -ëni -ënë

I bënemë	II pihemë	III gjëndemë
'become'	'become drunk'	'find myself'
bëne	pihe	gjende
bënetë	pihetë	gjëndetë
bënem	pihemi	gjëndemi
bëneni	pihëni	gjëndëni
bënenë	pihën(ë)	gjëndënë

- 3.
- Arbëresh*
- : I -nem -ne -net -nemi -nji -nen

II -hem -he -het -hemi -hëni ~ -hji -hen

III -em -e -et -emi -nji ~ ji -en

I martonem 'get married'	II lahem 'wash myself'	III nisem 'start, depart'
martone	lahe	nise
martonet	lahet	niset
martonemi	láhemı	nisemi
martonji	lahjı	nısnjı ~ nısnjı
martonen	lahen	nisen

241. The **Present Subjunctive** is constructed with the particle **të** + the corresponding forms of the Present Indicative Medio-Passive.

Notes

- 1 This rule does not hold true for Old Albanian and Arberesh. In Arberesh, for example, there are various endings

Present Indicative 2 sg

martone lahe nise

Present Subjunctive 2 sg

martonesh lahesh nisesh

The variants *dërgohe*, *shkruhe*, etc (cf § 240) are the older ones.

2. Tosk has variants in *-neç*, *-heç* and *-eç* in the Subjunctive 2 sg.
të bëneshe ~ të beneç

242. Examples of the Imperfect Indicative Medio-Passive conjugation

End-morphemes: 1st Conjugation **-hesha -heshe -hej ~ hesh -heshim -heshit -heshin**

2nd Conjugation **-esha -eshe -ej ~ esh -eshim -eshit -eshin**

I dërgóhesha	shkrúhesha	láhesha
'was sent'	'was written'	'washed myself'
dërgóheshe	shkrúheshe	láheshe
dërgohej ~ -esh	shkruhej ~ -esh	lahej ~ -esh
dërgóheshim	shkrúheshim	láheshim
dërgóheshit	shkrúheshit	láheshit
dërgóheshin	shkrúheshin	láheshin
II hápesha	dridhesha	
'opened myself'	'shivered'	
hápeshe	dridheshe	
hapej ~ -esh	dridhej ~ -esh	
hápeshim	dridheshim	
hápeshit	dridheshit	
hápeshin	dridheshin	

Notes

Examples of the Old Albanian and Arbëresh conjugations

1. *Da Lecce* (1716):

I. mba-hesh mbá-heshnje mba-hej mbá-hishmë mbá-hishitë mbá-hishinë

II. pshtll-esh pshtill-eshnje pshtill-ehi pshtill-shihum pshtill-shitë pshtill-shihinë

2. *Vilará* (1801):I *bě-neshě bě-neshe bě-nej bě-neshim bě-neshitě bě-neshině*II . *pi-heshě pi-heshe pi-heshi pi-heshim pi-heshitě pi-heshin*III. *gënd-eshě gënd-eshe gënd-eshi gënd-eshim gënd-eshit gënd-eshin*3 *Arbëresh*.I. *martó-nesha martó-neshe martó-nij martó-neshim martó-neshit martó-neshin*II. *lá-hesha lá-heshnje la-hij lá-heshim lá-heshit lá-heshin*III. *nis-esha nis-eshe nis-ij nis-eshim nis-eshit nis-eshin*

243. The **Imperfect Subjunctive** Medio-Passive is constructed with the particle **tě** + the corresponding forms of the Imperfect Indicative Medio-Passive.

244. All other synthetic conjugation forms of the Medio-Passive are constructed with the prepositive **u** 'self'. In the Imperative, however, the particle **u** is generally placed after the 2 sg.; in the 2 pl., **u** is facultatively infix between the stem and the end-morpheme:

2 sg. *nisu* (nis-u) 'travel!' 2 pl. *nisumi* (nis-u-ni) ~ *nisnju*2 sg. *piqu* (piq-u) 'ripen!' 2 pl. *piqumi* ~ *piqnju*

Imperatives in a stem vowel exhibit two methods of construction:

a) They may retain the **-h-** augment (marker of the Medio-Passive):

2 sg. *lahu* (la-h-u) 'wash yourself!' 2 pl. *láhuni* (la-h-u-ni)2 sg. *martohu* (marto-h-u) 'marry!' 2 pl. *martóhuni* (marto-h-u-ni)

b) The Reflexive construction type may be used, as in the Aorist, where the particle **u** is placed after the form of the Imperative Active:

2 sg. *laju* (laj-u) 'wash yourself!' 2 pl. *lanju* (lani-u)2 sg. *martou* (marto-u) 'marry!' 2 pl. *martonju* (martoni-u)

When the prohibitive particle **mos** is used, **u** is placed before the Imperative:

2 sg. *mos u laj* 'do not wash yourself!' 2 pl. *mos u lani*2 sg. *mos u martó* 'do not marry!' 2 pl. *mos u martoni*

245. The placing of the particle **u** 'self' before the forms of the Aorist occasions changes in the conjugation itself:

a) In the 3 sg., the ending **-i** or **-u** usually disappears:

Aorist Active (3 sg.)*hapi* 'opened'*lau* 'washed'*preku* 'touched'*Aorist Medio-Passive* (3 sg.)*u hap* 'opened himself'*u la* 'washed himself'*u prek* 'touched himself'

b) The verbs of **Class 1** (cf. § 202) and the 1st Conjugation (cf. § 215, c) diphthongize **-o-** and **-e-** in the 3 sg., as does the category of verbs with

Aorist stems in **-ol-**, **-oll-** and **-or-**. Aorist stems in a nasal eliminate **-n(r)-** in the 3 sg. after dropping the ending **-i** (cf. § 215, 2).

Aorist Active (3 sg.)

bashkoi	'united'
shkroi	'wrote'
pagoi	'paid'
kreu	'completed, fulfilled'
leu	'smeared'
voli	'harvested'
mbolli	'sowed'
mori	'took'
vuni (vuri)	'placed'
zuni (zuri)	'seized'

Aorist Medio-Passive (3 sg.)

u bashkue	(bashkua)
u shkruë	(shkrua)
u pague	(pagua)
u krye	
u lye	
u vuel	(vual)
u mbuell	(mbuall)
u muer	(muar)
u vu	
u zu	

246. Examples of the Aorist Medio-Passive conjugation

End-morphemes: 1st conjugation **-a -e - \emptyset -m(ë) -t(ë) -ën**

2nd Conjugation **-a -e - \emptyset -ëm -ët -ën**

Alternation:

<i>o/ue(ua)</i>	<i>e, ye</i>		
I u bashkova	u leva	u vrava	II u hapa
'was united'	'was smeared'	'was killed'	'opened myself'
u bashkove	u leve	u vrave	u hape
u bashkue (bashkua)	u lye	u vra	u hap
u bashkuem (bashkuam)	u lyem	u vramë	u hapëm
u bashkuet (bashkuat)	u lyet	u vratë	u hapët
u bashkuen (bashkuan)	u lyen	u vranë	u hapën

Notes. *Examples of the Old Albanian and Arbëresh conjugations*

1. *Da Lecce* (1716): Endings: **-sh -e - \emptyset -m(ë) -t(ë) -n(ë)**

u bâsh-u bane, u bâ, u bâmë, u bâtë, u bânë

2. *Vilará* (1801): Endings: **-shë ~ çë -ne - \emptyset -m(ë) -të -në**

u bëshë, u bënë, u bë, u bëmë, u bëtë, u bënë

3. *Arbëresh*. Endings. I **-sh -e - \emptyset -m(ë) -t(ë) -n(ë)**

II **-a -e - \emptyset -tim -tit -tin**

I u mësuash, u mësove, u mësua, u mësuam, u mësuat, u mësuam

II u hapa, u hape, u hap, u haptim, u haptit, u haptin

247. The **Present Optative Medio-Passive** is also constructed with the particle **u** + the corresponding forms of the Present Optative Active (cf. § 210):

Present Optative Active

gjofsha	'may I hunt'
gjofsh, etc.	

Present Optative Medio-Passive

u gjofsha	
u gjofsh, etc.	

248. The **Present** and **Imperfect Admirative Medio-Passive** are constructed in the same manner, viz. with **u** + the corresponding forms of the Present and Imperfect Admirative Active (cf. § 217):

		Admirative	
Active		Medio-Passive	
<i>Present</i>		<i>Present</i>	
çakam	'I split!'	u çakam	
<i>Imperfect</i>		<i>Imperfect</i>	
çäkësha	'I split!'	u çäkësha	

249. The following is a summary of the Medio-Passive endings:

1. Present System (1st (I) and 2nd (II) Conjugations)

Person	Indicative		Subjunctive (part. <i>të</i>)		Imperative (part <i>u</i>)		Optative (part <i>u</i>)		Admirative (part <i>u</i>)	
sg. 1	I	II	I	II	I	II	I	II	I & II	
	-hem	-em	-hem	-em			-fsha	-sha	-kam	
	2	-hesh ~ he	-esh ~ e	-hesh	-esh	∅ j + u	∅ + u	-fsh	-sh	-ke
3	-het	-et	-het	-et			-fië	-të	-ka	
pl. 1	-hemı	-emı	-hemi	-emi			-fshım	-shım	-kemı	
	2	-heni	-eni	-heni	-eni	h-u	nı ~ nju	-fshit	-shit	-kenı
	3	-hen	-en	-hen	-en			-fshin	-shin	-kan

2. Preterite System

Person	Indicative				Subjunctive (part <i>të</i>)		Admirative	
sg. 1	Imperfect		Aorist (part. <i>u</i>)		Imperfect		Imperfect (part <i>u</i>)	
	I	II	I	II	I	II	I & II	
	-heshā	-eshā	-va	-a	-heshā	-eshā	-këshā	
2	-heshe	-eshe	-ve	-e	-heshe	-eshe	-këshē	
3	-hej ~ hesh	-ej ~ esh	∅	∅	-hej ~ hesh	-ej ~ esh	-kësh ~ kej	
pl. 1	-heshım	-eshım	-m(ë)	-ëm	-heshım	-eshım	-këshım	
	2	-heshit	-eshit	-t(ë)	-ët	-heshit	-eshit	-këshit
	3	-heshin	-eshin	-n(ë)	-ën	-heshin	-eshin	-këshin

250. The **Impersonal** verbs will be presented here according to their **formal structures, content** and **aspect**. Formally, they are divided into:

a) Impersonals which always appear in the 3rd person, whereby the subject is directly expressed or implied:

<i>expressed subject</i>	<i>implied subject</i>
bie shi 'it rains' (rain falls)	gjemón (moti) 'it thunders' (the weather)
zë qelb 'it festers' (suppuration takes hold)	pëllët (lopa) 'lows' (the cow)

b) Impersonals without a subject, such as **erret** 'it becomes dark', **ndodh** 'it happens';

c) Impersonals which, although they occur only in the 3rd person, are closely related to the category of number through the personal pronoun in the indirect case. Despite this, the personal pronoun functions unmistakably as the logical subject. They are termed here **figurative Impersonals** due to their structure, often with a 'formal subject' which is always placed after the verb, e.g. më dhëmb **kryet** 'my head hurts (me)' (cf. 3. below). The same holds true for other impersonals of the type **bie shi**, where **shi** (Nom.) takes the place of the object in positive clauses.

251. In the presentation of the Impersonals according to **content** or **meaning**, two tense forms are given, Present and Aorist, which are the ones most used. Information on aspect or mood is also given in their most essential components with respect to the Present tense form, i.e. the lexical content.

1. Impersonals which express **natural phenomena** or occurrences:

<i>Present</i>	<i>Aorist</i>
agón 'it becomes twilight'	agoi
gdhin 'it dawns'	gdhiu
ngryset 'it becomes night'	u ngrys
erret 'it becomes dark'	u err
gjemón 'it thunders'	gjemoi
resh 'fine snow, rain falls'	reshi
rigón 'it drizzles'	rigoi
bie shi 'it rains'	ra shi
bie borë 'it snows'	ra borë
bie breshën (breshër) 'it hails'	ra breshën (breshër)
vetëtón ~ vetón 'there is lightning'	vetëtoi ~ vetoi
fryn 'it blows'	fryu
ngryn 'it freezes'	ngriu
cingëron 'it freezes strongly'	cingëroi
ban (bën) të ftohtë 'it becomes cold'	bani (bëri) të ftohtë

dêhet 'it thaws'	u de
vesón 'dew falls'	vesoi
bu(m)bullón 'it thunders'	bu(m)bulloi
bunón 'it flows'	bunoi
rîhet 'it becomes damp'	u ri (Geg u rî)
derdhet 'it overflows'	u derdh
ajet (ëhet) 'it becomes sultry'	u aj
ndulket ~ ndujket 'it becomes frosty'	u ndulk ~ ndujk
mbin 'it rises' (for seed)	mbiu
lulón ~ lulëzón 'it blooms'	luloi ~ lulëzoi
njomt 'it becomes green'	u njom
veshket 'it withers'	u veshk
ndryshket 'it rusts'	u ndryshk
skuqet 'it becomes red'	u skuq
lëbardhet 'it becomes whitish'	u lëbardh
zë gjak 'it haemorrhages'	zu gjak
zë qelb 'it festers'	zu qelb
i vjen erë 'it stinks'	i erdh erë

2. Impersonals relating to activities and conditions of animals

<i>Present</i>	<i>Aorist</i>
mbarset 'it becomes pregnant'	u mbars
ndërzhethet 'it copulates' (sheep)	u ndërzye
therpethet 'it copulates' (goat)	u therpye
ethet 'it is covered' (cow)	u eth
buhet 'it mates' (bovine)	u bue (bua)
pjell 'it gives birth' (animals)	polli
blegëron 'it bleats' (sheep)	blegëroi
tërfát 'snorts'	tërfati
pëllét 'lows' (bovine)	palli
bërlyket 'bellows' (bovine)	u berlýk
hingëllin 'neighs'	hingëlli
hungrón 'howls' (dog, wolf)	hungroi
hungërit 'howls' (dog, wolf)	hungëriti
kakaris 'cackles' (chicken)	kakarisi
cicërrón 'twitters' (bird)	cicërroi

3. The **figurative Impersonal verbs** are by no means verbs without a subject. Their 'logical subject' is expressed by the personal pronoun in the Dative: *më · të · i na · ju — u + pëlqen* 'it pleases me you (sg.) — him · us you (pl.) — them'. Sometimes, the object which is pleasing is placed in the Nominative case: **më pëlqen natyra** 'nature pleases me' (i.e. I like nature); it remains an open question whether the word in the Nom. is to be designated as the 'formal subject' or the 'logical object'. The verbs

of this category, which frequently exhibit a complete conjugation, approximately like the modal verbs (cf. § 172), are divided into two groups:

a) Figurative Impersonal verbs which express a **physical perception**:

më-të-i-na-ju-u + dhemb 'it hurts me-you (sg.), etc.

The essential here is a modal component where the **impersonal manner of expression** seems suitable:

<i>Present</i>	<i>Aorist</i>
a) më dhemb 'it hurts me'	më dhimbi ~ dhimbi
më djeg 'it burns me'	më dogj
më ther 'it stings me'	më theri
më vështiret 'it nauseates me'	m'u vështir
më velet 'it nauseates me'	m'u vel
më kruhet 'it itches me'	m'u kruec (krua)
më halet 'am ready to eat'	m'u hangër
më pihet 'am ready to drink'	m'u pi
më rrihet 'am ready to sit'	m'u ndej ~ ndenj
më përqethet mishi ~ mishtë 'have gooseflesh'	m'u përqeth mishtë
më ngjethet mishi 'it makes me shudder'	m'u ngjeth mishi
më bie të fikët ~ të hollët 'become faint'	më ra të fikët ~ të hollët
më bie e tokës 'become apoplectic'	më ra e tokës
më bie terr sysh 'becomes dark before my eyes'	më ra terr sysh
më çohet vneri (vreri) 'the bile rises'	m'u çue (çua) vneri (vreri)
më çohet të vjellë 'be overcome to vomit'	m'u çue (çua) të vjellë
më lidhet nye 'a knot forms in the throat'	m'u lidh nye 'could not swallow'
më nxehet gjaku 'the blood warms' (lit. 'my blood gets hot')	m'u nxe gjaku
më merret fryma 'have no air, choke'	m'u muer (muar) fryma
më merret goja 'stutter'	m'u muer (muar) goja
b) më pëlqën 'it pleases me'	më pëlqeu
më kandet 'it pleases me'	m'u kand
më dhimbet 'I am sorry'	m'u dhimb
më shpifet 'appears suddenly'	m'u shpif
më duhet 'I must'	m'u desh ~ desht
më duket 'it seems to me'	m'u duk
më jepet 'it inclines me'	m'u dha
më teket 'it occurs to me'	m'u tek
më bâhet (bëhet) 'it seems to me'	m'u bâ (bë)
më ndez 'succeed'	më ndezi
më përkët 'it belongs to me'	më përkiti
më hyn në punë 'it is useful to me'	më hyni (hyri) në punë

më vjen mirë/keq 'it makes me happy/unhappy'	më erdhi mirë/keq
më vjen ndorësh 'it comes to hand'	më erdhi ndorësh
më vjen marre 'it shames me'	më erdhi marre
më vjen mbarë 'succeed'	më erdhi mbarë
më shkon për shtat 'it is convenient for me'	më shkoi për shtat

The personal pronouns in the Dative, **më-të-i-na-ju-u**, + the Impersonal verb mark the inflection according to **number** and **person**.

4. There are a number of **Impersonals with modal value** which have become fixed in the 3 sg. They are denoted as **subjectless** Impersonal verbs:

<i>Present</i>	<i>Aorist</i>
ndodh 'it happens'	ndodhi
ngjan 'it happens'	ngjau
duhet 'it must'	u desh ~ desht
duket 'it seems'	u duk
mund 'it can'	u mund
lypet ~ lipset 'it must'	u lyp ~ lips
thuhet ~ thonë 'it is said'	u tha
përflitet 'it is bruited about'	u përflol
kuptohet 'it is understood'	u kuptue
synohet 'it is intended'	u synue

Notes

- In Common Albanian, many fixed forms of the auxiliary and modal verbs became conjugation particles (cf. § 173), as e.g. Arbëresh *dish* or *dej* 'it ought' + indefinite verbal forms. *dish* ~ *dej dhezur* 'it ought to be have been lit', Tosk *do prerë* 'it must be cut'
- In Buzuku (1555), verbal particles are attested which, despite their origin in Aorist forms, express the Imperfect.

vo: full Aor *vote* 'went' = *ajó vo me marre* 'she was taking her leave'

zu: full Aor *zum* 'began' = *zu me ardhunë* 'was coming'

These verbal particles have lost their original function, as have the auxiliary verbs in general ↘

Vocabulary

<i>fonde</i> pl. funds	<i>plak-u</i> arbitrator (cf. Kanun) <i>pleq</i>
<i>tërmët-i</i> earthquake <i>-e</i>	<i>brumbull-i</i> dung-beetle; bumble bee <i>brumbuj</i>
<i>fjali-a</i> sentence, clause <i>-∅</i>	<i>çerdhe-ja</i> nest <i>-∅</i>
<i>brisku i berberit</i> razor <i>brisqe</i>	<i>pulláz-i</i> house-top <i>-e</i>
<i>herbër-i</i> barber <i>-ë</i>	<i>vendas-i</i> local, native <i>-∅</i>
<i>rrebësh-i</i> catastrophe, cloud- burst <i>-e</i>	<i>fillim-i</i> beginning <i>-e</i>
<i>luán-i</i> lion <i>luanë</i> ~ <i>luaj</i>	<i>shqipe-ja</i> Albanian

<i>bisht-i</i> tail -a	<i>historik-e</i> historical
<i>hurdhë-a</i> waterhole -a	<i>i, e njëllotë</i> same
<i>hudhër-hudhra</i> ~ <i>hudër-hudra</i> garlic	<i>i, e ruajtur</i> preserved
<i>pishinë-a</i> swimming pool -a	<i>i, e ngushtuar</i> reduced
<i>punimi i diplomës</i> diploma work	<i>ngahera</i> sometimes
<i>maje-a</i> ~ <i>majë-a</i> peak, top, point	<i>rastësisht</i> by chance
-e ~ -a	<i>tash e mbrapa</i> from now on
<i>detar-i</i> seaman -ë	<i>mirëpo</i> anyhow, however, at any rate
<i>barkë-a</i> boat -a	<i>tani</i> now
<i>barkatar-i</i> boatman -ë	<i>përgjithësisht</i> in general
<i>breg-u</i> coast, shore; hill <i>brigje</i>	<i>mposht</i> repress, vanquish
<i>pleqni-a</i> council of elders (cf. Kanun) -∅	<i>çlodhem</i> rest
<i>dallëndyshë-a</i> (<i>dallëndyshe-ja</i>)	<i>gërryëj</i> scoop out, erode, scratch
swallow -a	<i>mbush</i> fill out, fill up
<i>hell-i</i> spit, skewer <i>hej</i>	<i>qes pleqni</i> go before the council of elders for judgment (cf. Kanun)
<i>rang-u</i> rank <i>rangje</i>	<i>i takon</i> it belongs
<i>fosil-i</i> fossil -e	<i>prush-i</i> glow
<i>koloni-a</i> settlement, colony -∅	<i>guxoj</i> dare, have courage
<i>mbulesë-a</i> cover, layer, stratum -a	<i>ngreh</i> build, erect
<i>gjeograf-i</i> geographer -ë	<i>përmbledh</i> reduce, draw together, concentrate
<i>lindje</i> east; rising; birth -∅	<i>zëvendësuj</i> replace
<i>të huej</i> (<i>të huaj</i>) foreigners	<i>mbuluj</i> cover, conceal
<i>Shqipëria e Mesme</i> Central Albania	<i>lëkundet</i> shakes
<i>shtetëror-e</i> state	<i>shkëlqej</i> shine
<i>evropian-e</i> European	<i>shënòj</i> note down, mark
<i>lokál-e</i> local	
<i>kombëtar-e</i> national	

Exercise 33

Ky qytét i ri po ndërtohet me fonde shtetërore, ai ishte ~ *qe* shkatërruar nga tërmeti. Të rinjtë po dëfrehen gjatë pushimeve verore. Vëllëzërit ngahera zihen mes tyre për çështje të vogla. Një fjalë popullore thotë: *brisku i berberit — më rrove e të rrova*: si shpjegohet kjo fjalë pa folje? Fjala e urtë: *mishu të piqet e helli mos të digjet* dëgjohet shpesh në shumë gjuhë evropiane. Mbi pópullin shqiptar kaluan shumë rrebeshe, por ai nuk u mposht. Mjeku që nuk shëron veten, s'mund të shërojë të tjerët. Luani njihet edhe nga bishti. Dhëpra ishte mësuar të pinte ujë në hurdhë. Pa ngrenë hudhrën s'të vjen era.

Exercise 34

In the summer, students bathe in the river and in the winter, they will bathe in the swimming pool of the house of sport. Do not go to a wedding

without being invited. He needed a whole year to accomplish his diploma work. His flesh shuddered, listening to the bitter news. Climbing the mountain, Kacel gasps for breath. He will rest when he reaches the top of the mountain.

Text 17

Gjarpni e dallëndysha

Hyni detari me barkë në dét. Shkoi mini e gërreu dërrasën e barkës e u mbush me ujë. Bërtiti i zoti i barkës:

– U mbytëm në ujë!

Dikënd në barkë ishte fshehtë një gjarpën; doli e i tha barkatarit:

– Sikur të shpëtój, çka më fal?

– Lyp çka don! — I tha ai.

Gjarpni futi kryet në birën e dërrasës dhe u ndal uji. Kur dolën në breg shëndosh e mirë, i tha detari gjarpnit:

— Na shpëtove! Më thuej çka lyp?

– Të lyp gjakun e njeriut!

– Nuk mundem me ta dhanë!

Si nuk mundesh me ma dhanë? Ti ma dhe fjalën se më jep çdo gjë që të lyp.

— Qesim pleqni! -- Tha detari. — Unë po zgjedh për plak dallëndyshën e ti zgjedh kë të dësh.

Gjarpni zgjodhi brúmbullin për plak. Brúmbulli doli e foli:

Gjarpnit i takón gjaku i njeriut.

– Paskë gjuhën e gjatë, — i tha dallëndysha brúmbullit. — Qite jashtë ta shohim!

Brúmbulli qiti gjuhën jashtë dhe dallëndysha ia preu me gërshanë *cek!*

— Ma ke prishë plakun, — i tha gjarpni dallëndyshës. — Tash e mbrapa nuk do të guxosh me ngrehë çerdhe askënd nëpër lisa se t'i ha zogjtë.

– Mos të qofsha falë! — Ia priti dallëndysha. — Tash e mbrapa do t'i çel zogjtë nën pullazin e njeriut ku gjarpni nuk guxon me hý.

Reading Exercise

Emri i pópullit tonë

Emri me të cilin të huajt e quajnë pópullin tonë *Albaner, Albanais, Albanese* etj. ka qenë përdorur dikur përgjithësisht si emër pópulli edhe në tokën shqiptare prej vëndasve vetë. Por tani ndër ne është përmbledhur në një përdorim lokál dhe është zëvendësuar nga emri *Shqiptár.*

Ruga historike që kanë përshkuar të dy emrat duket të ketë qenë e njëllotjë, po ajo rrugë që kanë ndjekur zakonisht emrat e pópujve. Që të dyja në fillim emra fisi, u ngritën me kohë një pas një në rangun e

emrit kombëtar. Emri i vjetër *Arhën, Arbër* u mbulua pastaj prej emrit *Shqiptar*. Mirpó kudó mbrenda tokës ku flitet shqipja, qoftë nëpër kolonitë tona, qoftë ndër shkrimtarë më të vjetër, qoftë në përdorim lokal të rúajtur a të ngushtuar të fisit, qoftë në emra vendesh, na shohim kudó se si emri *i moçëm i pópullit shkëlqén* si një fosil nën mbulesën e emrit të ri.

Shkrimi i emrit të vjetër ndër të huajt lëkundet midis trajtavet *Alb-* e *Arb-*; shqiptarët vetë kanë përdorur trajtën *Arb-*.

Gjeografi aleksandrin Ptolemaios i shekullit të II. pas Krishtit shënón te karta e tij e botës midis Orestis e Almoperu, në lindje të Lezhës (Lissus) fisin e Ἰλβανοί me qytetin Ἰλβανόπολις. Fisi banonte në Shqipëri të Mesme.

Eqrem Çabej

Lesson 18 — Leksioni i tetëmbëdhjetë

The Verb (IV)

Verb Formation

252. According to their formation, Albanian verbs are divided into a) **underived** and b) **derived** verbs. The first category includes primary, inherited verbs which, in the course of linguistic history, have become fused in the verbal system with a new verbal stratum, especially in the inflection. The separate treatment of each stratum is presented here not only on methodological grounds, but primarily because of the great difference in formal structure and semantics between the older and the newer verbal systems which is frequently apparent in the morphology of this part of speech.

253. The morphological processes of the **primary, inherited verbs** are recognized particularly in the constitution of the **verbal Classes**, such as e.g. in **ablaut**, which is never found in any later verbal constructions or in the oldest loanwords (cf. §§ 202-205).

The formal and semantic analysis of verb formation in its unchanged components is meaningful and useful because it permits access to the earlier dynamic inflectional structure of the verb. On this basis a connection between the modes of construction of the inherited verbs and those of verbs derived from them will be made (cf. § 254).

The lexical unity which provides the foundation is applicable for both the older and the new methods of construction for the 1 sg. Present Indicative. Both construction strata have prefixes and suffixes which, in most cases, certainly lead to the fact that the primary semantic functions are modified. Conspicuous in the older methods of construction are the frequent formal differences between Present stem and Aorist or Participle stem. For that

reason, the Present and Aorist stems are listed in the examples given below. It may be presumed that the double forms of Present and Aorist (or Participle) which occur in the same context in the older authors were semantically differentiated. Such variants occur today in dialects without different semantic functions. The question of whether remains or extensions of aspectual components are hidden here may only be resolved by thoroughgoing studies of the older texts, especially Buzuku (1555), and by considering the data provided by archaic peripheral dialects.

In order to avoid an exaggerated formalism in the assessment of semantic function arising through word-formative modification, it is perhaps often more rational to confine description to the more general terms *intensification* or *emphasis*.

Notes

- Components of aspect are also indicated in Old Albanian by vowel alternation: *ie-e/a*:
bie(r) 'bring' (not durative) -- bar ~ ëmbár 'carry' (durative)
vjerr (< *verr-no) 'hang' (not durative) — var 'hang in rows' (durative).
(Cf. also Jokl, IF 37, 105).
- In documented Old Albanian, as well as in the peripheral dialects, variants of verbs occur in the same context and in the inflection with and without prefixes, among which are *v-/b-*, *d-*, *ën-/ëmb-*, *k-* and *l-*:

<i>Present</i>	<i>Aorist</i>
des ~ vdes ~ bdes 'die'	diqa ~ vdiqa
vgjanj 'find'	gjeta
djerr ~ bdjerr 'lose'	bora
bonj 'dive'	bova
zâ 'seize, attain'	zuna
ënzâ 'grasp, finish learning'	ënzuna (intensive)
danj ~ ëndánj 'separate'	dava
jes 'remain' √-et	ëmbeta
qyr 'look'	qyra
kqyr 'look'	kqyra (intensive)
zbardh 'make white'	zbardha (inchoative)
lëbárdh ~ lbardh 'whiten a bit'	lëbardha (diminutive)

In Gjon Buzuku's *Missale*, from which most of the above variants are taken, the prefix is often dropped in the Aorist (cf. *gjeta*); an exception, however, is Pres. *jes* — Aor. *ëmbeta*.

- The primary verbs in Old and conservative Albanian end in the 1 sg. in.
 - a stem vowel:
ha 'eat', ngre 'lift', pi 'drink', fle 'sleep';
 - the ending *-onj* ~ *uonj* (*-uanj*):
jetónj 'live', shkruonj ~ shkruanj 'write'
 - the ending *-(i)nj* ~ *ënj*, *-ën* (unstressed, as the verbal stem is added to it):
shtrinj 'stretch out' (shtri-nj), hapinj ~ hapën 'open', ecën ~ ecinj ~ eci 'go, walk';
 - a stem consonant:
ënbúsh 'fill, make full', sjell 'bring', zgjdh 'loose';
 - the ending *-te* (Albanian dialects of Greece):
marrte 'take', rjapte 'flay';

VI. the ending *-as/-es*, attached to the verbal stem:
 prej 'cut', pres 'idem'

Examples of Class I

<i>Present</i>	<i>Aorist</i>
ble 'buy'	bleva ~ blejta
fle 'sleep'	fjeta
bre 'gnaw'	breva ~ brejta ~ brita
ngre 'lift'	ngrita
mba 'hold, keep'	mbajta
di 'know'	dita
ve ~ vē 'place'	vuna (vura)
shtie 'insert'	shtuna (shtura ~ shtëna)
duo 'want'	desha ~ deshta
shpie 'bring'	shpuna (shpura ~ shpëna)
qell 'bring'	qella ~ qellta
njoh 'know'	njoha ~ njohta ~ njofta
prek 'touch'	preka ~ preqa
andërr 'dream'	andrra

Examples of Class II, III, IV, VI

<i>Present</i>	<i>Aorist</i>
andërronj 'see in dream'	andërrova
punonj 'work'	punova
rronj 'live'	rrova ~ rrojta
shkruponj ~ shkruanj 'write'	shkrova ~ shkrojta
gjuonj 'hunt'	gjova ~ gjuojta
ruonj 'guard'	ruojta
kienj 'prop up vines'	kjeva
hinj 'enter'	hina (hira) ~ hjita
fsheh ~ fshënj 'hide'	fsheha
hap ~ hapën ~ hapënj 'open'	hapa
tesh ~ teshtinj 'sneeze'	tesha ~ teshta
leh ~ lehte (Arvanit) 'bark'	leha
sos ~ soste (Gk ἔσσω) 'end'	sosa
grish 'invite'	grisha
grëshas 'call, be called'	grisha
prek 'touch'	preka ~ preqa
përkás 'touch'	preka
flas 'speak'	fola
thirr 'call'	thirra
thërrás 'call to'	thirra
vraj 'wound'	vrava
vras 'kill, wound mortally'	vrava
shtjerr 'draw, scoop out'	shtora
shtërrás 'drain'	shtora
ngas 'excite, drive on'	ngava
shkal 'full (cloth)'	shkela
shkel 'tread'	shkela
shklas 'tread even'	shkela
ngjet 'it happens'	ngjau

The ending *-as/-es (-et)* belongs to the class of so-called *t*-verbs, but it must be considered here as a word-formative suffix with the function of the *ingressive*

component. *-et* is derived from a reconstructed nexus vowel stem + **-tiō* < **(-t-iō)*, in which the *-t-* is to be considered as an augment between the stem and the ending **-iō-*

4. The following should be noted regarding the characterization of a *-te* (V) formant:

a) *-te* occurs in many Albanian dialects of Greece as a regular conjugation ending for the 1 sg. Present Indicative, mostly alternating with a \emptyset morpheme: *njoh*te, *njoh* 'know' (cf. H. J. Sasse, 'Das Verbalssystem der arvanitischen Mundart von Vurkoti (Andros) in *Etnia albanese e minoranze linguistiche in Italia*. Palermo, 1982). As an end-morpheme, *-te* is attested in the Arbëresh dialects of southern Italy (cf. the 'rhapsodies'), as well as in folkloric texts from Labëria (Southern Albania).

In the Present (Subjunctive) *-te* also appears in the Geg text, *Kunvendt i Arbënit* (1703). *e me gojë ngazi flasnjete* 'so that I may speak to you with a smiling mouth'.

In Da Lecce (1716), *-te* occurs as an end-morpheme in the 1 sg. Imperfect. *unë shërbënjete* 'I served', *unë donjete* 'I wanted', for this phase of Geg, however, the variant without *-te* is also attested. *unë sherbenje* and *donje*. In Buzuku (1555), the same morpheme is encountered in the verb *vete* 'go'. *e gegshë se thoshnë: vemte :vem-te; em Dotam* 'and heard how they said: we are going to Dothan' (Lat. *eamus in Dothan*). The verb of the Baptismal Formula (1462) is also provided with a *-t* ending *pagëzont* 'I baptize'.

It may therefore be concluded that *-te* (as well as *-t* in the Baptismal Formula) is a morpheme of Common Albanian and hence not a hybrid form. As an alternative variant of the \emptyset morpheme, *-te* may have had a function of expressivity, in any case, its function as a formant for the modification of the respective tense form should not be dismissed out of hand.

5. In the Arbëresh dialects of Macchia (birthplace of the poet Jeronim De Rada), S. Demetrio Corone, and S. Sofia, double forms are present for all verbs with the diphthong *-te-* in the stem. The content is formally differentiated by means of the alternation *te t* and the augment *-mj* for the second variant.

<i>Present</i>	<i>Aorist</i>
prier ~ pririnj 'turn'	prora ~ prira
bier ~ birinj 'lose'	bora ~ búarta
tier ~ trinj 'spin'	tora ~ túarta
siell ~ sillinj 'bring'	solla ~ súallta

The second variants of the Aorist are attested today only in the neighboring Arbëresh dialects; perhaps they indicate an old binary system in the Aorist or they may have arisen later as analogies to the plural forms *búartim*, *súalltim* (cf. also § 229, Note 2).

6. In Albanian there is a small group of so-called *Preterito-Presents* which are Preterite stems that have taken on a Present meaning, e.g. *resh* ~ *reshën* (*shi*, *borë*) from *rashë* 'fell' (Aor of *bie* 'fall'):

bie (*shi*, *borë*) 'rains, snows': durative

resh (*shi*, *borë*) 'rains, snows or rains, snows slowly': iterative-diminutive

254. The **derived verbs** have increased at a tremendous rate since the establishment of the Albanian state. A parallel development has been the enormous simplification of the mechanism of word-formation. This includes the abolition in word-formation of many morpho-phonological processes (vowel alternation, palatalization, etc.), as well as the reduction

of formants, while particular productivity has been exhibited by prefixes and suffixes with **causative-factitive value**, such as the affix **për-** (për-uró) 'consecrate') and the whole verbal class in **-oj** of the type **mekanizój** 'mechanize'.

255. Basically, the derived verbs may be formed by **prefixion** or **suffixion** or a combination of the two. Such verbs are thus derived from various types of words.

1. From **primary** or already **derived verbs**: **përçáj** 'hack, mince, cut through' (**për-çaj**): **çaj** 'split'; **përdoró** 'use' from **përdór** (**për-** + **dorë-a** 'hand') 'idem', where **përdoró** contains more intensity or causation and from which other word types are derived, such as **i, e përdoruar** 'useful'.
2. From **nouns**: **çmend** 'drive mad' (**ç-** 'de-, un-' = privative prefix + **mend** 'mind'); **punó** 'work' (**punë** 'work').
3. From **adjectives**: **zbardh** 'whiten' (inchoative-causative) from **i, e bardhë** 'white'; **shurdhó** 'deafen' (causative) from **i, e shurdhë** 'deaf'.
4. From **adverbs**: **mposht** 'conquer' (causative) from **poshtë** 'under'.
5. From **prepositions** of an adverbial type: **përparó** 'advance, proceed' from **përpara** 'before, in front of'.
6. From **phrases**: **zëvendësó** 'replace' from **zë vend** 'take a place'.

256. The following **prefixes** are typical for derived verbs: **për-/shpër-, sh-/zh- ~ ç- ~ (xh-), n- (< ën)/mb- ~ m(ë), s-/z-, t-/d-, stër-/zdër-**; these are fundamentally divided according to voiceless voiced, approximately like **shkarkó**/**zhgarkó** 'unload'. Untypical for verb formation are the prepositions in general: **mbi-** 'over', **nën-** 'under', **ndër-** 'between', etc.

The prefixes of the meaning-bearing word, however, also determine the aspectual or modal component of the derived verb which often, through the superimposed concept, expresses intensification:

<i>Prefix</i>	<i>Original word</i>	<i>Derived verb</i>	<i>Component</i>
për-.shpër-	caktó 'determine'	përcaktó 'define'	intensive
	shkruaj 'write'	përshkruaj 'describe'	durative
	sos 'complete'	përsós 'perfect'	intensive
	mbledh 'collect'	përmbledh 'sum up'	intensive
	ul 'fetch down'	përrúl 'lower'	intensive
	gjak 'blood'	përgjak 'make bloody'	causative
	baltë 'mud'	përbált 'soil'	incho.-caus.
	buj ~ bunj 'spend the night'	përbúj 'let spend the night'	causative
	jashtë 'outside'	përjashtë 'exclude'	causative
	blej 'buy'	shpërbléj 'ransom, pay off'	causative
	laj 'wash'	shpërláj 'rinse'	intensive
	koqe-koqja 'grain'	shpërkóq 'gin'	intensive

sh-/zh-	këmbëj 'exchange'	shkëmbëj 'substitute'	inchoative
ç-/xh-	lidh 'tie'	çlidh 'untie, set free'	resultative
	lodh 'am tired'	shlodh ~ çlodh 'refresh'	inchoative
	vesh 'dress'	xhvesh ~ çvesh 'undress'	resultative
	armatós 'arm'	çarmatós 'disarm'	resultative
n-/mb-	garkój 'load'	ngarkój 'load, charge'	causative
~ m(ë)-	gjesh 'knead'	ngjesh 'knead through'	intensive
	vesh 'dress'	mvesh 'put on (clothes)'	causative
	lidh 'tie'	mbledh 'collect'	causative
	plak 'old'	mplak 'age'	causative
	sy 'eye'	mësýj 'raid'	ingressive
s-/z-	kuq 'red'	skuq 'redden'	inchoative
	gjatë 'long'	zgjat 'lengthen'	durative
	mbath 'put on shoes'	zbath 'take off shoes'	inchoative
	butë 'soft'	zbut 'soften'	inchoative
t-'d-	hollój 'thin'	t-hollój 'refine'	intensive
	kurr 'reduce'	tkurr 'draw together'	inchoative
stër-/zđer-	thom ~ them 'say'	stërthóm 'repeat'	iterative
	keq 'bad'	stërkëq 'worsen'	inchoative
	gjanë 'wide'	zđerëgjaj 'stretch out'	intensive
mbi-	kqyr 'look'	mbikqýr 'watch'	durative
nën-	çmoj 'value'	nënçmój 'undervalue'	durative
ndër-	hyj 'enter'	ndërhýj 'intervene'	ingressive

257. A very small number of verbs reduplicate the stem and thus — as is the case in noun formation (cf. §98, b) *motmôt* 'a whole year' — produce a durative or iterative component: **murmurój** 'whisper', **nynyrój** 'complain in whispers', **belbëzój** 'stutter', as well as the intransitives **kakarís ~ kokoríz** 'cackle' and **bu(m)bullón** 'it thunders'.

258. The connection of the simple verb with that provided with a prefix yields, in terms of function, a strengthened causation or a higher degree of intensity:

laj e shpërláj 'wash and wash out, rinse'

plaket e shplaket 'one becomes old and falls apart'

qesh e ngjesh (< ën-qesh) 'laugh and mock'

adverbial: flas qesh e ngjesh 'speak half in earnest, half in jest'

trashet e ndrashet (< n-trashet) 'become fat and fatter' (Arbëresh)

259. The **derived verbs** of modern times have increased primarily through suffixion, as the **zero-verbs** of the type **hap** 'open' and **pi** 'drink' are no longer productive. They are divided into two groups:

Group I comprises the derivations in **-oj** (< -onj), which are the most productive.

Group II comprises those in **-os, -is, -it**, which are, aside from the ones in **-os** less productive.

Notes

1. It should be noted again that the derived verbs, through simplification of the means of construction, have lost the aspectual semantic differentiation, as their components are now expressed more periphrastically (cf. § 254, Note 1).
2. The intensity of meaning of any derived verb also depends upon the part of speech from which the verb derives. Empirically, a verb derived from another verb exhibits more intensity of meaning than one derived from an adjective or a noun.

ndrit 'light' (inchoative)

ndriçoj 'illuminate' (causative)

zverdh 'turn pale' (inchoative)

zverdhøj 'make yellow' (causative)

In such cases of derived verb formation, a direct connection between the old and new means of construction of Albanian verbs may be recognized (cf. § 253, Notes)

260. **Group I**, with **-oj** suffix, is divided into two classes:

Class a) includes the verbs in **-oj** whose stem has not been amplified and b) verbs whose stem has been amplified by an infix in the process of derivation from another part of speech. Among these infixes are **-n-/-r-** (rhotacism), **-t-**, **-s-** **-z-**, etc.

Examples of **Class a)**

gur 'stone': ngurr	-	ngurrøj 'let solidify; hesitate'
(< ën-gur-n-) 'petrify'		
pikë 'drop': pik 'drip'	-	pikøj 'spray; lick'
dredh 'turn'	-	dredhøj 'make a curve'
ndal 'stop'	-	ndaløj 'delay, impede'
prek 'touch'	--	përkøj 'put together, correspond'
kthjell 'brighten'	-	kthjelløj 'clarify'
gjurmë 'trace, track'	-	gjurmøj 'track, follow, pursue'
mur 'wall'	-	murøj 'immure'
shtresë 'layer'	-	shtresøj 'stratify'
mjek 'physician'	-	mjekøj 'heal, treat'
plagë 'wound'	-	plagøj 'wound'
reklamë 'advertisement'	-	reklamøj 'advertise'
shkurtë 'short'	-	shkurtøj 'shorten'
mjaft 'enough'	-	mjaftøj 'it suffices'
dyfish 'twofold'	-	dyfishøj 'double'
prapa 'behind, back'	-	prapøj 'throw back, repulse'
falemnderës 'thanks!'	--	falënderøj 'thank'

Examples of Class b)

zot 'lord'	— zotnój (zotërój, zot-n-oj, zotë-r-oj) 'rule'
mish 'meat'	— mishnój (mishërój) 'embody, incarnate'
plak-pleq 'old man-men'	— pleqnój (pleqërój) 'advise, judge, assess'
sy 'eye'	— synój 'aim at, intend'
urdhën (urdhër) 'order'	— urdhnój (urdhërój) 'order'
gjarpën (gjarpër) 'snake'	— gjarpnój (gjarpërój) 'wind in and out'
lumni 'prosperity, glory'	· lumnój 'glorify'
flakë 'flame': flak 'throw'	-- flakërój 'throw away'
lajm 'news'	— lajmërój 'inform'
shkret 'forsaken, alone'	·· shkretnój ~ shkretój 'devastate'
poshtë 'under'	poshtnój (poshtërój) 'lower, humiliate'
njoh 'know'	— njoftój (njof-t-oj) 'inform, make known'
vroj 'observe'	— vrojtój 'analyse, observe closely'
arsye 'understanding'	· arsyetój 'reason, justify'
tym 'smoke'	·· tymtój 'go up in smoke'
mirë 'good'	·· miratój 'approve'
farkë 'forge, anvil'	— farkëtój 'forge'
shqip 'Albanian'	— shqiptój 'utter, pronounce'
frikë 'fear'	— frikësój (frikë-s-oj) 'threaten, frighten'
keq 'bad'	— keqësój 'aggravate, make worse'
krye 'head'	-- kryesój 'lead, preside'
pak 'little'	— pakësój 'lessen'
tjetër 'other'	tjetërsój 'transform, transfer'
valle 'dance, folkdance'	- vallëzój (vallë-z-oj) 'dance'
degë, degëz 'branch'	— degëzój 'ramify'
lule 'flower'	·· lulëzój 'flourish, make flourish'
mekanizëm ~ mekanizim 'mechanism'	·· mekanizój 'mechanize'
industrializim 'industrializa- tion'	— industrializój 'industrialize'

Notes

1. It is justifiable to maintain that not all of the above infixes are amplifying elements, but rather parts of the word stem, as e.g. *-n r-* in *gjarpnój, gjarpërój* from *gjarpën, gjarpër*. In this case the derived verb belongs to Class a) It is certain that the old mechanism of verb derivation with *-ën* and *-t-s* (cf. § 253, Notes) cannot be separated from this means of construction, *-ën, -t s* are old verbal suffixes.
2. To the amplifying suffixes also belong *-l ll-* and perhaps *-z-* in some cases, all three of diminutive origin:
pikë 'drop': pikël 'little drop' — pikëlón 'it is drizzling' (dimin.-iterat)
kuq 'red': kuqlemët 'reddish' — kuqëlój 'blush'
xixë, xixël 'spark, small spark' — xixëllón 'it sparkles, glitters'
3. The *-h-* infix in formations is purely epenthetic (cf., however, *-h-* as a Passive marker, § 236): *po* 'yes' — *pohój* 'assent'; *mos, mo-* 'not' — *mohòj* 'deny'.

261. **Group II.** with suffixes **-os, -is, -it** is being decisively displayed today by the new verbal derivations of Group I. A sign of this process is constituted by the variants of the **-oj** and **-os** constructions:

palós ~ palój 'fold'	plagós ~ plagój 'wound'
varrós ~ vorrój (Geg) 'bury'	farós ~ farój 'destroy, exterminate'
brumós ~ brumój 'knead, form'	fundós ~ fundój 'send to the bottom, sink'
burgós ~ burgój 'arrest'	vilós ~ vilój 'stamp, mark'

These suffixes are primarily used in the construction of Greek and Turkish loanwords:

vend 'place'	vendós 'decide, establish'; vendój 'shelter'
lyrë 'cooking fat'	lyrós 'grease'
farmák 'poison'	— farmakós 'poison'
ajër 'air'	— ajrós 'air, ventilate'
ngjyrë 'color'	— ngjyrós 'dye'
dankë 'spot'	dankós 'stamp, brand, stigmatize'
çelnik 'steel'	çelnikós 'steel, temper'
llogari 'calculation'	llogaris 'calculate'
ujdi 'compromise'	ujdis 'put in order'
sajdi 'respect'	sajdis 'respect'
bat-mák 'perish' (Turk.)	batis 'destroy, finish'
harxh 'victuals, provisions'	— harxhit 'spend, squander'

Note

The suffixes *-os, -is, -it* derive from the Aor. endings $-\omega\sigma\alpha, -\omega\sigma\epsilon\zeta, -\iota\sigma\alpha, -\iota\sigma\epsilon$ (cf. N. Boretzky, *Der türkische Einfluss auf das Alb.*, I, 248 ff.). These must be distinguished from *-is -it* in Slavic loanwords, such as *shetis.shëtit* 'go for a walk', *porosis/porosit* 'arrange', which have become integrated by analogy to the *t*-verbs (cf. § 203, c)

Vocabulary

era e veriut north wind
era e jugut south wind
procës-i process *-e*
fabrikë-a factory *-a*
kështjellë-a fortress *-a*
legjendë-a legend *-a*
shtrigë-a witch *-a*
vashëz-a girl *-a*
grindje-a quarrel $-\emptyset$
zot-i owner, lord *-ë*
mjek-u doctor *-ë*

përpykje-a effort, attempt $-\emptyset$
vizitor-i visitor *-ë*
derr-i wild boar *-a*
klithmë-a cry, scream *-a*
anë-a area *-a*
mallkim-i curse *-e*
studenteshë-a female student *-a*
farkëtâr-i smith *-ë*
pus-i spring, well *-a*
udhëtâr-i traveller *-ë*
gllënjë-a gulp *-a*

<i>etjē-a</i> thirst	<i>ndonjëherë</i> sometimes
<i>pëllëmbë-a</i> span -ë	<i>prapë</i> again
<i>gjelbërim-i</i> verdure -e	<i>herë pas here</i> from time to time
<i>dekôr-i</i> splendor, decor, landscape -e	<i>shumë</i> much
<i>kopë-ja</i> herd -∅	<i>dikûr</i> once, long ago
<i>dimër-dimri</i> winter -a	<i>përsëris</i> repeat
<i>banôr-i</i> inhabitant, native -ë	<i>banôj</i> inhabit
<i>çakáll-i</i> jackal <i>çakej</i>	<i>ankohem</i> complain
<i>i, e mekanizuar</i> mechanized	<i>lëshój klithma</i> cry, scream
<i>i, e panusruar</i> unmarried	<i>kujtój (më kujtón)</i> remember (it reminds me)
<i>i, e lodhur</i> tired	<i>vafsh në Ksamil!</i> may you (sg.) land in Ksamil
<i>shkëmbôr-e</i> rocky	<i>në të dalë të dimrit</i> at the close of winter
<i>i përhershëm, e përhershme</i> constant	<i>stërpyjëk</i> overbake, burn
<i>hormovít-e</i> native of Hormova	<i>trefshój</i> triple
<i>anglëz-e</i> Englishman	<i>më ka hije</i> it is good for me
<i>i, e egër</i> wild	<i>sajdis</i> honor, respect
<i>i, e mbushur</i> full	<i>shuaj etjen</i> slake the thirst, quench
<i>i, e shkretë</i> forsaken, alone, desolate	<i>dallój</i> distinguish, note, discern
<i>gjithnjë</i> always	<i>dimëroj (Geg dimnój)</i> overwinter
<i>shpejt</i> soon	<i>popullój</i> populate
<i>nja disá herë</i> sometimes, several times	

Vocabulary to Text 18

<i>do vëjsh kambën</i> = <i>do të vësh këmbën</i> 'you will tread on, enter'
<i>n'se i rashë në të</i> 'if I have guessed': <i>i bie në të</i> 'guess correctly'
<i>limá-ni (limán-i)</i> 'harbor' <i>limane</i>
<i>prij mbarë</i> 'promote, foster, encourage, favor'
<i>ndihmë do t'ishja bâ</i> 'I would have helped you': <i>i bâhem ndihmë</i> 'help him'
<i>s'ndin</i> = <i>s'ndien</i> 'does not feel'
<i>mirnjohje</i> = <i>mirënjohje</i> 'gratitude'
<i>vodhe degëliga</i> 'wild bouquet, mountain ash, rowan'

Exercise 35

Era e veriut e ajó e jugut gjenden gjithnjë në luftë: e para e egërsón motin, ndërsa e dyta e zbut. Bora resh malesh dhe shiu rigón fushash. Proceset e punës në fabrikën e re janë shtatëdhjetë për qind të mekanizúara. Legjenda popullore thotë se nusja me emrin Rozafë qe muruar në kështjellën e

Shkodrës. Kur plaku u mplak harroi edhe legjendat e lashta. Shtiriga i tha vashëzës arbëreshe: *gëzohu nuse e panusruar, se vjen vjeshta shpejt!* Një fjalë e urtë arbëreshe thotë: *gjaku ujë nuk bëhet ~ bënet*. Vallja vallëzohet, dega degëzohet dhe fjala e mirë miratohet. Buka në furrë u poq dhe u stërpôq.

Exercise 36

Please pronounce this Albanian word correctly. A bad word is tripled in a quarrel. The house was changed several times from one owner to another. It is not proper for you not to honor (respect) your parents. The (female) student complained that her head hurt. The physician heals and the smith forges.

Text 18

(As an example of poetic translation, four triplets from the *Divina Commedia* are given here (Inferno, XV 55-66). Brunetto Latini prophesies success for the poet Dante and sharply condemns the people of Florence.)

E ai: "Po ndoqe yllin tand, lumnúeshëm
pa tjetër do vëjsh kambën në limá,
n'se i rashë në të kur rroja i gëzúeshëm;
sikúr prej botës shpejt mos t'ishja ndá,
tue pá se qielli mbarë kaq po ta prin
në punën tande ndihmë do t'ishja bá.
Por t'keqin popull që mirnjohje s'ndin,
që Fjézolën pat lanë e për rrezik
ruen edhe sot të shkambit egërsinë,
mirë tue i bá, do ta bâsh anmik;
dhe kështú ásht, mes vodhesh degëliga
s'ka mundësi të dalë i ambli fik.

(Trans. by Pashko Gjeçi: *Komedia Hyjnore*
I. Tirana 1960)

Reading Exercise

Ksamili dikúr

Në Ksamil kishte një pus, ku mund të ndalej udhëtari i lodhur të pinte një gllënjë ujë për të shuar etjen. Rreth këtij pusi ai dallonte një pëllëmbë gjelbërim në këtë dekor të egër shkëmbor ku s'guxonte të vinte dorë njeriu. Vinin ndonjëherë këtú kopetë për të dimëruar, por në të dalë të dimrit ató niseshin për udhë e këtú zotëronin prapë banorët e tij të përherëshëm: çakejtë dhe derrat e egër (egjër). Përpjekje për të populluar Ksamilin janë përsëritur herë pas here. Më

1774 erdhën këtë dhe banuan 200 familje hormovite. Më 1835 vizitori angléz Lik Uiliam Martin, i cili fjeti një natë në Butrint shkruan: "Derrat e egër në pyje janë shumë, vendi është i mbushur me çakëj, që nëtëve lëshojnë klithma që të kujtojnë fushën e Palestinës". Kaq i shkretë ishte ky vend, kaq i egër sa shpesh banorët e kësaj ane shprehjen "vafsh në Ksamil!" e përdornin si mallkimin më të madh.

Petro Çerkezi (*Zëri i popullit*, 9.1.1983)

Lesson 19 — Leksioni i nandëmbëdhjetë

The Verb (V)

The Full Paradigm of the Conjugation; Irregular Verbs

262. In order to provide a summary of the full paradigm of the conjugation, one vocalic stem verb (1st Conjugation) and one consonantal stem verb (2nd Conjugation) are inflected below according to number and person in both **Active** and **Medio-Passive** in all **moods** and **tenses**, following the order given in §163.

	ACTIVE	MEDIO-PASSIVE
263.		INDICATIVE
		Present a)
	unë duròj	durohëm
	'endure'	'am endured'
	ti duròn	durohesh
	ai, ajò duròn	durohet
	na (ne) durojmë	duròhemi
	ju duroni	duròheni
	atá, ató durojnë	durohen
		Present b)
	po duròj etc.	po durohem etc.
	'am enduring'	'am being endured'
		Imperfect a)
	duroja	duròhesha
	'endured'	'was endured'
	duroje	duròheshe
	duronte	durohej
	durojim	duròheshim
	durojit	duròheshit
	durojin	duròheshin

po duroja etc.
'was enduring'

Geg Imperfect a): durosha
- duroshin (Active)

durova
'endured'
durove
duroi
duruem (duruam)
duruet (duruat)
duruen (duruam)

kam durue (duruar)
'have endured'
ke durue (duruar)
ka durue (duruar)
kemi durue (duruar)
keni durue (duruar)
kanë durue (duruar)

kisha durue (duruar)
'had been enduring'
kische durue (duruar)
kishte durue (duruar)
kishim durue (duruar)
kishit durue (duruar)
kishin durue (duruar)

pata durue (duruar)
'had endured'
pate durue (duruar)
pat(i) durue (duruar)
patëm durue (duruar)
(patët durue (duruar)
patën durue (duruar)

po duròhesha etc.
'was being endured'

duroshe – duronte – duroshim – duroshit

Imperfect b)

Aorist

u durova
'was endured'
u durove
u durue (duruam)
u duruem (duruam)
u duruet (duruat)
u duruen (duruam)

Perfect

jam durue (duruar)
'have been endured'
je durue (duruar)
âsht (ëishtë) durue (duruam)
jemi durue (duruar)
jeni durue (duruar)
janë durue (duruar)

Pluperfect I

isha durue (duruar)
'had been being endured'
ishe durue (duruar)
ishte durue (duruar)
ishim durue (duruar)
ishit durue (duruar)
ishin durue (duruar)

Pluperfect II

qeshë durue (duruar)
'had been endured'
qe durue (duruar)
qe durue (duruar)
qemë durue (duruar)
qetë durue (duruar)
qenë durue (duruar)

Future (Active)

I	II	III
do të duròj	kam për të durue (duruar) 'will endure'	kam me durue
do të duròsh	ke për të durue (duruar)	ke me durue
do të durojë	ka për të durue (duruar)	ka me durue
do të durojmë	kemi për të durue (duruar)	kemi me durue
do të duroni	keni për të durue (duruar)	keni me durue
do të durojnë	kanë për të durue (duruar)	kanë me durue

Note

Variant I = Common Albanian; Variant II = expression of finality, Variant III = used only in Geg.

Future (Medio-Passive)

I	II	III
do të durohem	kam për t'u durue (duruar) 'will have endured'	kam me u durue
do të durohesh	ke për t'u durue (duruar)	ke me u durue
do të durohet	ka për t'u durue (duruar)	ka me u durue
do të duròhemi	kemi për t'u durue (duruar)	kemi me u durue
do të duròheni	keni për t'u durue (duruar)	keni me u durue
do të durohen	kanë për t'u durue (duruar)	kanë me u durue

Future Perfect (Active)

I	II
do të kem durue (duruar)	kam për të pasë durue (duruar) 'I will have endured'
do të kesh durue (duruar)	ke për të pasë durue (duruar)
do të ketë durue (duruar)	ka për të pasë durue (duruar)
do të kemi durue (duruar)	kemi për të pasë durue (duruar)
do të keni durue (duruar)	keni për të pasë durue (duruar)
do të kenë durue (duruar)	kanë për të pasë durue (duruar)
	III
	kam me pasë durue
	ke me pasë durue
	ka me pasë durue
	kemi me pasë durue
	keni me pasë durue
	kanë me pasë durue

Future Perfect (*Medio-Passive*)

I

do të jem durue (duruar)

'will have been endured'

do të jesh durue (duruar)

do të jetë durue (duruar)

do të jemi durue (duruar)

do të jeni durue (duruar)

do të jenë durue (duruar)

II

kam për të qenë durue (duruar)

ke për të qenë durue (duruar)

ka për të qenë durue (duruar)

kemi për të qenë durue (duruar)

keni për të qenë durue (duruar)

kanë për të qenë durue (duruar)

III

kam me qenë durue

ke me qenë durue

ka me qenë durue

kemi me qenë durue

keni me qenë durue

kanë me qenë durue

ACTIVE

MEDIO-PASSIVE

264.

SUBJUNCTIVE

Present

të duróq

'that I endure'

të durósh

të durojë

të durojmë

të duroni

të durojnë

të durohem

'that I am endured'

të durohesh

të durohet

të duróhemi

të duróheni

të durohen

Imperfect

të duroja

'that I endured'

të duroje

të duronte

të durojim

të durojit

të durojin

të duróhesha

'that I was endured'

të duróheshe

të durohej

të duróheshim

të duróheshit

të duróheshin

Geg Imperf. Subj.: të durosha — duroshe — duronte — duroshim — duroshit — duroshin (Active)

të kem durue (duruar)
 'that I have endured'
 të kesh durue (duruar)
 të ketë durue (duruar)
 të kemi durue (duruar)
 të keni durue (duruar)
 të kenë durue (duruar)

të kisha durue (duruar)
 'that I had endured'
 të kishe durue (duruar)
 të kishte durue (duruar)
 të kishim durue (duruar)
 të kishit durue (duruar)
 të kishin durue (duruar)

265.

CONDITIONAL

Present

do të duroja
 'would endure'
 do të duroje
 do të duronte
 do të duronim
 do të duronit
 do të duronin

do të duróhesha
 'would be endured'
 do të duróheshe
 do të durohej
 do të duróheshim
 do të duróheshit
 do të duróheshim

Geg: do të durosha duroshe · · duronte — duroshim — duroshit
 duroshin (Active)

Perfect

do të kisha durue (duruar)
 'would have endured'
 do të kishe durue (duruar)
 do të kishte durue (duruar)
 do të kishim durue (duruar)
 do të kishit durue (duruar)
 do të kishin durue (duruar)

do të isha durue (duruar)
 'would have been endured'
 do të ishe durue (duruar)
 do të ishte durue (duruar)
 do të ishim durue (duruar)
 do të ishit durue (duruar)
 do të ishin durue (duruar)

266.

OPTATIVE

Present

durofsha
 'may I endure'
 durófish
 duroftë

u durofsha
 'may I be endured'
 u durófish
 u duroftë

durofshim	u durofshim
durofshi	u durofshi
durofshin	u durofshin

Perfect

paça durue (duruar)	qofsha durue (duruar)
'if only I had endured'	'if only I had been endured'
paç durue (duruar)	qofsh durue (duruar)
pastë durue (duruar)	qoftë durue (duruar)
paçim durue (duruar)	qofshim durue (duruar)
paçi durue (duruar)	qofshi durue (duruar)
paçin durue (duruar)	qofshin durue (duruar)

267.

ADMIRATIVE**Present**

durúekam (durúakam)	u durúekam (durúakam)
'I endured!'	'I am endured!'
durúeke (durúake)	u durúeke (durúake)
durúeka (durúaka)	u durúeka (durúaka)
durúekemı (durúakemı)	u durúekemı (durúakemı)
durúekeni (durúakeni)	u durúekeni (durúakeni)
durúekan (durúakan)	u durúekan (durúakan)

Unified variants: durokam - duroke - duroka — durókemı — durókenı
durokan (Active)

Imperfect

durúekësha (durúakesha)	u durúekësha (durúakësha)
'I endured!'	'I was endured!'
durúekëshe (durúakëshe)	u durúekëshe (durúakëshe)
durúekësh (durúakësh)	u durúekësh (durúakësh)
durúekëshim (durúakëshim)	u durúekëshim (durúakëshim)
durúekëshit (durúakëshit)	u durúekëshit (durúakëshit)
durúekëshin (durúakëshin)	u durúekëshin (durúakëshin)

Unified variants: durókësha - durókëshe — durokësh -- durókëshim --
durókëshit durókëshin

Perfect

paskam durue (duruar)	qenkam durue (duruar)
'I have endured!'	'I have been endured!'
paske durue (duruar)	qenke durue (duruar)
paska durue (duruar)	qenka durue (duruar)
paskemi durue (duruar)	qénkemi durue (duruar)
paskeni durue (duruar)	qénkeni durue (duruar)
paskan durue (duruar)	qenkan durue (duruar)

268. **IMPERATIVE**
 duró durou ~ durohu
 'endure!' 'be endured!'
 duroni duronju ~ duróhuni
269. **PARTICIPLE**
 ðurue (duruar)
 'endured'
270. **INFINITIVE**
Present
 për të durue (duruar) për t'u durue (duruar)
Geg: me durue me u durue
 'to endure' 'to be endured'
- Perfect**
 për të pasë durue (duruar) për të qenë durue (duruar)
Geg: me pasë durue me qenë durue
 'to have endured' 'to have been endured'
271. **GERUNDIVE**
Present
 tue durue (duke duruar) tue u durue (duke u duruar)
 'enduring' 'being endured'
- Perfect**
 tue pasë durue (duke pasë ~ patur tue qenë durue (duke qenë
 duruar) duruar)
 'having endured' 'having been endured'

2nd Conjugation

- | | ACTIVE | MEDIO-PASSIVE |
|------|------------------|--------------------|
| 272. | | INDICATIVE |
| | | Present a) |
| | unë sjell | sillem |
| | 'bring' | 'am brought' |
| | ti sjell | sillesh |
| | ai, ajó sjell | sillet |
| | na (ne) sjellim | sillemi |
| | ju sillni | silleni |
| | atá, ató sjellin | sillen |
| | | Present b) |
| | po sjell | po sillem |
| | 'am bringing' | 'am being brought' |

sillja
 'brought'
 sillje
 sillte
 sillnim
 sillnit
 sillnin

sillesha
 'was brought'
 silleshe
 sillej
 silleshim
 silleshit
 silleshin

Imperfect a)

po sillja etc.
 'was bringing'

po sillesha etc.
 'was being brought'

Geg: sillsha ... sillshe

sillte

sillshim

sillshit — sillshin (Active)

Imperfect b)**Aorist**

solla
 'brought'
 solle
 solli
 súellëm (súallëm)
 súellët (súallët)
 súellën (súallën)

u solla
 'was brought'
 u solle
 u suell (suall)
 u súellëm (súallëm)
 u súellët (súallët)
 u súellën (súallën)

Perfect

kam sjellë
 'have brought'
 ke sjellë
 ka sjellë
 kemi sjellë
 keni sjellë
 kanë sjellë

jam sjellë
 'have been brought'
 je sjellë
 ësht (është) sjellë
 jemi sjellë
 jeni sjellë
 janë sjellë

Pluperfect I

kisha sjellë
 'have been bringing'
 kisha sjellë
 kishte sjellë
 kishim sjellë
 kishit sjellë
 kishin sjellë

isha sjellë
 'have been being brought'
 ishe sjellë
 ishte sjellë
 ishim sjellë
 ishit sjellë
 ishin sjellë

Pluperfect II

pata sjellë
 'had brought'
 pate sjellë
 pati sjellë

qeshë sjellë
 'had been brought'
 qe sjellë
 qe sjellë

patëm sjellë	qemë sjellë
patët sjellë	qetë sjellë
patën sjellë	qenë sjellë

Future (Active)

I	II	III
do të sjell	kam për të sjellë 'will bring'	kam me sjellë
do të sjellësh	ke për të sjellë	ke me sjellë
do të sjellë	ka për të sjellë	ka me sjellë
do të sjellim	kemi për të sjellë	kemi me sjellë
do të sillni	keni për të sjellë	keni me sjellë
do të sjellin	kanë për të sjellë	kanë me sjellë

Note

Variant I = Common Alb.; Variant II = expresses finality; Variant III = used only in Geg

Future (Medio-Passive)

I	II	III
do të sillem	kam për t'u sjellë 'will be brought'	kam me u sjellë
do të sillësh	ke për t'u sjellë	ke me u sjellë
do të sillët	ka për t'u sjellë	ka me u sjellë
do të sillemi	kemi për t'u sjellë	kemi me u sjellë
do të silleni	keni për t'u sjellë	keni me u sjellë
do të sillen	kanë për t'u sjellë	kanë me u sjellë

Future Perfect (Active)

I	II	III
do të kem sjellë	kam për të pasë sjellë 'will have brought'	kam me pasë sjellë
do të kesh sjellë	ke për të pasë sjellë	ke me pasë sjellë
do të ketë sjellë	ka për të pasë sjellë	ka me pasë sjellë
do të kemi sjellë	kemi për të pasë sjellë	kemi me pasë sjellë
do të keni sjellë	keni për të pasë sjellë	keni me pasë sjellë
do të kenë sjellë	kanë për të pasë sjellë	kanë me pasë sjellë

Future Perfect (Medio-Passive)

I	II	III
do të jem sjellë	kam për të qenë sjellë 'will have been brought'	kam me qenë sjellë
do të jesh sjellë	ke për të qenë sjellë	ke me qenë sjellë
do të jetë sjellë	ka për të qenë sjellë	ka me qenë sjellë

do të jemi sjellë
do të jeni sjellë
do të jenë sjellë

kemi për të qenë sjellë
keni për të qenë sjellë
kanë për të qenë sjellë

kemi me qenë sjellë
keni me qenë sjellë
kanë me qenë sjellë

ACTIVE

MEDIO-PASSIVE

273.

SUBJUNCTIVE

Present

të sjell
'that I bring'
të sjellësh
të sjellë
të sjellim
të sjellni
të sjellin

të sillem
'that I am brought'
të sillesh
të sillet
të sillemi
të silleni
të sillen

Imperfect

të sillja
'that I brought'
të sillje
të sillte
të sillnim
të sillnit
të sillnin

të sillesha
'that I was brought'
të silleshe
të sillej
të silleshim
të silleshit
të silleshin

Geg: të sillsha — sillshe sillte — sillshim sillshit — sillshin (Active)

Perfect

të kem sjellë
'that I have brought'
të kesh sjellë
të ketë sjellë
të kemi sjellë
të keni sjellë
të kenë sjellë

të jem sjellë
'that I have been brought'
të jesh sjellë
të jetë sjellë
të jemi sjellë
të jeni sjellë
të jenë sjellë

Pluperfect

të kisha sjellë
'that I had brought'
të kishe sjellë
të kishte sjellë
të kishim sjellë
të kishit sjellë
të kishin sjellë

të isha sjellë
'that I had been brought'
të ishte sjellë
të ishte sjellë
të ishim sjellë
të ishit sjellë
të ishin sjellë

274.

CONDITIONAL

Present

do të sillja	do të silljesha
'would bring'	'would be brought'
do të sillje	do të silljeshe
do të sillte	do të silllej
do të sillnim	do të sillleshim
do të sillnit	do të sillleshit
do të sillnin	do të sillleshin

Geg: do të sillsba — sillshe .. sillte — sillshim — sillshit — sillshin
(Active)

Perfect

do të kisha sjellë	do të isha sjellë
'would have brought'	'would have been brought'
do të kishe sjellë	do të ishe sjellë
do të kishte sjellë	do të ishte sjellë
do të kishim sjellë	do të ishim sjellë
do të kishit sjellë	do të ishit sjellë
do të kishin sjellë	do të ishin sjellë

275.

OPTATIVE

Present

sjellsha	u sjellsha
'may I bring'	'may I be brought'
sjellsh	u sjellsh
sjelltë	u sjelltë
sjellshim	u sjellshim
sjellshi	u sjellshi
sjellshin	u sjellshin

Perfect

paça sjellë	qofsha sjellë
'if only I had brought'	'if only I had been brought'
paç sjellë	qofsh sjellë
pastë sjellë	qoftë sjellë
paçim sjellë	qofshim sjellë
paçi sjellë	qofshi sjellë
paçin sjellë	qofshin sjellë

276.

ADMIRATIVE

Present

sjellkam	u sjellkam
'I bring!'	'I am brought!'
sjellke	u sjellke

sjellka	u sjellka
sjëllkemi	u sjëllkemi
sjëllkeni	u sjëllkeni
sjellkan	u sjellkan

Imperfect

sjëllkësha	u sjëllkësha
'I brought!'	'I was brought!'
sjëllkëshe	u sjëllkëshe
sjellkësh ~ sjellkej	u sjellkësh ~ sjellkej
sjëllkëshim	u sjëllkëshim
sjëllkëshit	u sjëllkëshit
sjëllkëshin	u sjëllkëshin

Perfect

paskam sjellë	qenkam sjellë
'I have brought!'	'I have been brought!'
paske sjellë	qenke sjellë
paska sjellë	qenka sjellë
paskemi sjellë	qënkemi sjellë
paskeni sjellë	qënkeni sjellë
paskan sjellë	qenkan sjellë

277.

sjell
'bring!'
sillni

IMPERATIVE

sjellu
'be brought!'
sillnju

278.

PARTICIPLE

sjellë
'brought'

279.

INFINITIVE**Present**

për të sjellë
Geg: me sjellë
'to bring'

për t'u sjellë
me u sjellë
'to be brought'

Perfect

për të pasë (patur) sjellë
Geg: me pasë sjellë
'to have brought'

për t'u pasë (patur) sjellë
me u pasë sjellë
'to have been brought'

280.

GERUNDIVE**Present**

tue (duke) sjellë
'bringing'

tue (duke) u sjellë
'being brought'

Perfect

tue (duke) pasë sjellë
'having brought'

tue (duke) qenë sjellë
'having been brought'

281. The following are three examples of the abbreviated inflection which can be fully integrated into the **regular verbal categories**. The components of the verbal classes (Present, Aorist, Participle) appear in *italics* and the paragraph numbers where their integration is illustrated are given in parentheses.

1. quej (quaj) 'call' (§ 202, a; 208 ff.)

Indic. Pres.	Geg: <i>quej</i> quen quen qëjmë qëni qëjnë Tosk: <i>quaj</i> quan quan qëjmë qëni qëjnë
Indic. Imperf.	: <i>quaja</i> (Geg: <i>qúesha</i>)
Indic. Aor.	Geg: <i>qúejta</i> qëjte qëjti etc. Tosk: <i>quajta</i> qëjte qëjti etc.
Subj. Pres.	Geg: të quej të qesh të qëjë etc. Tosk: të quaj të quash të qëjë
Opt. Pres.	Geg: qëjtsha quejtsh qëjttë qëjtshim qëjtshi qëjtshin Tosk: qëjtsha quajtsh qëjttë etc.
Adm. Pres.	Geg: qëjtkam qëjtke qëjtka etc. Tosk: qëjtkam quajtke etc.
Imper.	Geg: quej — qëni, Tosk: quaj - qëni
Partic.	Geg: <i>qúejtë</i> , Tosk: <i>quajtur</i>

2. vë (Geg: vê) 'place' (§ 202, a; 210)

Indic. Pres.	: <i>vë</i> vë vë vëmë vini (Geg: veni) vënë
Indic. Imperf.	: <i>vija</i> (Geg: <i>vêsha</i>)
Indic. Aor.	Geg: <i>vuna</i> vune vuni vumë vutë vunë Tosk: <i>vura</i> vure vuri vumë vutë vunë
Subj. Pres.	: të vë të vësh të vërë (Geg: të vëjë) etc.
Opt. Pres.	Geg: vufsha vufsh vuftë etc. Tosk: vënça vënç vëntë etc.
Adm. Pres.	Geg: vûkam, Tosk: vënkam
Imper.	: vë vëni
Part.	Geg: <i>vû</i> , Tosk: <i>vënë</i>

3. flas 'speak' (§ 223 ff.)

Indic. Pres.	: <i>flas</i> flet flet flasim flisni ~ flitni flasin
Indic. Imperf.	: <i>flisja</i> (Geg: <i>flitsha</i>)
Indic. Aor.	: <i>fola</i> fole foli folëm etc.
Subj. Pres.	: të flas të flasësh të flasë etc.
Opt. Pres.	: folsha folsh foltë etc.
Adm. Pres.	: folkam

Imper.	: fol - folni ~ flisni
Partic.	Geg: <i>folë</i> , Tosk: <i>folur</i>

282. Those verbs are termed **irregular** which cannot be completely integrated into the **verbal classes** and **conjugation system** presented thus far. To this group belong:

- a) The **suppletive verbs** or verbs with two stems and
- b) The **non-suppletive** verbs.

Both groups are presented below (the auxiliary verbs have already been given in §§ 172-174). Regular conjugation forms and periphrastic forms are not presented here. As in § 281, the components of the verbal classes appear in *italics* and the paragraph numbers where **individual forms** of the irregular verbs may be integrated are given in parentheses.

283. a) Suppletive verbs or verbs with two stems

1. *bie* 'fall' (§ 210)

Indic. Pres.	: <i>bie</i> bie bie biem bini bien
Indic. Imperf.	: bija (Geg: bisha)
Indic. Aor.	: <i>rashë</i> re ra ramë ratë ranë
Subj. Pres.	: të bie të biesh të bjerë të biem të bini të bien
Opt. Pres.	Geg: rafsha rafsh raftë rafshim rafshi rafshin Tosk: rënça rënç rëntë rënçim rënçi rënçin
Adm. Pres.	Geg: rakam rake raka etc. Tosk: rënkam rënke rënka etc.
Imper.	: bjer - bini
Partic.	Geg: <i>rà</i> [rà], Tosk: <i>rënë</i>

2. *bie* 'bring'

Indic. Pres.	: (as No. 1)
Indic. Imperf.	: (as No. 1)
Indic. Aor.	Geg: <i>pruna</i> prune pruni prumë prutë prunë (§ 215, 2) Tosk: <i>prura</i> prure pruri prumë prutë prunë
Subj. Pres.	: (as No. 1)
Opt. Pres.	: prufsha prufsh pruftë prufshim prufshi prufshin
Adm. Pres.	: prukam pruke etc.
Imper.	: (as No. 1)
Partic.	: Geg: <i>prù</i> [prû], Tosk: <i>prurë</i>

3. (*j*)ap 'give' (§ 220 ff.)

Indic. Pres.	: <i>ap</i> ep ep apim epni apin
Indic. Imperf.	: epja (Geg: epsha)
Indic. Aor.	: <i>dhashë</i> dhe dha dhamë dhatë dhanë

Subj. Pres.	: të ap të apsh të apë të apim të epni të apin
Opt. Pres.	Geg: dhafsha dhafsh dhafsh dhafshim dhafshi dhafshin Tosk: dhënça dhënç dhëntë dhënçim dhënçi dhënçin
Adm. Pres.	Geg: dhankam dhanke dhanka etc. Tosk: dhënkam dhënke dhënka etc.
Imper.	: ep ~ ip — epni ~ jipni
Partic.	Geg: <i>dhanë</i> , Tosk: <i>dhënë</i>

4. shoh 'see'

Indic. Pres.	: shoh sheh sheh shohim shihni shohin
Indic. Imperf.	: shihja (Geg: shihsha ~ shifsha)
Indic. Aor.	: <i>pushë</i> pe pau pamë patë panë
Subj. Pres.	: të shoh të shohësh të shohë të shohim të shihni të shohin
Opt. Pres.	: pafsha pafsh pafsh pafshim etc.
Adm. Pres.	: pakam pake paka pākemi pākeni pakan
Imper.	: shih — shihni
Partic.	Geg: <i>pá</i> [pā], Tosk: <i>parë</i>

5. thom ~ them 'say' (§ 172)

Indic. Pres.	Geg: thom thue thotë thomi thoni thonë Tosk: thom ~ them thua thotë themi thoni thonë
Indic. Imperf.	Standardform.: toshja toshje toshite toshnim toshnit toshnin (Tosk: toja toje etc.; Geg: tosha — toshe etc.)
Indic. Aor.	: <i>thashë</i> the tha thamë thatë thanë
Subj. Pres.	: të shoh të shohësh të shohë të shohim të shihni të shohin
Opt. Pres.	Geg: thaça thaç thashtë thaçim thaçi thaçin Tosk: thënça thënç thëntë thënçim thënçi thënçin
Adm. Pres.	Geg: thankam thanke thanka etc. Tosk: thënkam thënke thënka etc.
Imper.	: thuej (thuj) — thoni
Partic.	Geg: <i>thanë</i> , Tosk: <i>thënë</i>

6. ha 'eat' (§ 209)

Indic. Pres.	<i>ha</i> ha ha hamë hani hanë
Indic. Imperf.	: haja (Geg: hasha)
Indic. Aor.	Geg: <i>hangra</i> ~ <i>ngrana</i> hangre hangri hangrëm hangrët hangrën Tosk: <i>hëngra</i> ~ <i>ngrëna</i> hëngre hëngri hëngrëm hëngrët hëngrën
Subj. Pres.	: të ha të hash të hajë etc.
Opt. Pres.	Geg: hängërsha hanërsh hangërsh hangërt hängërshim etc. ngransha ngransh ngrantë ngranshim etc.

- Tosk: hëngërsha hëngërsh hëngërt hëngërshim etc.
 ngrënsha ngrënsh ngrëntë ngrënshim etc.
- Adm. Pres. Geg: hangërkam ~ ngrankam
 Tosk: hëngërkam ~ ngrënkam etc.
- Imper. : ha — hani
- Partic. Geg: *hangër* ~ *ngranë*, Tosk: *hëngër* ~ *ngrënë*

7. rri 'sit' (§ 209)

- Indic. Pres. : rri rri rri rrimë rrini rrinë
- Indic. Imperf. : rrija (Geg: rrija)
- Indic. Aor. : *ndenja* ndenje ndenji ndenjëm ndenjët ndenjën
 (Geg: *ndëja* ndëje ndëji ndëjëm ndëjët ndëjën)
- Subj. Pres. : të rri të rish të rrijë etc.
- Opt. Pres. : ndençja ndenç ndenjët ndençim ndençi ndençin
 (Geg: ndëjsha ndëjsh ndëjtë etc.)
- Adm. Pres. : ndenjkam ndenjke ndenjka ndenj kemi etc.
 (Geg: ndëjkam ndëjke etc.)
- Imper. : rri — rrini
- Partic. Tosk: *ndenjur*, Geg: *ndëjë*

8. vij 'come'

- Indic. Pres. : vij vjen vjen vimë vini vijnë
- Indic. Imperf. : vija vije vinte vinim vinit vinin (Geg: visha)
- Indic. Aor. : *erdha* erdhe erdhi erdhëm erdhët erdhën
- Subj. Pres. : të vij të vish të vijnë etc.
- Opt. Pres. : ardhsha ardhsh ardhhtë ardhshim ardhshi ardhshin
- Adm. Pres. : ardhkam ardhke ardhka etc.
- Imper. : eja — ejani ~ eni
- Partic. Geg: *ardhë*, Tosk: *ardhur*

284.

b) Non-suppletive verbs

1. lã (lë) 'let' (§ 209, 2; 211)

- Indic. Pres. Tosk: *lë* lë lë lëmë lini lënë
 Geg: *lã* len len lamë leni lanë
- Indic. Imperf. : lija lije linte linim linit linin
 (Geg: lëshja lëshje lente lëshim lëshit lëshin)
- Indic. Aor. : *lashë* le la lamë latë lanë
- Subj. Pres. : të lë të lësh të lërë etc.
 (Geg: të lã të lãsh të lãjë etc.)
- Opt. Pres. Tosk: lënça lënç lëntë lënçim lënçi lënçin
 Geg: laça laç lashtë laçim laçi laçin
- Adm. Pres. Tosk: lënkam lënke lënka etc.
 Geg: lankam lanke lanka etc.

Imper. Tosk: lër -- lini, Geg: lë — leni
 Partic. Tosk: lënë, Geg: lanë

2. vdes 'die'

Indic. Pres. : vdes vdes vdes vdesim vdisni (Geg: vdiqni) vdesin
 Indic. Imperf. : vdisja vdisje vdiste vdisnim vdisnit vdisnin
 (Geg: vdissha vdisshë vdiste or vdiqsha etc.)
 Indic. Aor. : vdiq vdiqe vdiq vdiqëm vdiqët vdiqën
 Subj. Pres. : të vdes të vdesësh të vdesë etc.
 Opt. Pres. : vdeksha vdeksh vdektë vdekshim vdekshi vdekshin
 Adm. Pres. : vdëkëkam vdëkëke vdëkëka etc.
 Imper. : vdis ~ vdiq — vdisni ~ vdiqni
 Partic. : Geg: vdekë, Tosk: vdekur

3. drue (druaj) 'fear' (§ 172)

(Inflected like **due**, **dua** 'want' and likewise indicates modality)

Indic. Pres. Geg: drue dro dro dromë (druem ~ druam) droni dronë
 Tosk: druaj druan druan drúajmë droni druajnë
 Indic. : droja droje dronte dronim dronit dronin
 (Geg: droshta droshe dronte droshim ecc.)
 Indic. Aor. : dreshta dreshte dreshti dreshtëm dreshtët dreshtën
 Tosk: drúajta drúajte drúajti drúajtëm drúajtët drúajtën
 Subj. Pres. Geg: të drue të druesh të drúejë të dromë të droni të dronë
 Tosk: të druaj të druash të drúajë të drúajmë të droni të
 drúajnë
 Opt. Pres. Geg: draça draç drashtë draçim draçi draçin
 Tosk: drúajça drúajç drúajjtë drúajçim drúajçi drúajçin
 Adm. Pres. Geg: drashkam drashke drashka etc.
 Tosk: drúajtkam drúajtke drúajtka etc.
 Imper. Geg: druej — droni, Tosk: druaj — droni ~ drúani
 Partic. Geg: drashtë, Tosk: drúajtur

III. SYNTAX

Lesson 20 — Leksioni i njëzetë

Sentence Structure (I)

285. Until now, not only have the **basic elements of the sentence** (noun, adjective, pronoun, verb, etc.) been separately described, but abundant examples of simple and complex sentences have been given, primarily in order to clarify — formally and functionally - these units in context. This traditionally tested method was chosen so that morphology (morpho-phonology) and syntax would not be separated too much from each other. The following brief survey of Albanian syntax is intended:

- a) to supplement what has already been presented in the morphological section of syntax inherent in the parts of speech and
- b) to furnish a number of rules and examples in organized fashion concerning the position and relations of basic sentence elements and of sentences in relation to one another.

Notes

1. It should be realized that in the current phase of development of the literary language, more and more innovations in Albanian syntax are evident. Doublets of units of speech and propositions have arisen which deviate from former norms of Albanian syntactic structure, but which are not perceived by many to be false (i.e. unacceptable). Such hybrid structures occur especially in the language of the mass media, in expository prose and in many translations of all types, although far less in literature.
2. In this lesson, the syntactic structures of the language variants will be considered as they appear in their differences and similarities — the former often as a result of morphological differences. Many examples will be drawn from folk literature and folk phraseology.

286. **The definition of the sentence** as 'the smallest relatively independent unit of speech' by means of which **thoughts** are expressed appears to be the most acceptable one. With respect to the fundamental concepts of this definition, **form** and **function** will not be separated from each other, as they have not been until now. The sequence cannot, however, always be maintained; the function of the sentence is more heavily emphasized, as it involves the dynamics and determination of thought in the structures.

287. The pattern of the Albanian sentence does not differ from the typical declarative sentence in English, being composed of **subject** + **predicate** (1) + **complements** (2):

(1) Konstantini erdhi 'Konstantin came'

(2) Konstantini erdhi me të motrën 'Konstantin came with his sister'

According to the speaker's situation or intention, important parts of the simple sentence may be omitted, such as subject (3) or predicate (4):

(3) erdhi me shtatë vetë 'he/ she came with seven people'

(4) loja e mive — gëzimi i micave 'the play of mice is, the joy of cats' where the predicate (copula), **është** (**është**) 'is' is eliminated.

Note

Included here, as well, is the *adverbial clause*, composed of one word, such as *ndoshta* 'perhaps', with a modal function and originally derived from a modal verb (cf. § 173).

288. The **transposition** of parts of speech — always based on the declarative sentence — implies changes in their quality and aspect. In this way, types of **independent clauses** occur, such as:

a) **Interrogative sentences**: a erdhi Konstantini? 'did Konstantin come?' which also includes the **intonation** marking an interrogative function;

b) **Sentences with modal value**, such as the demand in the Imperative (1), Jussive sentences (2) (cf. § 193) or forms of wishing (3):

(1) **hapu**, mal, e **bënu** udhë 'open, mountain and become a path!'
ulu, mal, t'na **dali** hana 'bend, mountain, so that the moon may emerge'

(2) **le të** na **bajë** dritë për mbrema 'let it make evening light for us'

le të na **shkojë** vajza për ujë 'let the girl go to the well'

(3) kush **ndigjoftë**, zemra i **këndoftë!** 'who can hear, may his heart sing!' (cf. § 190).

In Geg, mildly imperative sentences are often constructed with the **Infinitive**:

me më ndimue në këtë punë! 'help me in this thing!'

c) Sentences expressing surprise or exclamation (cf. § 191):

Zot! A flet dhia në mal? 'God! does the goat speak on the mountain?'

Paska folë dhia në mal! 'The goat spoke on the mountain!' (*folksong*)

Note

The transposition of parts of speech, based on the pattern subject-predicate-complement, seems to be quite free functionally, dependent also upon *emphasis*, however, as this example illustrates:

Imperative sentence: tregoja qenit shkopin! 'show the dog the stick!'

Advice: qenit tregoji shkopin 'you should show the dog the stick'

289. In the following, the **subject** and **predicate** components of the declarative sentence will be treated.

a) The **grammatical subject** occupies the first place in the sentence pattern and agrees with the finite form of the predicate in number and person; its case is basically the Nominative:

stufa ngroh dhomën 'the oven heats the room'

b) Viewed **semantically**, if the subject is the author or originator of an action expressed by the predicate, it may stand in the **Ablative**:

dhoma u ngroh **prej stufës** 'the room is heated by the oven'

where **dhoma** 'the room' is the grammatical subject.

Notes

In sentences constructed with impersonal verbs of the type *me dhemb kryet* 'my head hurts', *i pëlqën natyra* 'he likes nature' (cf § 251, 3), there is another structure in the declarative sentence:

- 1 The grammatical subject *kryet* 'the head' or *natyra* 'nature' here stands in the second place, i.e. in that of the predicate. The *psychological subject*, on the other hand, (*më*) *dhemb* '(it) hurts' or (*më*) *pëlqën* '(it) pleases' stands in the first place.
2. To these sentence types with implicit subject in verbal form belong also modal sentences

mundet '(it) may be', i.e. 'the *possibility* exists'
 më shkohet '(it) is for me to go' (I want to go)
 s'më rrihet '(it) is not for me to remain'
 të kihet 'may one have' (cf § 171, p. 135)

- 3 Inversion of the subject also occurs in a number of other cases, the most typical of which are sentences denoting atmospheric conditions such as *bie shi* 'it is raining', *del drita* 'it is getting light'.

c) In rare cases, the logical **subject** may stand in the Ablative without an article: **asi burrash** nuk lindin mâ (më) 'such men are no longer born' or in the **Accusative** in Infinitive sentences, as in the following subordinate clause:

komandanti i urdhnoi ushtarët me sulmue
 'the commandant ordered the soldiers to attack'

where **ushtarët** 'the soldiers' is the object of the governing clause and, at the same time, the subject of the Infinitive **me sulmue** 'to attack'.

d) Sufficient examples have now been introduced where the grammatical subject may be one or more nouns or nominalized adjectives. Lacking, however, are infinitive verbal forms which may take over the function of a subject or which may be replaced by a verbal form in the Present Subjunctive:

me lypë në rrugë âsht ndaluar 'begging on the street is prohibited'
të lypësh në rrugë është (e) ndaluar 'idem'

where the whole of **me lypë në rrugë** or **të lypësh në rrugë** may be constructed as a sentence and thus called a subject sentence.



290. The **predicate** has the function of giving information about the subject. The predicate, therefore, (as the word itself indicates) consists in most cases of

a) a simple or compound verb (1) or copulative verbs with their weakened original meaning, such as auxiliary and modal verbs (**jam** 'am', **gjindem** 'find myself, exist', **mbes** 'remain', **bie** 'fall upon, get into') + predicate nouns, adjectives, modal adverbs, etc. (2):

(1) kusarët **flein** 'the robbers slept'

djali **do të vdiste** 'the boy was to die'

Zeka **turfulloi** 'Zeka snorted'

(2) ata ishin dhe mbetën **miq** 'they were and remained friends'

të dy mbetën **pa zâ** 'both remained without voice, i.e. dumb'

gjellët ishin **të shijshme** 'the meals were tasty'

Genci ra **ngusht** 'Genc got into difficulties' (lit. Genc fell narrow)

b) The **repetition** of the same word in subject and in predicate position (subject def., predicate indef.) confirms the existence and quality of the subject, as in the following example from a folksong (cf. S. Pifti, *Sintaksa e gjuhës shqipe*, Tirana, 1971, p. 61) with omission of the copulative verb:

Zana jemi e zana kjoshim! Oreads we are and oreads may we remain!

Besa **besë** e fjala **fjalë** Oath 'remains' *oath* and word, *word*;

Grúeja **grue** e zana **zanë** Woman *'is'* *woman* and oread, *oread*;

Zana **diell** e grúeja **hanë!** Oread *'is'* *sun* and woman, *moon!*

c) The predicative function can not only be expressed by a single noun, but also by a phrase (1) or a sentence (2):

(1) kam qenë dikúr **trim i ri** 'I was once a young man'

njerëzia **vjen e shkon** 'the people come and go'

(2) gjendja e tij qenka **qaje Zot të keqen** 'his condition is *God weep over evil*'

ky send quhet **kthe-më prapë** 'this thing is called *give-me-back-again*'

the last example is an idiom used in the loan of something, by which the necessity of its return is expressed.

Note

Such repetitions occur especially in the *Kanun* (Albanian customary law), e.g. *gjá çdo gjá* lit. 'thing each thing', a formula for compensation, whereby anything may be paid for by means of things, mostly head of cattle: *gjá* is an ellipsis for *gjá e gjallë* 'living thing'.

291. Fundamentally, agreement occurs between subject and predicate in **gender, case, person** and **number**. These elements of agreement or concordances are divided according to the word types from which the subject and predicate are derived.

a) Understandably, infinitive verbal forms or other predicatives derived from uninflected word types, such as adverbs, play no role in the agreement between subject and predicate:

Shka don ti, o djalë, me ngranë ?	What do you want, o youth, to eat?
Erën e dârdhave	The aroma (scent) of the pears,
Belin e t'bardhave	The waist of the white ones (girls)

(lovesong)

rri **çuet** e mos del **jashtë!** 'remain **alert** and do not go **outside!**'

These are, of course, mostly modal sentences which may be considered as already morphologized units:

qe, isha **kah ~ tue ardhë (duke ardhur)** 'look, I was just coming'

b) The predicate verbs in finite form agree with the subject (noun, nominalized adjective or pronoun) in **number** and **person**; the same holds true for the copulative verbs in finite form + predicative (1), which may be derived from a noun or adjective (2):

(1) këta **dervishat** u **bënë pula** dhe **zunë** e po **hanjen** mel:

meli u **bë** dhelpër edhe **hëngri** pulat.

the dervishes became hens and began to eat millet:

the millet became a fox and ate the hens (*folktale*)

(2) **një punë** e bukur **është më e dobishme** se një mijë fjalë të bukura

'a good deed is worth more than a thousand fine words' (*S. Frashëri*)

From the above examples may be observed:

- I) the agreement of predicate verbs with the subject in number and person;
- II) the agreement of predicate adjectives with the subject in gender, case and number;
- III) the agreement of predicate nouns, normally in the indef. form (cf. § 290, b), with the subject in case and number.

Notes

1. From the standpoint of function understood syntactically -- the bipartite sentence members *verb* + *predicate noun* construct a predicative unity and also serve semantically as a single verb. Compare their periphrastic character formally with the (synthetic) English translation in the following examples:

mecat *merrën vesh* me shenja 'the deaf mutes *understand each other* through signs'

malet *marrin gjamë* 'the mountains *echo*'

peshqit *marrin frymë nën ujë* 'the fish *breathe* under water'

secili i *del zot* familjes së vet 'everyone *defends* his own family'

kandili *ban (bën) dritë* 'the oil lamp *illuminates*'

Albanian is rich in such plastic periphrastic verbal unity.

2. In sentences with a predicative member consisting of an auxiliary or *modal verb* + *adjective* or *adverb*, there are two possibilities: either to understand the

verb + adjective or adverb *together* as a predicate or else the latter alone as such, which would be more logical:

rri *mirë* e mos u sjell andej e këndej 'remain *calm* and do not turn this way and that'

janë burra *të urtë*, atá! 'they are certainly *wise* men!'

prindët ranë *ngusht* me të bijtë 'the parents got into difficulties with the sons'

c) The **case of the predicate noun** requires further clarification, as its correct usage always presents the student with considerable difficulty. The following rule should be remembered: the predicate noun always agrees with the subject in case and number. If the predicate noun stands alone or is augmented by an adjective, it stands in the indef. form (1), regardless of the form (def. or indef.) of the subject. If, however, the predicate noun is augmented by a **pronoun** or noun in the **definite** form, it stands in the def. form (2):

(1) zogjtë e shtazët në përgjithësi janë **frymorë**
'the birds and the animals in general are living beings'

macja e qeni quhen **shtazë shtëpiake**

'the cat and the dog are called domestic animals'

(2) i tha grúaja: "Ti je **burri im**" 'the woman said to him, "You are my husband"'

Lulja e kripës është romani i fundit i Jakov Xoxës 'The Salt Flower is J. Xoxa's last novel'

The same holds true if the predicate noun is augmented by an adjective in the superlative (as it belongs in the def. form, cf. § 88):

Parkat janë fytyrat ma të shemtüemet e mitologjisë

'the Fates are the ugliest figures of mythology'

d) The **predicate noun in def. Genitive** occurs quite frequently. It may be assumed that this form derives from the **repetition** of the subject in the predicate position (cf. § 290 b), as reconstructed below:

bleta e (h)ikun ... është **e të zotit** *from* bleta e ikun është [bleta] e të zotit

'the bee which has flown away (i.e. the swarm) belongs to the owner'

(*Kanin*)

ai është i fjalës e i punës *from* ai është [burrë] i fjalës e i punës

'he is /a man/ of word and action'

e) Less frequently, the predicate noun stands in the **Ablative**, indicating origin or quality:

gjuha është tuli(t) e gjithshkák bluen

'(the) language is a piece of flesh and grinds everything (proverb)

f) If the subject is a **collective noun**, the predicate verb varies freely, sometimes occurring in the singular (1), sometimes in the plural (2):

- (1) U **dorgj Shala** e **rá** në Shtoj 'Shala (a tribe) descended and came to Shtoj'
 (2) Ja **dhanë** besën shoqi shojt, 'They gave one another the word of honor,
 Shoqi shojt ja **dhanë** besen, 'One another they gave the word of honor:
 Në Saraj **po shkojmë** e **desim**. 'To Saraj we are going to die.'

(Heroic song)

292. On the basis of the semantics or valence which it contains, the **predicate verb** determines the **object types** of the sentence. Most Albanian active verbs may govern a direct object (1) and an indirect object (2). It should also be noted that Albanian, like several other Balkan languages, possesses **double objects**, one of which must be a weak form of the personal pronoun (cf. §§ 126-127). The case of the direct object is the **Accusative** and that of the indirect object, the **Dative**:

- (1) De Rada themeloi **revistën** "Fjámuri i Arbrit"
 'De Rada founded the journal "Fjamuri i Arbrit"'
 (2) dashi i prin **kopesë** 'the bellwether leads the herd'
 a) Verbs of **well-marked transitivity** or verbs of **giving** and **taking**, for which the direct simple object is obligatory, may govern double objects:
 i jati **ia** bleu **të birit kravatën** 'the father bought (his) son the tie'
 e ama **ia** lidhi **të birit kravatën** 'the mother tied (her) son's tie'
 b) Verbs of perception (visual, intellectual, etc.) require the direct object:
 shihni **lumin**, dëgjoni **krismën** e tij!
 'Look at the river, listen to its roar!'
 Hasani e kuptón shqipen 'Hasan understands Albanian'
 Other perceptual verbs belong to this category, such as **shoh andërr**, **andërrój (ëndërrój)** 'dream', **mësój~nxâ (nxë)** 'learn', etc.
 c) Verbs of communication govern the indirect object, in most cases as a double object:
 Agroni i pëshpërti **Dritës** në vesh 'Agroni whispered in Drita's ear'
 Drita i këndón **djalit** në djep 'Drita sings to her son in the cradle'
 studenti i shkroi **familjes** 'the student wrote to the family'

Other verbs of communication in the Medio-Passive fulfill the same function and also govern double objects in the Dative:

- studenti i lajmërohet rregullisht **familjes**
 'the student regularly informs the family'
 i lútemi Zotit të jesh mirë, si edhe ne jemi mirë
 'we pray to God that you are well, as we are also well' (stereotypical opening greeting for a letter)

The indirect object is also obligatory in sentences with verbs of assistance or malediction:

- kush **u** shërben dy **zotnive?** 'who can serve two masters?'
zojës së shpisë **i** raftë pika! 'may the woman of the house have an
 apoplexy!' (*folksong*)

Notes

- In sentences expressing communication, there often occur (especially in folk literature and in colloquial speech), in the position of direct object, derivative nouns, such as *flas një fjale* 'say a word', *këndoj kangen* 'sing the song' (cf. *luftoj luftën* 'wage war'), *thom një fjalë* 'say a word'. Such bipartite predicates may be characterized as "pleonasm", where the concept of emphasis should also be considered.
 - These should not, however, be identified with the periphrastic verbs of the type *marr vesh* (cf. § 291) or *çoj fjalë* 'inform' (lit. send a word).
- d) The indirect object appears too in a few idioms such as **i bie** lit. 'strike', i.e. play an instrument: **violinisti i bie violinës** 'the violinist plays violin'.
- e) The indirect object in the Dative is governed not only by predicate verbs of communication of the type **lutem** (see above), but also by others in the Medio-Passive, although with transitive function:

Drita **iu** përvish **punës**; ajo s'i shmanget kurrë **detyrës**
 'Drita threw herself into the work; she never avoided her duty'

To this category belong (among others) **ndahem** 'depart', **ngjitem** 'ascend', **turrem** 'rush' in the following examples:

nuk i ndahem **punës** 'I do not leave the work'
 i ngjitem **malit** 'I ascend the mountain'
 turrem **fushës** 'I rush through the field'

f) When the direct object is an inalienably possessed noun, particularly a kinship term (1) or a noun denoting a body part (2), the indirect object indicates its possessor:

- më** shkoi **burri** në dhe të huaj
 'my husband has gone abroad'
- Kaceli **ia** pau kryet **dhelprës** në dushk
 'Kacel saw the fox's head among the leaves'

The structure of inalienable objects is sometimes extended to objects denoting a part of a whole, cf. the examples given below where bolt = part of the door (1), and lid = part of the pot (2):

- plaka **ia** vu shulin **derës**
 'the old woman pushed the bolt across the door'
- Kaceli **ia** hoq kapakun **kusisë**
 'Kacel took off the lid from the pot'

293. The predicate verb in the Active may govern an infinitive or gerundive clause instead of an object noun (1); the former may be transformed into sentences with finite predicate verbs (2):

- (1) *ti më dhe me hangër e me pi* 'you gave me to eat and to drink'
 (2) *ti më dhe të ha e të pi* 'idem.'

294. The predicate verb is called the nucleus of the sentence. This value increases when it is polyvalent in the sense of the verbal group a) in § 292, predicate verbs which, aside from the double objects (indirect and direct), may have a third valence or augment:

- i jati ia bleu të birit kravaten në duqan*
 'the father bought (his) son the tie in the store'

The augments occur not only after objects, but they may further define any member or partial member of the sentence. As was observed in the description of the syntagms (noun + noun, §§ 63-68, or noun + adjective, §§ 83 et seqq.), these elements are united by means of the declensional articles and endings (1), prepositions (2) or -- in the case of a so-called apposition -- they are set off by commas from the sentence member to which they relate (3):

- (1) *njeriu i qytetit* nuk e lodh mendjen
 'the man of the city is unconcerned'
 (2) *njeriu në qytët* nuk e lodh mendjen **rreth ndotjes** së ajrit
 'the man in the city is unconcerned about air pollution'
 (3) *njërëzit tanë, qytetarë apo fshatarë,* nuk e lodhin mendjen ...
 'our people, city-dwellers or peasants, are unconcerned ...'

Notes

- 1 From the semantics of the prepositions (cf. § 103) and the cases which they govern, information is obtained about the type and function of the augments consisting of nouns or pronouns, e.g.

me 'with' - *Instrumental* a erdhe *me makine*? 'did you come by car?'

nga 'from' - *origin* gjuha shqipe vjen *nga Ilirishtja* 'Albanian comes from Illyrian'

2. Indications for such characterizations of the augments are also provided by adverbs with a prepositional function which do not occur in the above list (cf. § 103):

veç 'besides' = *selection*:

veç vdekjes s'më ndal kush pa ardhë 'besides death, no one can prevent me from coming'

bashke me 'together with', *krahas me* 'idem.' = *association*:

bashkë me zhvillim ~ *krahas me zhvillim* rritet edhe mirëqënia 'together with development, prosperity also rises'

(II) Coordinate Clauses

295. Clauses in relation to one another are divided into **coordinate** (1) and **subordinate** (2):

- (1) gjithë natën ha mish, gjithë ditën rri dyfish (= *jorgani*)
 'it eats flesh all night, it lies folded all day (= a quilt)' (folk riddle)
- (2) Të punojmë natë e ditë Let us work day and night
Që të shohim pakë dritë In order to live better (*Frashëri*)

It should be noted that coordinate clauses may also occur in a series of subordinate clauses:

më këshilloi të shkoj e ta shoh vetë shtëpinë para se ta blejë
 'he advised me that I should go and see the house myself before I buy it'

296. Coordinate clauses are divided into a) **asyndetic** (1), i.e. coordinated or marked by a pause or comma (written), and b) **syndetic** (2), i.e. united by conjunctions:

- (1) Ali Pasha rri në shkallë, Ali Pasha sits on the stairs,
 Kuvendón me bajraktarë Consults with the tribal leaders.
 (*Folksong*)
- (2) ai iku e na la hijen 'he went out and left us his shadow behind'
 (idiom)

Coordinate clauses may also be united with each other through syntactic elements if they possess a single subject which is not repeated in the second clause, as is the case in the above examples (1) and (2).

297. A decisive factor in the grouping of coordinate clauses is the semantics of the conjugations through which they are joined. The clauses are therefore clarified semantically here according to the meaning of the conjunctions.

298. The copulative or syndetic clauses are joined to each other by means of the following conjunctions:

e or **dhe** 'and':

babai iku e na la në pikë të hallit **dhe** nuk ktheu
 'the father went away and left us in calamity and did not return'
 (*folktale*)

edhé 'also':

ju po na kritikoni **edhé** po lypni llogari
 'you are criticising us and also demanding an account'

The conjunction **edhé** also implies a certain emphasis which the following clause reflects. This conjunction may also stand at the beginning of a clause and have the same strengthened sense:

edhé zanin po e çon! 'You are even raising your voice!'

as — **as** 'not — not' joins copulative clauses with negative meanings; it stands before the verb:

ju **as** dini **as** kujdëseni të dini 'you do not know and seek not to know'

pa + **participle**:

pa punue (punuar), s'i del kujt buka
'without working, one does not earn one's bread'

299. **Correlative clauses** are joined to each other through double conjunctions which are frequently derived from adverbs or pronouns (mostly indefinite). Only a few examples for the commonest types are given here:

si — **ashtú** 'as — so':

si me lé **ashtú** me dekë 'as born, so dead' (idiom in folksongs)

herë — **herë** 'sometimes — sometimes':

herë qan, **herë** qesh 'sometimes weeps, sometimes laughs'

vetë — **vetë** '(...)self — (...)self':

vetë shkruen, **vetë** vulós 'he writes himself, he certifies himself'

këtú — **atjë** 'here — there':

këtú del një këpurdhë, **atjë** del një lule
'here a mushroom grows, there a flower blooms'

hem — **hem** 'both — and':

hem merrej me gjuhësi, **hem** me arkeologji
'he occupied himself with both linguistics and archeology'

In this type of construction, the predicate verb is omitted where it can be understood.

300. **Disjunctive clauses** are not formally distinguished from correlatives. It should be noted, however, that the relationship of disjunctive clauses involves contrasts:

ose — **ose** 'either — or':

njana dysh: **ose** kemi luftë, **ose** kemi pagjë
'one of two — either we have war or we have peace'

ndo — **ndo** 'either — or':

djali **ndo** vijón shkollën, **ndo** zgjedh një zanát
'the boy either continues school or chooses a trade'

The following have the same meaning: **apó** — **apó**, **a** — **a**, **ja** — **ja**
'either — or'.

301. **Adversative clauses** are utilized in pairs, like the correlatives and disjunctives, with the following conjugations:

por, po 'but':

Por ka 'j lot per faqe i shkote 'But a tear ran down his cheek
Gjith' saherë pite fatziu 'Every time the poor man drank.'

kursë 'while':

Zoja mërdhët shumë, **kursë** Genci nuk e vesh kurrë pallton
'Zoja is very cold, while Genc never puts on his coat'

mirëpó 'nevertheless':

i sëmurë ishte Genci, **mirëpó** punën s'e la
'Genc was sick; nevertheless he did not leave work'

bile 'even':

vëllau ia arriti, **bile** na pruri dhe dhurata
'the brother came back; he even brought us presents'

The correlative adversative clause coordinated with **jo vetëm — por** 'not only — but' may be included here:

studenti nxen (mësón) jo vetëm gramatikën, por përkthën edhe ushtrimet
'the student not only learns the grammar, but also translates the exercises'

302. **Resultative clauses** are often included, either inadvertently or deliberately, with subordinate clauses. They are simple to recognize by the conjunctions used:

andáj 'consequently, hence':

Ndre çohet herët në mëngjës, **andáj** shkon herët të flejë
'Ndre gets up early in the morning, hence he goes to sleep early'

prandáj 'therefore':

të gjithë shikonin lojën e futbollit në televiziôn, **prandáj** askush nuk shihej në rrugë
'all were watching the football game on television, therefore no one was seen on the street'

prá 'thus':

udhëtari zu një dhomë në hotel, **prá** ai s'nisej atë natë
'the traveller took a room in the hotel, thus he did not travel that night'

Note

With the exception of the adversative and resultative conjunctions, the others occur also as copulative elements with nouns and other word types, e.g.

si i jati, ashtu i biri 'like father, like son'

303. In colloquial speech and literature, one often finds a coordinated pair of clauses of the type **shoh e s' shoh** 'I see and do not see', where the same predicate verb appears in both the positive and negative clause. According to their formal structure, these might be termed "illogical" or "contradictory" clauses. Viewed semantically, such clauses contain **uncertainty** on

the part of the speaker with respect to a judgement or decision regarding the facts of the matter (1), or else the desire to express neither a positive nor a negative opinion on them (2). There is a certain semantic relationship between this construction and the restrained expression of the Admirative (cf. § 191):

(1) uji i këtij pusi **pihet e s'pihet**

'the water of this well is and is not to be drunk'

(2) Palit, kur premtón, **i besohet e s'i besohet**

'Pal, when he promises something, can be believed with reservations'

Note

In Arbëresh, morphologized forms are attested which are derived from coordinate clauses, e.g. *jam e vinj* 'I am about to come' (cf. § 178, Notes) and *ze e jjej* 'begin to sleep' (*initial*, cf. among others § 251, 4, Notes).

(III) Subordinate Clauses

304. It should be stated at the outset that the **semantic** and **formal** connections between the main clause or governing clause, on the one hand, and the subordinate clauses, on the other, vary greatly according to their type; hence a methodological flexibility is necessary. It is important that both aspects complement each other, without regard to the required sequence.

To begin with the simplest combination, **main clause** + **subordinate clause**:

m'i kthe çorapët që të kam dhënë hua

'give me back the socks that I lent you',

it should be noted that semantically only the main clause may stand alone and that the subordinate clause, **që të kam dhënë hua**, is not a complete statement. It may be said, therefore, that the subordinate clause is also semantically dependent upon the main clause.

305. From the formal, syntactic viewpoint there are three characteristics to be recognized in the subordinate clause cited above:

a) connection with the main clause by a conjunction which simultaneously also gives information about the type and function of the subordinate clause: **që** 'that, which' is a relative pronoun and for that reason the whole clause is termed a **relative clause**;

b) the correlation of the mood and tense forms of the predicate verb of the main clause with those of the subordinate clause: **Present** (Imperative)/**Perfect** (Indicative) (cf. also § 193);

c) the **word order** may cause balance or imbalance between both clauses: thus the main clause must end with the object (**çorapët** 'the socks') and the subordinate clause begin with the relative pronoun **që** 'that, which' (object of the subordinate clause): ... **the socks that** ...

Notes

1. The subordination of clauses is, of course, an ancient feature of Albanian. Nevertheless, the influence of Greek and Latin/Romanic should not be underestimated. This applies to literary Albanian since Buzuku (1555), i.e. first introduced with the translation of the liturgy.
2. From the combination main clause + subordinate clause, periphrastic tense forms have arisen in Common Albanian, cf. (among others) the Future with *do* + *Subjunctive* (cf. § 182).

306. As mentioned above, a clause may function as a subject (cf. § 289). A special group of subordinate clauses is thus comprised which replace the sentence members 1. subject — 2. object — 3. attribute by: 1. **subject clause** — 2. **object clause** — 3. **attributive clause**.

307. Included here also are the **adverbial clauses** which are subordinated too and, like adverbs, define and augment the verb of the main clause. In their variety, the adverbial clauses may be considered as a collective conception for the semantic grouping of temporal, causal, modal and conditional clauses, as well as concessive, final and comparative clauses. The conjunctions with which they begin are also adverbs of **pronominal origin** (cf. § 97) which function as important components of this clause category in the illustration of the respective clause types.

Notes

1. Not only do the pronominal elements serve as *introductory conjunctions* in relative clauses (cf. § 310), but the most utilized conjunction, *se* 'that', is itself of pronominal origin. It is used today as a pronominal element to accompany several prepositions: *me se* 'with which', *në se* 'in which', or as a conjunction in causal clauses: *përsë* (për-se) 'why', *pse* 'because'.
2. The conjunction *se* is frequently replaced by *që* (used generally for subjunctive forms):

ëshhtë e qartë *që* atyre s'u bie në sy *instead of*

ëshhtë e qartë *se* atyre s'u bie në sy

'it is clear that it does not occur to them'

308. According to the manner in which they are joined to the main clause, the **subject clauses** are divided into:

- a) Subject clauses with the introductory words **se**, **që të** 'that', **ç'**, **çka ~ shka** 'what', **që ~ cili-cila** 'which', **kush** 'who' (1);
- b) Subject clauses with infinitive verbal forms, usually without introductory words (2):

(1) u bë mirë **se u takuam pasdreke**

'it was good that we met in the afternoon'

në këtë arë ndodh shpesh **që t'i hajë miza bimët**

'in this field it often happens that the flies eat the plants'

ç'është një ditë, s'është për ditë
'what happens in one day does not happen every day' (*proverb*)

kush fle me qen, çohet me pleshta
'who sleeps with dogs wakes up with fleas' (*proverb*)

- (2) **me i ikë rrezikut** nuk është ligëshiti, por urti
'to avoid danger is not cowardice, but prudence'

me u bâ i zoti i vehtes, lypet prej çdo të riut
'to be master of himself is desired from every youth'

Although a subject clause may often be understood as such syntactically, it may, however, be functionally a temporal clause, as is the case with the last example (cf. § 311, anteriority).

309. The **object clause** usually replaces the indirect object (cf. § 292):

Object: **kush e di rrugën** për dét? 'who knows the way to the sea?'

Subject: **kush e di si shkohet në dét?** 'who knows how one goes to the sea?'

Object clauses are mostly governed by particular semantic groupings of verbs which occur in the main clause, as is also the case with direct objects.

The main clause verbs involved are those of **perception** and **communication**, as well as **modal verbs**, such as **dëshirój** 'wish' and **due (dua)** 'want' (1).

a) Introductory words are: **kush** 'who', **ç' ~ çfarë** 'what', **cili-cila** 'which' (when interrogative clauses are involved), **si ~ se si** 'how', **qysh** 'how', **sa** 'how much' (2);

b) **a mos** 'whether' (with verbs of fear and doubt), **se**, frequently combined as **se sa**, **se kush**, **që të** 'that' (especially suitable for indirect speech);

c) object clauses without introductory words occur as a rule with infinitive verb forms (3):

- (1) ai s'e kuptoi **kush ia bani rrengun**
'he did not understand who had done him the malicious deed'

çëdó që të duash mundem **ta mbarónj**
'I can make anything that you want' (*folktale*)

- (2) zunë ta pyesin **se qysh shpëtojt**
'they began to ask how he had escaped' (*folktale*)

plaka i tha **se kishte bâ gadi gjithshkâ**
'the old woman said that she had prepared everything' (*folktale*)

- (3) Zoja dinte **me bâ me hangër mirë**
'Zoja knew how to cook well'

e pau **duke shkuar udhës**
'he saw him going through the street'

si ka mujtë **me i rá në të** se unë jam grue e jo burrë
'how could he know that I am a woman and not a man' (*folktale*)

310. The **attributive clause** in Albanian is most often a relative clause. As an example of the transformation of an attribute into an attributive clause, the following structures of two variants of a proverb will serve:

Attributive: *ujin e amullt s'e pi lopa* 'the cow does not drink standing water'

Attributive clause: *ujin që s'rrjedh s'e pi lopa* 'the cow does not drink water which does not flow'

Not all **complementary clauses**, however, of this type with relative construction may be transformed into attributive augments; they are often based upon a pronoun, as in the following example:

nuk martohem me ty që të kam kunat

'I do not marry you because you are my brother-in-law' (*folktale*)

Instead of an attributive or other augment, Albanian prefers a clause with a more plastic character, e.g.:

barku është kusia që ngroh kurmin

'the stomach is the kettle which warms the body' (*proverb*)

a) Clauses which are normally not introduced by *i cili* - *e cila* 'which' are usually built into a series of clauses with the fixed relative pronoun *që* 'that, which':

Kafshatë që s'kapërdihet është, or vlla, mjerimi

Kafshatë që të mbetë në fyt edhe të zë trishtimi.

'A mouthful that is not to be swallowed, brother, is poverty

'A mouthful that sticks in the throat and brings gloom.' (*Migjeni*)

b) Attributive clauses also occur with indefinite verb forms:

ishte i vocërr, i vocërr, që me më zi me e pá

'he was tiny, tiny, to be seen only with difficulty' (*folktale*)

Grúeja i la një vajzë me ia pasë lakmí gjithkushí

'the woman left him a girl to be desired by all'

311. **Temporal clauses** are naturally in close relation to the **tense form** of the main clause verb on which they depend. This dependence often makes it difficult in Albanian to interpret the meaning or function of the temporal conjunctions which introduce the temporal clauses. Like the tense forms themselves, these conjunctions are divided into three time components:

Simultaneity: *sa, ndërásá, nësá, mjesá* 'while', *derisá* 'as long as', *porsá* 'as soon as', *tek, kur* 'when', *kurdó* 'each time', etc.

dersá shporta ka fiq, gjithë bota janë miq

'as long as there are figs in the basket, the whole world is friendly'
(*proverb*)

Anteriority: *kur, tek* 'when', *qëkúr, qysh se* 'since when', *para se* 'before', *për pa* 'before', etc.:

kur zgjoheshim, na binin ndërmend edhe andrrat (ëndrrat)
 'when we awoke, we also remembered (our) dreams'

Posteriority: mbasi, pasi, kur 'after':

ky posá e pa, i u ngrit mb'këmbë
 'as soon as he saw him, he stood up' (*folktale*)

Temporal clauses occur in definite (1) and indefinite (2) tenses:

- (1) **kur kthei e ama**, s'e pau kund Kacelin
 'when the mother returned, she did not see Kacel anywhere'
tek u suall pakëz atjenaj, sheh së largu një kym njerëzish
 'when he turned in that direction, he saw a group of people from afar'
posá i trokiti dérësë, iu faneps nje vajzë
 'as soon as he knocked at the door, a girl appeared' (*folktale*)
sa të rrosh, dëgjosh
 'as long as you live, may you hear' (*benediction*)
- (2) **pa mos thënë një**, nuk bëhën dy
 'before you say "one", there is no two' (*proverb*)
për pa vdekë, s'kam me ta harrue nderën
 'while I live (lit. not die), I will not forget your kindness'
me një të ardhur nga puna, Agimi mori e shkroi letrën
 'as soon as Agim came from work, he wrote the letter'
duke udhëtuar Sofroni pau vende shumë të bukura
 'while Sofron was travelling, he saw very beautiful places'

The temporal clauses are often modified by other adverbs of time, such as **kurdó** 'every time', **gjithsaherë** 'idem', **herë pas here** 'now and then', which are also called **iteratives**.

gjithsaherë vinte në pasi, binte një mollë si dhuratë
 'every time he came on a visit, he brought an apple as a present'

The introductory conjunctions of simultaneity are also strengthened by augments:

për një qi ia shkel kryet me kambë, i del peshkut për gojet një gur i çmüeshëm
 'as soon as he stepped on the head with his foot, a jewel came out of the fish's mouth' (*folktale*)

Note

Common Albanian *derisá* 'as long as, while' is equivalent to the Arbëresh introductory conjunction *njera çë* 'idem':

pak u prë ditën e natën
njera ç' ngau te dheu i tij

He rested little day and night
 While he rode to his homeland (*folksong*)

312. The **causal clause** denotes, in the subordinate position, the reason for

the action described in the main clause. It is possible to express this content also through an **augment of provenance or causality** (1) which may be transformed into a causal clause:

- (1) **nga dhimbja e kresë** Zoja s'mund të shkojë në punë
 'because of a headache, Zoja can not go to work'
sepsë i dhembte kryet Zoja s'mund të shkonte në punë
 'because her head hurt, Zoja can not go to work'

The commonest introductory conjunctions for causal clauses are:

- a) **se, sepsë, pse, nga se ~ nga që** 'because', **per shkak, për arsye se** 'on account of', **për punë se, nga puna se** 'because':

u ndalua parada **sepsë binte shi**
 'the parade was stopped because it rained'

- b) **që, më që, si, mbasi, prej se** 'as, because, since':

më që binte shi, u ndalua parada 'idem'
 bane keq fort **që ~ si më gënjeve**

'you have done very badly in that (because) you lied to me'

Causal clauses, too, may occur with definite (1) and indefinite (2) tense forms:

- (1) në fillim njërëzit ndërtonin shtëpi guri **sepsë nuk kishin drunj**
 'in the beginning, people built stone houses because they had no wood'
më që e ndiente veten të fortë, mori prapë udhë
 'because he felt strong, he started on his way again'
mbasi e kish djegë qumështi, i frynte edhe kosit
 'because the (hot) milk burned him, he blew on the yoghurt too'
 (proverb)
- (2) milingona, **duke mos ditur not**, u mbyt
 'the ant, since it could not swim, drowned'
tue mos ditë gjuhën e huej, merrej vesh me shenja
 'as he did not know the foreign language, he made himself understood with signs'

Notes

1. In colloquial speech, the causal clause occurs with verbal ellipsis: *ik, mal, se spata* 'go away, mountain, because the ax (is coming) (proverb) Such ellipses are also attested in Arberesh literature, as in this mocking song from Badessa (Abruzzi)

"Ik vajzë se *ljumi*!"

"Go away, girl, because the river (is coming)!"

"Ljë të vijë e të me marrë"

"May it come to take me away"

se u kam nje burre të marr"

because I have an imbecile husband!"

2. In Arbëresh, the causal conjunction *se* 'because' is generally used, less often *pse* 'idem':

Mir se vjen kush na vjen
se na vjen zönjeza nuse

'welcome, who comes to us,
 because (Miss) bride is coming to us'

(dance song, Sicilian Arberesh)

313. As has already been mentioned, linguistic conditionality in Albanian may be definitively explained only on the syntactic level. The tense forms of the Conditional (cf. § 189) must obviously be taken into account here as well. The **conditional sentence** is formally and functionally composed of two clauses:

- a) a subordinate clause in which the **condition** is expressed as to whether or not an action occurs and
- b) a main clause in which the **result** is stated as to whether or not the condition has been concretized.

po të bjerë shi, ndalohet parada 'if it rains, the parade is stopped'

The subordinate clause, **po të bjerë shi** 'if it rains', sets up the condition and, as such, is the real conditional clause (termed *protasis*), while the main clause, **ndalohet parada** 'the parade is stopped', shows the conclusion (and is termed *apodosis*).

The protases and apodoses of conditional sentences are divided into two semantic groups:

I) **Real conditional sentences**, whose conditions are possible, i.e. capable of concretization. Evidently, it is often up to the judgment of the speaker as to whether the condition provided may have a possible or impossible result: the conditional clauses are generally classified on that basis. There are facts, however, which are usually considered as possible, such as a bird's ability to fly:

po t'i rriten zogut krahët, ai fluturôn
'if the bird's wings grow, it flies'

Regulations are also expressed by real conditional sentences, such as the provisos of Albanian customary law (*Kanùn*), because they are to be generally observed:

burri i vejë, po s'pat prind, ka teger me folë vetë për martesë të vet
'the widower, if he has no parents, has the right to decide about his own marriage' (*Kanùn*)

II) If the condition (always expressed in the subordinate clause) seems to be impossible of realization according to human judgment or the opinion of the speaker, the sentence is classified as an **unreal conditional** one:

po të kisha krahët e zogut, do të fluturoja
'if I had the wings of a bird, I would fly'

The same holds true if an **opportunity** in the past was missed:

sikur të kisha gjetë (gjetur) banesë në qytët, do të kisha jetuar atjë
'if I had found a house in the city, I would have lived there'

The introductory conjunctions for conditional clauses are: **në, nësë, për në, po qe se, në qoftë se (në qoftë që)** 'if', **sikur të, po të** (or simply **të** – preposition for the Subjunctive) 'if, in case, in the event'; the commonest

are **nësë** for real conditional clauses, i.e. with the Indicative, and **po të** with the Subjunctive for all types.

The Imperfect and Pluperfect Subjunctive are mostly reserved for **unreal subordinate conditional clauses**; the Present and Imperfect Conditional (cf. § 189), on the other hand, are reserved for the governing or main clauses (apodosis). The pattern for unreal conditional sentences is as follows:

<i>Subordinate Clause (protasis)</i>	<i>Main Clause (apodosis)</i>
Imperfect or Pluperfect Subjunctive	Present or Perfect Conditional
po të isha njëzët vjeç	do të studioja mjekësi
'if I were twenty years old,	I would study medicine'
po të kisha mbjellë në pranverë	do të kisha korrë në vjeshtë
'if I had sowed in spring,	I would have harvested in fall'

It should be noted that the main clause of an unreal conditional sentence may also utilize the Imperfect Indicative:

po të isha njëzët vjeç, **studioja** mjekësi
'if I were twenty years old, I would study medicine'

In other words, it is possible to construct conditional sentences (real or unreal) without using the Conditional mood.

Conditional clauses may occur with (1) or without (2) introductory words, as well as with definite (3) and indefinite (4) verbal forms:

- (1) **ta kishe një djalë edhe sa atë kamishin tand**, s'paçë me dashtë tjetër gjë
'if I had a son only as big as your pipe, I would not wish for anything else' (*folktale*)
po të bjerë lisi, kushdó bë dru në të
'if the tree falls down, everyone cuts its wood' (*proverb*)
- (2) **erdhe a s'erdhe**, unë vete njëlló
'whether or not you come, I am going anyway'
S'u gjegj gjogun vllathi me ta mbathë,
Hypi atit, bjeri n'derë jaranit
'if (your) adopted brother does not consent to shoe the grey horse,
ride on to the door (i.e. house) of my friend' (*heroic song*)
- (3) **po të jesh në vent të huaj**, si bie daullja luaj
'if you are in a foreign land, dance to the drum' (*proverb*)
- (4) **me vrá grúeja burrin e vet a kédó**, prindja e kësáj do t'apin arsye për at gjak
'if a woman kills her own husband or another (person), her parents must account for this blood' (*Kanun*)
me ndejë në shpí, s'më len grúeja; **me dalë n'arë**, më han harusha
'if I stay at home, my wife does not allow me (to stay); if I go to the field, the bear will eat (lit. eats) me' (*folktale*)

Note

Arberesh has the following special introductory words for conditional sentences: *ndo, nde, ndeç* 'if, in the event'

nde ('te) *vije ti, vija* edhe u 'if you come, I come too'

ndë ('te) *kishe ardhur, kishe* par tet vllá 'if you had come, you would have seen your brother'

ndeç *isha trim i ri,* 'if I were a youth,

dot hipia murgjarin 'I would mount the grey horse' (folksong)

314. The **modal clause** shows the manner and type of an action or fact which is expressed in the main clause.

E kur t'vín zhegu,	'and when the heat comes,
kur dielli shkon	when the sun goes,
tí ke me këndue	you will sing
si ke zakón	as is your custom' (<i>Mjedha</i>)

Introductory conjunctions for modal clauses are: **si** 'how, as' and its derivatives, **siç, posí, porsí, sikúr, sikursé** 'how, as'; **disí** 'somehow', **disesi** 'approximately as, gjithsi 'exactly like, as', **kinsé** 'as though'; periphrastic: **ashtú si** 'just as' (cf. also §317, comparative clauses), **me sa** 'insofar', etc.:

si e bleva, e shita 'as I bought it, I sold it'

siç është me të pamë, është me të ngranë 'as it appears, so it is to eat' (*proverb*)

Modal clauses occur in definite (1) and indefinite (2) tense forms:

- (1) **Si kjoftë m(b)arë,** ashtú e bäftë Zoti. 'as is right, so may God do:
Orën çuet por e ka Hoti the guardian spirit of Hoti is
(ever) wakeful' (*Gj. Fishta*)
- (2) këqyrte në hapësi **si me qenë i verbët**
'he gazed into space as though he were blind'
Yjtë e ndezur aqë larg, The burning stars so far away
lozin vallen e dëshirës play the dance of yearning,
dyke ndritur varg e varg illuminating in series
nëpër terr të hapësirës. the universe through darkness
(*Poradeci*)

Notes

1. Modal clauses in indefinite verbal forms, with or without conjunctions, mostly occur after modal verbs or modal expressions: *u bā me dalë mendsh* 'he was driven mad', *s'paskam si me jetue* 'I have no (reason) to live', *u shtrëngue me pi mizën* 'he was forced to drink flies' (i.e. he was forced to the point that it would take for someone to swallow flies).
2. Modal clauses may sometimes occur in main clauses in Albanian:
kur ra zilja në derë, disí u shqetësua
'when the doorbell rang, he was somehow disturbed'

315. The **subordinate concessive clause** usually expresses a condition which was expected in the main clause, but not realized:

megjithëse të prita, ti nuk erdhe

'although I waited for you, you did not come'

The primary marking of concessive clauses consists in the introductory words; they would otherwise be easily confused with other adverbial clauses, such as modal and conditional clauses. These words are: **megjithatë**, **megjithëse**, **prapë ~ prapëseprapë** 'despite, although, however', **sadó**, **edhé sikur** 'even if'. If the obstacle described in the concessive clause appears capable of being overcome in the main clause, several introductory words are used to mark this: **sadó**, **kudó**, **sidó**, **ndonësé** even if, even though, although':

ndonësé jetonte i veçuem, ishte mjaft i informuar mbi situatën

'even though he lived secluded, he was quite informed about the situation'

Concessive clauses, like other adverbial clauses, may occur with definite (1) and indefinite (2) tense forms:

(1) gjithë Bota të ngrehj kundër meje, **prapë do mos kisha frikë**

'if the whole world rose against me, even (then) I will not be afraid
(*Noli*)

Shqipëri, o nëna ime, **ndonësé jam i mërguar**,

dashurinë tënde kurrë zëmra s'e ka harruar.

'Albania, my mother(land), although I am exiled,

my heart has not given up its love for you' (*Frashëri*)

(2) **gjithsi me e llogaritë**, nuk del ndryshe hesapi

'all accounts made, one comes to no other conclusion'

edhé duke m'u lutur, s'shkoj atjë ku doni ju

'even if you asked (me), I will not go where you want'

Note

Concessive clauses are closely related to coordinate adversative clauses (cf. § 301).

316. The **purposive clause** expresses an aim or end in relation to the action stated in the main clause:

grue, po shkoj në gerbét me fitue ndoj send

'wife, I am going abroad to earn something' (folktale)

The purposive clause in Albanian with a definite verbal form (1), usually the Subjunctive, is introduced facultatively by **që** (Geg **qi**, Arbëresh **çë**) 'that, so that'. There is also a purposive clause in the Infinitive (2) in two variants:

a) **për të + Participle**: për të fitue (fituar) 'to, in order to earn' (cf. § 196) and

b) **për me + Participle**: për me fitue 'idem', but only in Geg.

- (1) Ruhu, të të ruanj Perendia
 'guard yourself in order that God guard you'
 Kaceli nxë (mësón) që të kalojë klasën
 'Kacel studies in order to pass the class'
- (2) **për të mësuarë botën**, i vjen ndoresh shumë
 'he is handy at teaching other people' (*proverb*)
 Kush ásht trim e kush ásht djalë 'who is brave and who is a youth
për me m'a zanë blegën në mal. to catch the shepherdess on the
 mountain' (*folksong*)
- Për me mujtë me hypë njëri te Zoti**, i u desht Zotit me zdrypë te njëri.
 'in order for man to ascend to God, God had to descend to man'
 (Nikaj, 1920)

Note

A typical introductory conjunction for purposive clauses in Arberesh is *sat* + Subjunctive:

mirr një degë qiparisí	'take a cypress branch
<i>sat benjëmë fjamurin</i>	so that we may make the crown' (Sicilian Arbëresh <i>dance song</i>)

317. The **comparative clause** expresses a comparison with the action or fact stated in the main clause. In terms of their structure, comparative clauses are similar to coordinate correlative clauses:

aqë të dua ty, sa dua kripën në sy
 'I love you like salt in (my) eye' (*idiom*)

a) The conjunctions for **comparative clauses of equality** are: **sa** — **aq** 'as much — as', **kështú** — **ashtú** 'as — so', **me sa** — **aq** 'insofar, to the extent — so too':

ha aq, **sa ke barkun**
 'eat as much as you have stomach' (i.e. not to excess)

b) The introductory conjunctions for **comparative clauses of inequality** are actually the same as those for comparatives (cf. § 100), **se**, **se sa**, **nga** 'than'; these form the correlation with the adverbial comparative:

më mirë të dish **se** të kesh
 'it is better to know than to have' (*proverb*)

Other introductory conjunctions are **si**, **siç**, **sikursé** 'how, as', which endow the comparative clauses with the additional function of **modal clauses**. As in the case of the other subordinate clauses, these may also occur with definite (1) and indefinite (2) verbal forms:

- (1) **me sa ka kal të gjelbër**, aq ka toskë me mjekër
 'to the extent that there are green horses, there are also Tosks with beards' (*proverb*)
si më mbulove, ashtu të shtrova
 'as you cover me, so I lay it out for you' (*proverb*)

(2) lumi ishte aq i cekët, **sa me e kalue me parmendë**.

'the river was so shallow that one could cross it with a team of oxen'
 mâ mirë me urue **se me nemë**
 'better to bless than to curse'

(IV) Indirect Speech

318. The change from direct to **indirect speech** implies considerable morphological and syntactic alteration. Despite these formal alterations, the essence of the content remains the same after the transition has occurred. Obviously, transformations in the modality of the statement may take place in that the speaker in indirect speech intentionally functions as an interpreter or "mouthpiece". As is clear from the following example, much of the **vocabulary** of the direct speech may also be retained in the indirect speech:

direct speech: Coli i tha: **Kacël, sot mos ki frikë!**

'Col said to him, "Kacel, have no fear today!"'

indirect speech: Coli tha se Kaceli atë ditë nuk duhej të kishte frikë

'Col said that Kacel should have no fear that day'

It should be noted that in the transition from direct to indirect speech illustrated, a subordinate clause has arisen due to the 3rd person pronoun and the changes in adverb of time, tense forms and mood.

319. The clauses of indirect speech are introduced by conjunctions such as **që, se** 'that' and, according to the type of adverbial clauses which may occur, **kush** 'who', **cili** 'which', **ç~çka** 'what', **sa** 'how much', etc.

A particular feature of indirect speech is the agreement of tenses, in which the tenses of the subordinate clauses are regulated by those of the main clause verbs (usually verbs of communication or *verba dicendi*):

Present

direct speech: kanuni **thotë**: grúeja **s'bjen** në gjak

'the Kanun says: "a woman is not subject to the blood feud"'

indirect speech: kanuni **thotë** se grueja **s'bie** në gjak

'the Kanun says that a woman is not subject to the blood feud'

Preterite

direct speech: kanuni **thoshte**: grúeja **s'bjen** në gjak

'the Kanun said: "a woman is not subject to the blood feud"'

indirect speech: kanuni **thoshte** se grúeja nuk **binte** në gjak

'the Kanun said that a woman was not subject to the blood feud'

320. If the speaker who is reporting in indirect speech wishes to emphasize detachment from the statement he is relating, he uses the Admirative (cf. §191) in Albanian. He could in this way also question whether Albanian customary law did, in fact, protect women from the blood feud:

Present: kanuni **thotë** se grueja **s'raka** në gjak
'the Kanun says that a woman is not subject to the blood feud'

Preterite: kanuni **thoshte** se grueja **s'rakëshe** në gjak
'the Kanun said that a woman was not subject to the blood feud'

In the contemporary language, the Admirative is not used regularly in such expressions of modality; instead, modifying adverbial forms are used, such as **gjoja**, **kinsé** 'ostensibly, allegedly' among others

KEY TO THE EXERCISES

[Due to pedagogical considerations, felicity of English phrasing has frequently been sacrificed to awkwardness in the following translations. The intention has been simply to remain as close as possible to the original Albanian text, not to provide models of prose composition.]

Exercise 1. Is this earth? No, this is ashes. You have cheese and I have butter. Is this cheese? No, this is not cheese, this is a stone. In the hearth there is fire and ashes. Is there anything else (lit. another thing) in the hearth? No, there is nothing else. In the mill there is grain and flour. Is it snowing today? No, today it is neither snowing nor hailing, today we have sun. Zoja has one brother here, another brother is in the city. Who is in the city?

Exercise 2. A bie shi në dimër? Po, në dimër bie shi, bie borë e bie breshër. Ne jemi këtú e ju jeni atjë. A keni ju durim? Ne kemi durim, por atá s'kanë durim. Unë sot jam në qytët. Kush është sot në qytët?

Text 1: Riddles

It is a riddle: it eats hail and produces snow: what is it? (It is a (the) mill.)

It is a riddle: it snows without a cloud: what is it? (It is a (the) sieve with flour.)

It is a girl with three belts: what is it? (It is a (the) rainbow.)

It is a red-checked girl: what is it? (It is an (the) apple.)

Exercise 3. What do we buy in the butcher store? In the butcher store we buy meat. Where is there a dairy in the neighborhood? One dairy is here under the house, another is on the corner. Today I do not buy meat, but

milk. Who has money eats cabbage with meat, who does not have money eats bread with milk. In Albania, in Italy and in Greece there are beautiful places (lit. places for beauty).

Exercise 4. A ka pluhur në rrugë? Në rrugë ka shumë pluhur. Ku ka lule këtë afër? Këtë afër nuk ka lule. Ku është Zoja? Zoja nuk është këtë, Zoja është në dasmë. A është nuse Zoja? Jo, Zoja nuk është nuse, nusja është një tjetër.

Text 2

The bride on the way,	The bride in the courtyard
Carnations in a bunch;	Carnations like a tent;
The bride at the door,	The bride on the stair
Carnations with scent;	Carnations at her face (lit. forehead).

Exercise 5. The axe is a tool, not the hand. The brother comes from the house. Where is the milk? The milk is in the kettle. The boy and girl buy bread and cheese from the old man. Where are you going? We are going to the city, we have a friend there. Is the grape black? The raven is black. The ox eats grass. A (the) dream is not reality: in a dream the person goes by foot to the moon. The bird has feathers on (its) wing. What does it mean: (the) spring is at the door? Spring is at the door means: spring is coming soon (lit. comes soon). As is the place, so is the conversation — says the Albanian.

Exercise 6. Zjarri, dheu e uji janë tre elemente. Shtëpia nuk ka vetëm një derë. A është spata një vegël? Po, spata është një vegël. Trimëria, zemra, beteja, feja, radioja e dera janë emra femërore. Bariu shkon në mal me bagëti. Shqipëria është një vend i bukur. Të hollat nuk gjenden në rrugë — thonë disa.

Text 3: The meat is here, but where is the cat?

A (the) man goes to the city and buys two kilos of lamb meat, brings it home to his wife and goes to work. The wife roasted the meat very well and ate it alone. Her husband comes from work and does not find meat on the table, but only dry bread. The man asks:

— Where is the meat?

— Oh, my husband, the cat ate it! — says the woman.

— Where is the cat? — asks the man.

— Look, there is the cat!

The man takes the cat, weighs it and it comes out exactly two kilos.

— Good — says the man — the meat is here, but where is the cat?

Exercise 7. This year we had much joy. Zoja and Gjergji were twins. In our mountains there were once many inhabitants, mainly herdsmen. You live in cities, therefore you are city dwellers; we live in villages, therefore we are villagers. Last night there were many stars in the sky. The chief cities in Albania were once Elbasan, Durrës, Vlora, Korça; they had

many inhabitants and (these) were called elbasanas, durrësakë, korçarë, vlonjakë. Today, Tirana has as many inhabitants as Durrës and Shkodra together. An old proverb says: even the mountain has eyes and ears. One pear makes many pears, two feet — many steps.

Exercise 8. Si shkoni, zoti Duraku? Mirë, falemnderit. A ishit dje në Nju-Orleáns? Jo, jo, dje isha në Nju-Jork. Dikúr Bostoni kishte shumë shqiptarë, tash shume sish banojnë në Detroit dhe gjithkund në Shtetet e Bashkúara. Sa fakultete kishte më parë ky qytët? Kush merr mësimë nga juha shqipe? Ku ka fjalë shumë, ka vepra pak kështú ishte gjithmonë.

Text 4: Two riddles

A doll with one foot.	White, red, fillo, fillo,
Without a mouth, without teeth.	It is not fillo.
Without a root, without a base:	It has a tail, it is not a mouse.
It comes out when it rains	It has a moustache, it is not a little man
What is it?	(Mushroom) It burns, it is not fire
	What is it?

(Onion)

Exercise 9. Are you friends? Yes, we are friends and were. Once you were boys and now you are old men. Gjergj has two horses and five sacks. The houses have three or four doors. (The) mice are found in meadows too, they are underground in winter. The meadows have grass. These grounds have many birds. The birds fly in the sky. Do the forests have hares? Yes, the hares live in forests, but there are also hares in hills and valleys, not chickens however. In our butcher shops we buy meats for people and bones for dogs. Medicines (herbs) are found in a pharmacy. The rivers grow from rains. Juices are drinks without alcohol. The waters in a sea have much salt.

Exercise 10. Népúnësit punojnë në zyra. Me ullinj bëjmë vájëra. Caqet themelore jane veriu, jugu, lindja e perëndimi. A është këndëj lindja apo perëndimi? Fruthi është një sëmurje. Vajguri duhet për industri, por jo për újërat tona e për lumenjtë tanë.

Text 5: The Wise Herbalist

Luka, an old man, small in stature and dry, is famous among the herdsmen of the Alps as a magician and has a proud name that no one else has: *the herbalist*. Summer and fall he is found on the mountain with a leather bag on his shoulder; (the bag is) an old one which was once a goatskin bottle where now he inserts dry flowers and herbs, roots and leaves. His hands, too, are like roots and his clothes like leaves, and he smells of vegetation as though he had a forest on his shoulder.

Luka knows the healing herbs by name. He says: "Every person or mountain has a name, as I do, for example, *herbalist!*" This man, like a

magician, pretends to be superstitious and says, "Only the herbs which have a name heal, especially fevers! Therefore, some of them also have the names of diseases: smallpox herb, measles herb, typhus herb. The physicians say, 'The herbalist is a fantastic person!'"

It may be so, but Luka actually as a seller of mountain herbs is also an advertising man!

Exercise 11. The dog goes after shepherds and the bee after the scent of flowers. Zoja gets along well with Gjergj's aunt. The village spring has much water this year. Today we have a holiday. The inhabitants of the village like the spring water. We do not have letters from Gjergj's boy. Tereza is coming for a visit tomorrow; Zoja is also coming with Tereza. City dwellers like the voice of birds. The pears are on the kitchen table. You like cheese with a lot of salt, not I! Gjergj's boys are proud of the car that they have. The employees' offices are on the first floor. The pharmacy is found on the corner of the house where we live. This is the sixth lesson. Children like pear juice.

Exercise 12. Gjuha shqipe ka artikuj mashkullorë, femnorë (femërorë) dhe asnjanes. A dini ju shqip? Jo, ne nuk dimë mirë shqip; ne dimë shumë fjalë dhe disa fjali. A dini ju shumë rrégulla të gramatikës? Ju tash dini një pjesë të lakimit të emrave. Në këtë stacion radioje flitet shqip. A kuptoni ju shqip? Pakëz.

Text 6

Kel, Kel, half-chicken,
 Catch the chicken that is coming out!
 Tie it with thread,
 Cut the dog's tail!
 Tie it with string,
 Grab the pope's beard!
 tie it with rope,

(Children's mocking song)

Exercise 13. This is a fox hunter. This is one of the parks of the city. He does not move a finger of (his) hand for us; he does not help us. This is Mr. Duraku's grandson, i.e. the son of Duraku's son. Duraku asks his grandson, "Where are you coming from?" "I was at the sea," says (his) grandson. He has a newspaper in his hand and says, "Look, the evening paper!" In the evening paper is the news of the day, economic news. The sick (person) is not hungry, he has fever and stabbing pain in the chest, he has chills and trembling. On Monday, the doctor comes to the house. The master of the house calculates the income of his son and daughter. With his daughters's money, the father buys clothes and food for the family. The play of mice is the joy of cats — says the people.

Reading Exercise: **Scientific Session Dedicated to the Arbëresh College of Shën Adrian**

The Academy of Sciences, in collaboration with the University of Tirana, the League of Writers and Artists and the Institute of Pedagogical Studies, organized yesterday in the capital a scientific session dedicated to the 250th anniversary of the foundation of the Arbëresh College of Shën Adrian (in Calabria).

Scholars, historians, linguists, folklorists (and) workers in cultural, scientific, educational and artistic institutions took part.

(*Bashkimi* Jan. 15, 1983)

The Hero

The door opened and a handsome warrior entered, noble and majestic, eagle-nosed, falcon-eyed, with a long and curly beard, dressed in steel, armed to the teeth, the living statue of Mars.

(F. Noli, *The History of Skanderbeg*)

Exercise 17. Gjergj stays far from danger; Kacel, on the other hand, goes after danger. The scholar speaks Albanian sweetly, while the historian speaks briefly and passionately about Skanderbeg's time. Do not remain bitter against us! At the village well are sitting the beautiful brides and they are listening to the stories of the wise old man. We sit very well in chairs around the table. Where do you stay at home, in Kavaja or in Vlora? In summer you (pl.) stay in the mountains and in winter on the plain. By day we work and at night we rest. Soon you will speak Albanian. Gjergj's child speaks English completely fluently in school; at home he also speaks Albanian with his sister.

Exercise 18. Motit kishim shumë durim me njerëz, tash më pak. Pse qëndroni pa fjalë në këmbë? Ju lutem, rrini në karrige. Pos Kacelit askush nuk flet gjermanisht. Fëmijët, zakonisht, nuk rrinë qetë gjithë ditën. Herë pas here mësuesi i shkollës pyet: a më kuptoni? Zoja punon bashkë me t'ëmën, mandaj rri gju më gju me të motrën. Ky qytet është pa shkollë të lartë dhe pa muzë.

Text 9: The Construction of the New Road

Ten kilometers distant, there within the valley you hear the noise of motors. When you approach, you see hundreds of workers, men and women. Some, there on the right, near the rock, (are) construct(ing) a shack; below, at the river, the masons (are) build(ing) a wall; high up, the carpenters (are) measur(ing) boards and sawing them. Further away, the smiths (are) heat(ing) iron in the fire, which they afterwards beat with a hammer on an anvil. Beyond, two specialists (technicians) of the department of roads (are) measur(ing) the land surface. Each one has an assistant; the assistants carry several topographical instruments. From

time to time you hear the technicians' words which are carried to the(ir) assistants who hold up a long table with numbers in (their) hand(s):
 'Please, more to that side ... stop there a little ... like that!

The other technician says to his own assistant, 'Hold it there, no, a little more to the right ... it is too much on the right ... left ...'.

'Is it high?'

'The height is good ... do not lower it ... there nearby is a rock: put it parallel with it!'

Usually these works last (lit. go) long, but with this élan of activity, I guess (believe) the road will be constructed this year.

Reading Exercise. Activities Dedicated to the 500th Anniversary of Skenderbeg's Death. "Zëri i Popullit": Durrës, 6 May 1967 (ATSH = Albanian Telegraphic Agency). Today the commission of the Durrës district met to commemorate the 500th anniversary of the death of the national hero Gjergj Kastrioti-Skenderbeg. At this meeting were discussed the activities developed until now and the preparations which are being made in the framework of the 500th jubilee anniversary of the death of Skenderbeg. In order to make the figure of our national hero better known, talks and lectures have been developed with the workers of this district about the historical and social condition of our country before and after Skenderbeg ..., as well as about his main companions in arms. Broad work is being done also in the city museum to commemorate this jubilee year. Manifold activities are also being developed through schools.

Exercise 19. Not everyone who thinks is called a thinker. A work-lover is he who loves work very much, (even if) he does not have supervisors. Between us and the employee there are some disagreements. This year the granaries had much wheat. This land is not rocky, therefore it produces much rice. What is the land called which produces rice? It is called a rice-field. The salt mine had various strata. Is the name of the poet of the folk poetry known? It is said: the poet of the folk song is the people itself. Who formed the words, the people or the linguistic scholar? This Albanian word is composed of three suffixes.

Exercise 20. "Vëllavrasi" është krijimi poetik i një poeti shqiptar. Bashkimi bën fuqinë. Pronar i pýjeve ishte shteti si motit, ashtu edhe sot. Mjeku di prejardhjen e sëmurjes. Ku gjendet kjo fjalë? Kjo fjalë sigurisht gjendet në fjalor. Zoja nuk kishte letërshkëmbim me të vëllanë.

Text 10: Myzeqeja

By the name "Myzeqe" we understand the great coastal plains of southern Albania and by the name "myzeqar", their inhabitants. The origin of this name is not precisely known. The old medieval name of this plain had been "Savra". The new name, certainly, is connected with the name of the late

medieval princely family of the Muzakaj. Some say that the Muzaqë family had this plain as its own property and this name remained from it; others say that a tribe lived in this plain and the first father was Lal Muzhaqi, from whom the name Lalë remained to its inhabitants and Muzeqe to their country.

(“Albanian Ethnography.” Tirana, 1962)

Questions and Answers: Where is Myzeqeja found? Myzeqeja is found in southern Albania. What was this plain called in the Middle Ages? This plain was called *Savra* in the Middle Ages. What is the princely family of Myzeqeja called? It was called the Muzaqë family.

Exercise 21. At what time are you coming tomorrow? I am coming in the morning at nine-thirty. In the year 1468, the national hero Gjergj Kastrioti-Skenderbeg died in Lezha. Today is March 2, 1967. What time is it? What are the times of day? Bus number five or one passes at 12:00 noon; the numbers two, three, four and five pass every day from 7:00 until 10:00. I have two friends: the two live in Durrës; I receive letters regularly from the two.

Exercise 22. Fëmijët hanë katër-pesë herë në ditë. Sa kilogramë peshón i sëmuri? Ai nuk peshón shumë, vetëm 55 kilo. Sa makina janë në parkun e qytetit? Kush i njeh, janë shumë! Ne njehim bagëtitë, thotë poeti, por jo luftëtarët shqiptarë në ballin e luftës. Sa banorë ka ky qytet? Ky qytet ka më së shumti pesëqind mijë banorë, më së paku katërqind e pesëdhjetë mijë banorë. Unë shkoj me dhjetë tetor për pushime në shtëpi. Njehni të hollat, ju lutem!

Text 11. It is a riddle: 25 sisters sit hand in hand. (*Hearth-chain*)

It is a pot with seven holes, what is it? It is a person's *head*.

They are thirty-two brothers in a house with one sister who talks a lot: who are they? They are the *teeth* and the *tongue* in a person's mouth.

It is a tree with twelve branches,

Six mild and six fierce,

Each branch has a nest,

Each nest has thirty eggs. (*Year*)

Exercise 23. you (sg.) can understand me (mund = modal verb 'can', të = Subjunctive marker, më = 1 sg. enclitic pronoun, Accusative, marrësh vesh = Pres. Subj. 2 sg.); he, she can understand you (sg.); you (sg.) can understand him, her; you (sg.) can understand us; I can understand you (pl.); you (pl.) can understand them.

you (sg.) can understand my word (mund = modal verb 'can', të = Subjunctive marker, ma = më 1 sg. enclitic pronoun, Dative + e 3 sg. enclitic pronoun, Accusative, marrësh vesh = Pres. Subj. 2 sg., fjalën = noun, Accusative sg.); I can understand your (sg.) word; I can understand

his, her word; he, she can understand our word; we can understand your (pl.) word; I can understand their word.

you (sg.) can understand my words; I can understand your (sg.) words; I can understand his, her words; he, she can understand our words; we can understand your (pl.) words; I can understand their words.

Exercise 24. Sill-ma një gotë ujë, të lutem! Ep-ia djalit bukën. Djali mori librin e ia dha së motrës. A më sheh? Unë jam majë listit, d.m.th. mbi list. Ne shohim lojën e futbollit në televizor. Kaceli merr me vete edhe dy shokë dhe vjen këtë. A ju qëajnë ju Agim? Jo, mua më qëajnë Genc, vëllanë e qëajnë Agim.

"Kush të verboi?" e pyetën të vëllëzërit katallanin.

"Vetja, more, Vetja, Vetja!" U tha ai.

Text 12: Did he have or did he not have his head?

Some men came out to hunt bear. The bear emerges and they went after it, and it enters its cave, deep in the rock. What to do, what to do to catch the bear? "I'll go in," said one. "You tie me with a rope on my leg. When I catch the bear, I'll move the rope and you pull me out."

He goes into the cave and the bear catches him by the head and tears it off. The rope moves and they, his friends, pull him out. But what did they see? He was without a head!

"Hey, did he or didn't he have his head?" asked his friends.

One said, "He had it!" The other, "It seems to me he didn't have it!"

They go to his wife at home and ask her,

"Woman, when your husband came out today, did he have his head or not?"

"My oath, I don't know! He certainly ate bread, but whether he had or didn't have his head when he went out, I don't know!"

Exercise 25. His wedding guests and hers are coming tomorrow, while yours arrive the day after tomorrow. I like that singer's voice, while you like the sound of this violin. Nevertheless such singers as these and those are rare. The merchant praises his own merchandise and not yours. My friend's family is a working family: his father works in a factory and his mother stays in her home and cooks for her husband and her sons. "A cloth like this," says the merchant, "you cannot find in our city!" Both these dances are accompanied by poetic texts. Those are old-fashioned or ancient songs; some such went out of use with the passage of time.

Exercise 26. Atjë kam unë tim vëllá, atjë kam unë tim atë. Më jep librin tënd dhe unë të jep penën time. Gazetat tujaja janë këtë, jotja gjendet atjë, mbi tryezë. Dijetari dha kontributin e vet për zhvillimin e ekonomisë sonë.

Text 13: My Love

My love,
 I have locked you
 deep
 in my heart,
 that no one may see our sufferings,
 that no one may feel our pain;
 and every night,
 while the crickets sing outside,
 I caress you
 and keep you in my breast.

Reading Exercise: Dance

A crowd of wedding guests has gathered together,
 They have come to take a girl.
 That girl like the daughter of a bey,
 She has the gold of Skenderbeg!

Exercise 27. Whom did you see yesterday in the street? Whose is this car? The support which you (sg.) asked, you have in any case from us. This dress does not please anyone. At the opening which was organized yesterday at the house of culture, there were about two hundred participants. Who spoke at that dedication? Many discussed, some only listened. Someone asked, "What play is given tonight at the theater?" One of those present said, "'Hamlet', it seems to me." In this theater someone works well, another badly. Everyone works, but not everyone can have success in work. From what he heard, he understood that his matters were in a fair way; another understood from what he heard that his matters were not in a fair way. Kacel achieved his aim by the strength of his own will. From one word to another, the discussion increased to a quarrel. One must have in mind what was said yesterday at the meeting. Some verses from the Arbëresh rhapsodies are very beautiful, as for example:

no one notices me
 except the yellow-beaked bird.

Exercise 28. Ai që nuk e ka në kokë, e ka në këmbë; thuhet kështu për një (njeri) i cili harron lehtë. I sati je ti? Unë jam pas atij që është para meje. Çka sheh ti në qiell? Unë shoh çdo korriël që lëviz krahët. Ndonjë ndër to (korriilat) lodhet. Cilidó e ka një fat; disáve fati u shkon në derë.

Text 14: Folk Belief about the Cranes or Wild Geese

The cranes or wild geese travel from north to south or from south to north one after the other, in wedge formation. None stands outside the rank, each one moves its wings in a fixed rhythm. What happens if some one of them becomes tired and stops? The others, I believe, do not leave it on the

way. There are hunters who hunt them with rifles; they therefore fly very high and descend to earth only to sleep or to find food on secluded lands. A folk belief says: when a person sees the rank of cranes or wild geese in the sky, he puts something made of iron in the earth – scissors or a needle, for example, and says:

Cranes, cranes
 where did the night catch you?
 At Calina, long-necked ones.
 Turn, come in a circle,
 As the wind in November,
 As the Drin under us.

After these magic words, the rank of cranes disperses and they turn in the air without any aim. After some time, they range themselves in a rank again and continue their trip north or south, according to the season.

Reading exercise: The Art of Ceramics in Albania

The ethnographic material, compared with the archeological discoveries for various periods, attests that the art of ceramics in Albania is an ancient native tradition which was developed without interruption until our days. Aside from many common features, designations for particular vessels, too, resulted (lit. arrived) in the course of the centuries (lit. from the depths of the centuries) until our days, as is the case of the vessel called *lygjymë* or *lagjin* (a kind of pitcher or jug, *tr.*) which comes from the GK *λάγυνος* or the name of the vessel called *ërrtundë* from the Latin *rotundus*. In like manner, the name of the vessel called *shtamë* or *stommë* (a drinking cup with two handles, *tr.*) comes from the ancient Greek *stomnos* and reminds us of the products of antiquity.

(“Kultura popullore”, 2/1982,
 from an article by Afërdita Onuzi)

Exercise 29. A proverb says: when the basket has figs, all the world are friends. Where love is, God Himself is. I have been ill. What did you have? I had a flu and a little fever. Now I am better. May it be gone! That wall clock is not going, what is the matter? It is not working, it needs winding. Spring has had to come so that the flowers can be put out on the balcony. Can you wait five minutes? The chief is coming now! I have never been in Butrint, but I assume that there will be many new archeological discoveries there. “Let all of them know it,” said the bride, “because I do not want people to play with me as a dog plays with a rag”.

Exercise 30. Ai mund të vijë kurdó (çdo kohë). Për të qenë i lumtur është punë e madhe. Nesër do të jem te ju. Ne po përgatisim valixhet. A mund të vij te ju sonte? Tash po mbyll derën dhe po nisem. A po vjen me ne? Mjerisht nuk mundem. Do të pres edhe pak.

Text 15: For the Purification of the Albanian Language

One of the questions which is often discussed in linguistics is also that of the purification of the language from foreign words and constructions. Literary men and writers in every language of the world took care of their language and endeavored that it be written and spoken, as far as possible, purified and cleansed of foreign elements. This interest in purifying the language from non-Albanian words and constructions also occurred in our language. We must not think that this effort of ours for the language is a new thing in our life as a people. It has ancient roots; our older writers from Budi until now were diligent in this purification of our language, i.e. since the 16th century. Budi, in his first work, the Christian Doctrine, says — among other things — that he began work on the composition of this opus also because the “Arbnesh” language (as Albanian was called then) was decaying very greatly due to the neglect of the scholars and literary men of that time who, it seems, took no thought for matters of the language, but had forsaken it, as Budi says. All this concern and complaint that the Albanian language was being lost and was decaying from foreign words was also revealed by Frang Bardhi and Bogdani in their own works.

Reading exercise: Two Miles from Durrës

And here, at last, Durrës gleamed from afar; the lights of the city greeted us with that silence and coolness which nature has after midnight. They were the lights of our relatives and loved ones who had their eyes on our ship. The order was given to shut off the main motor - now only the lights motor was working, with a soft noise, like a throb of the heart. There was no sea. A warm wind came from the hills of Durrës. All had gone out on deck. Nobody uttered a sound. They had ended the endless predictions for the hour of arrival. The distance of two miles, where we had cast anchor, was small in comparison with the distance of the Atlantic and the Mediterranean from where we came, but nevertheless even this small distance excluded us from our families, from our loved ones and from our acquaintances and this left us silent and thoughtful.

Exercise 31. According to ancient mythology, the god of vineyards died when people gathered grapes: his spirit remained locked in the amphora. In antiquity, too, wine detached people from the troubles of life. Even in antiquity, ceramic vessels were partly replaced by wooden vessels. In ancient times, the sarcophagus was a luxury permitted only for people of wealthy strata. Durrës, the center of the province of Epiri i Ri, was also a large city in late antiquity; the population of this city always defended their freedom. You are tired! How many hours did you work today? If I find a place in the train, I am leaving for the ocean tomorrow; I intend to rest there for a few days.

Exercise 32. Një fjalë e urtë thotë. *kush mbjell, korr; por ne mbollëm e nuk*

korrëm. Tregoje talentin tënd! Mos e humb kohën sepse një ditë do të pendoresh. Qyteti ynë ruan në gjinin e vet shtresa fort të vjetra me vlerë arkeologjike. Atjë jashtë mureve të lashta ku janë orizoret ne luanim dikur futboll.

Text 16: Unpublished Latin Inscriptions in Albania

In recent years, a group of archeological monuments were discovered in our country, among which are also no small number of epigraphic materials. These monuments, found by chance or in regular excavations, are preserved in our museums. The greater part of this very rich material, which is composed of inscriptions in the Greek and Latin languages, is unpublished, therefore unknown. We are thinking of publishing the two groups and for that reason are beginning with the Latin inscriptions. In this work which we are presenting, we are endeavoring to analyse them in as complete a manner as possible that they may be of use to various scholars. Having in view the demands of a publication of epigraphic materials from the archeological standpoint, for each monument we have given its description, material, use and external appearance; from another standpoint, the decipherment, the transcription of texts, the analysis of the letters, etc. have been given. At the end, these are closed with a comment, sometimes brief, about the content and other characteristics which distinguish one or another inscription.

Exercise 33. This new city is being built with state funds; it was destroyed by the earthquake. The young people amuse themselves during the summer holidays. The brothers always quarrel among themselves over small questions. A proverb says: *the razor — you shaved me and I shaved you*: how is this verbless proverb to be explained? The proverb, *the meat is baked and the skewer is not burned* is often heard in many European languages. Many catastrophes have passed over the Albanian people, but it is not vanquished. The physician who does not heal himself cannot heal others. The lion is known even by his tail. The fox was used to drinking water at the waterhole. Without eating garlic, you do not smell.

Exercise 34. Studentët verës lahen në lumë dhe dimrit do të lahen në pishinën e shtëpisë së sportit. Mos shko në dasmë pa qenë grishur! U desh një vit i tërë për ta kryer punimin e diplomës. Iu ngjeth mishi duke dëgjuar lajmin e idhët. Duke iu ngjitur malit Kacelit i merret fryma. Ai do të çlodhet kur do të arrijë në majë të malit.

Text 17: The Snake and the Swallow

A seaman entered the sea in his boat. A mouse went and scratched the plank of the boat and it filled with water. The master of the boat shouted, — We drowned in water!

A snake was hidden somewhere in the boat; it came out and said to the boatman:

.. If I save you, what will you give me?

— Ask what you want! — he said to it.

The snake thrust its head into the hole of the plank and the water was stopped. When they came to the coast healthy and well, the seaman said to the snake:

— You saved us! Tell me what you ask!

— I ask you for the blood of man!

— I can't give you that!

— How can you not give it to me? You gave me your word that you will give me anything that I ask you.

— We will go before the council of elders! — said the seaman. I am choosing the swallow for an elder and you choose whom you want.

The snake chose the dung-beetle for an elder. The dung-beetle came out and said:

— The blood of man belongs to the snake.

— You have a long tongue — said the swallow to the dung-beetle. — Put it out so that we may see it!

The dung-beetle put out its tongue and the swallow cut it off with a scissors, *tsek!*

— You have destroyed my elder, .. said the snake to the swallow. — From now on you will not dare to build your nests anywhere among the trees because I will eat the birds.

— I don't ask your pardon — the swallow shot back at him. — From now on I will hatch my birds under the rooftop of men where the snake does not dare to enter.

Reading exercise: **The Name of Our People**

The name by which foreigners call our people, *Albaner, Albanais, Albanese*, etc. had formerly been generally employed as the name of the people by the natives themselves on Albanian territory as well. But now it has been reduced to local usage among us and has been replaced by the name *Shqiptar*.

The historical path which the two names have traversed seems to have been of the same type as that path which the names of peoples has usually followed. Both of them names of a tribe in the beginning, they grew with time, one after another into the rank of a national name. The old name *Arbën, Arbër* was afterwards covered by the name *Shqiptar*. But everywhere within the territory where Albanian is spoken, whether throughout our colonies, among our older writers, preserved or limited in local use by the tribe, or in place names, we see everywhere that as the ancient name of the people, it shines like a fossil under the stratum of the new name.

The writing of the old name among foreigners vacillates between the forms *Alb-* and *Arb-*; the Albanians themselves have used the form *Arb-*.

The Alexandrian geographer Ptolemy in the 2nd century after Christ

marks on his map of the world between Orestis and Almoperu, to the east of Lezha (Lissus), the tribe of Ἰλβανοί with the city of Ἰλβανόπολις. The tribe inhabited Central Albania.

Exercise 35. The north wind and the south wind are always at war: the first makes the weather wild, while the second tames it. The snow falls in the mountains and the rain drizzles on the plains. The work procedures in the new factory are 70 % mechanized. A popular legend says that a girl by the name of Rozafë was walled up in the castle of Shkodra. When the old man became aged, he even forgot the ancient legends. The witch said to the little Arbëresh girl: 'Be glad, unmarried girl, that autumn is coming soon!' An Arbëresh proverb says: *blood does not become water*. The dance is danced, the bough branches out and the good word is approved. The bread in the oven was baked and burned.

Exercise 36. Ju lutem, shqiptoni drejt këtë fjalë shqipe. Fjala e keqë në grindje trefishohet. Shtëpia u tjetërsua disa herë nga një zot në tjetrin. Ty nuk të ka hije (sg.) të mos nderësh (të mos i sajdisësh) prindërit. Studentesha ankohej se i dhimbte koka. Mjeku mjekón e farkëtari farkón.

Reading exercise: **Ksamil Long Ago**

In Ksamil there was a well where the tired traveller could stop to drink a gulp of water to quench his thirst. Around this well he discerned a patch of verdure in this wild, craggy landscape where the hand of man did not venture to come. Herds came here sometimes to overwinter, but at the end of winter they started off on their way and its constant inhabitants ruled here once more: the jackals and wild boar.

From time to time efforts were repeated to populate Ksamil. In 1774, 200 families from Hormova came here to live. In 1835, the English visitor William Martin Leake, who had spent one night in Butrint, wrote, "There are many wild boar in the forests, the place is full of jackals which, when they cry at night, remind you of the plain of Palestine." So desolate was this place, so wild, that the inhabitants of this area would utter, "May you land in Ksamil!" and use this as their greatest curse.

CHRESTOMATHY

Gjon Buzuku (ca. mid-16th century)

The Creation of Man

("Meshari", genesis I-II, fol. LIXV-LX)

1 E bani
Zotynë mērinë ëmbë shembëlltyrë të vet;
ëmbë shembëlltyrë të tī bani Zotynë mās-
kullinë e fēmēnēnē. E i bekoī e u tha aty-
5 ne: Frujtoni e shumoni e ëmbūshēni dhenē, e
të zotēnoni pishqet detit e zogjet qī-
ellsē e gjithë shtanse, qī të jetë pēr-ëmbī
dhēt. E tha Zotynë: Hinje, se u u kam dha-
në gjithë bārr qī ban farē pēr-ëmbī gjī-
10 thē dhēt, e gjithë pemē qī farē kā por-si e sīa-
dō farē, juve me u klenē pēr gjellē; e gjithë
shtanse të dheut e gjithë qish fluturōn pēr
qiell e gjithë shtanse qī anshtë pēr-ëmbī dhēt,
qī shpirt i gjallē anshtë ëndē to, pēr-se ju-
15 ve t-u jenē pēr gjellē. E ashtë u bā. E pā Zo-
tynë gjithë atā ta qish kish bām se ish fort
mirē. E u bā natē, e duol drita, e gjashta
ditē. E klenē ëmbaruom qielltē e dheu me
gjithë qish ëmbrenda anshtë. E ëmbaroi Zo-
20 tynē të shtātēnē ditē vëpēratē e tī qī ai
bām kish, e pushoi të shtātēnē ditē ën gjī-
thē vëpērashit sē tīsh qī bām kish.

(1) Et creavit (2) Deus hominem ad imaginem suam; (3) ad imaginem Dei creavit illum masculum (4) et feminam creavit eos Benedixitque illis Deus, et ait: (5) Crescite, et multiplicamini, et replete terram et (6) subicite eam, et dominamini piscibus mari et volatilibus (7) coeli et universis animantibus, quae moventur super (8) terram. Dixitque Deus Ecce dedi vobis (9) omnem herbam afferentem semen super (10-11) terram, et universa ligna, quae habent in semetipsis sementem generis sui, ut sint vobis in escam: et cunctis (12) animantibus terrae, omni que volucris (13) coeli, et universis, quae moventur in terra, (14) et in quibus est anima vivens, ut (15) habeant ad vescendum. Et factum est ita. Viditque Deus (16) cuncta, quae fecerat: et erant valde (17) bona. Et factum est vespere et mane, dies sextus. (18) Igitur perfecti sunt coeli, et terra, et (19) omnis ornatus eorum. Complevitque Deus (20) die septimo opus suum, quod (21) fecerat: et requievit die septimo ab universo (22) opere quod patrarat.

2. *Zotynë* = *Zoti ynë* 'our Lord God': with this meaning, the possessive pronoun is postpositive only in the Nom. (cf. § 146, No. 2)
3. *ëmbë shembëlltyrë* = *më shembëlltyrë* ~ *shembulltyrë* 'in the image' from Lat. *similitudinem*; *e vet* ~ *e tī* 'his' alternate
4. *u tha atyne* 'said to them'. double object (cf. § 127).
5. *frujtoni* 'bear fruit': cf. also *frujt-i* = *fryt-i* 'fruit', used in the liturgy, *ëmbūsheni* = *mbushni* 'fill'.
6. *pishqet* or *pishqët* (pl.) = *peshqit* 'the fishes' · sg *peshk-u*.

- 7 *qiells* = *qiellës* 'of heaven' the ending of the Gen f *-ëse* alternates primarily after sonants or liquids with *-se*, cf the modern ending for nouns in stressed vowels, such as *shtëpi-së*, *gjithe shtanse* or *gjithe shtansë* = prej çdo shtëpë 'every animal'
- 8 *per-embj dhët* (Abl) = *përmbj dhë* 'over the earth', *se u u kam dhanë* = *se unë u kam dhanë* 'for I have given you'
9. *hnje* or *inje* 'see, ecce' (cf § 129, No 3), *bàrr* (Acc.) = *barin*: *bàrr* from *barnë* 'grass'.
- 10 *gjithe peme* or *gjithe peme* = *çdo peme* or *pemë* 'every fruit', cf also *gjithe qish* = *gjitheçkà* 'every thing, all'
- 11 *siadó farë* = *ciadó farë* 'every seed' (cf § 55, b): *silli-do* or *silli-dota m* 'every'; *me u klenë* (Infinitive) = *më u qene* 'to you to be' cf Arberesh *kljenë* = Geg (dialect) *kjenë* 'having been'
14. *ëndë to* = *në to* (atò) 'in that', *për-se* (conjunction of purpose) = *që te* 'in order that'.
- 16 *kish bâm* (plupf.) = *kishte bâ* 'had made' *bâm* participle with *-m* ending which also alternates with *-te* (*bâte*), *tsh* abbreviation of *ishtë* (cf § 171)
18. *klenë ëmbaruom* = *qenë mbaruë* (*mbaruar*) 'had been made', *qiellte* (pl) = *sq qiell-ja* (f.) 'heaven' = *qiell-i m.*, pl. *qiej*
- 19 *ëmbrenda* = *mbrenda* 'inside, within'
- 21-22. *bâm kish* ~ *kish bâm* = *kishte bâ* 'had made' both variants alternate, the first, with prepositive participle as plupf. Indicative, is not typical for Albanian, but is frequent in Buzuku, evidently under the influence of the original text; *ën gjithë vëpërashut së tish* = *prej të gjitha veprave të tij* 'from all his works': *vëpërash-it* def. Abl. pl., *së* article usually marking the Abl., it should be noted further that the possessive pronoun *se tish* is declinable (cf *së tijsh* in § 141, No 1)

Jacob obtains by craft the blessing of his blind father Isaac

("Meshari", genesis XXVIII, 6-40, fol. XLIVV.-L)

- 1 Ënd-atò dit tha Rebeka birt vet
Jakobit: u gjegjshë ën sit et se
fleit Ezaut tit vëllà tue i thashunë:
Bjërëmë ën gjâjet sote, e më ban gje-
5 llë të shishime e të hà, e të të bekonj
përpara tinë Zot, parë se u të vdes.
E tash, biri em, pa gjegj fjälëse
sime u qish të ordhënónj. Ecë ti tash
tek dhentë e merr dy edha të mirë,
10 e u t-i banj gjellë të shishime tit et por-si
ai dëshëron; e t-ja shpijesh e të hae,
për-se ai të të bekonjë parë
se vdes. E tha Jakobi s-amësë Re-
bekë: Hinji, se Ezau em vëllà anshëtë
15 leshëtâr, e u jam pà lesh; e em atë muo
në më prektë, ai mos kujtónetë
se u duo t-a qeshinj, e u druo mos më
- (1) In diebus illis dixit Rebecca filio suo (2) Jacob: Audivi patrem tuum (3) loquentem cum Esau fratre tuo, et dicentem ei: (4) Affer mihi de venatione tua, et fac (5) cibos ut comedam, et benedicam tibi (6) coram Domino antequam moriar. (7) Nunc ergo, fili mi, acquiesce consiliis meis. (8) et pergens ad (9) gregem, affer mihi duos haedos optimos, (10) ut faciam ex eis escas, patri tuo, (11) quibus libenter vescitur: quas cum intuleris et comederit (12) benedicat tibi proutquam (13) moriatur. Cui ille respondit: (14) Nosti quod Esau frater meus homo (15) pilosus sit, et ego lenis: si attraxerit me pater (16) meus, et senerit (17) timeo ne putet me sibi vo-

apë të mallëkuom, e jo të bēkuom.
 E i tha e ama: Kloftë ëmbi muo atá
 20 të mallëkuom, o biri em. Gjaj zanit tim,
 e ujtë e më bjerë muo të dý ëdhatë.
 E vote e i përu. E bani e ama
 e tì gjellë t-ambëlë, por-si dëshir i ati
 i tì kish. E muor Rebeka pëtëkatë
 25 mâ të mira të Ezaut birit saj
 mâ d-madhit, qi ajó ëndáj vétëhenë
 kish ëndë shtëpì; e bani me u ënvëshunë
 Jakobnë birrë e saj mâ të vó-
 gëlinë; e i ëngjëroi dúortë e qáfënë
 30 e tì me lëkurë ën edhash. E i dha
 gjëllënë e shishime e búkëtë qi ajó traj-
 tuom kish. E erdh tek i ati e tha: Ati
 em! E ai ju përgjëgj: Kush je, biri em? E
 tha Jakobi s-et: U jam Ezau biri ujt
 35 mâ plaku; u bana si më thae; ëngreu
 mâ tash, e rri, e ha ën gjajet sime, për-se
 muo të më bekonjë shpirti ujt. E tha Iza-
 ku birit tì: Qish kafshë kle këtë? Si
 mujte këtë gjã me e gjuom kaqë shpjert,
 40 o biri em? E ai i tha: Zotynë më
 poq ëmbë të. E tha Izaku Jakobit:
 Pa m-u afëro, se duo të përkás,
 o biri em, pa m-a je biri em Ezau, o jo.
 E u afëruo Jakobi Izakut përrindit tì, e pre-
 45 ku, e tha: Zani anshtë zani i Jakobit,
 ma dúortë janë të Ezaut. E nukë e
 njohi, për-se dúortë e tì ishnë por-si
 dúortë e Ezaut, vëllait tì leshëtarë. E
 bekoi, e tha: Ti je Ezau, biri em? E ai
 50 i tha: U jam. Bjerë gjëllënë ën gjajet
 sote, e u të [h]ã, për-se të të bekonjë
 shpirti em. E i dha gjëllëtë, e [h]langrë,
 e i përu venë, e piu; e i tha atì Izaku,
 përrindi i tì: Afërou tash e më puth,
 55 biri em. E u afëruo, e puthi. E i muor
 ërënë e pëtëkavet tì, e bekoi, tue tháshu-

luisse illudere, et inducam (18)
 super me maledictionem pro be-
 nedictione (19) Ad quem mater:
 in me sit, ait, ista (20) maledic-
 tio, fili mi, tantum audi vocem
 meam, (21) et pergens affer quae
 dixi. (22) Abut, et attulit, didit-
 que matri Paravit illa (23) cibos,
 sicut velle noverat patrem (24)
 illius. Et vestibus (25) Esau valde
 bonis, (26) quas apud se habebat
 (27) domi, induit eum. (28-30)
 pelliculasque haedorum circum-
 dedit manibus, et colli (30) nuda
 protexit. Deditque (31) pulmen-
 tum, et panes, quos coxerat, tra-
 didit. (32) Quibus illatis dixit:
 Pater (33) mi! At ille respondit:
 Audio. Quis es tu, fili mi? (34)
 Dixitque Jacob: Ego sum primo-
 genitus tuus Esau: (35) feci sicut
 praeceperisti mihi. surge, (36) sede,
 et comede de venatione mea, ut
 (37) benedicat mihi anima tua.
 Rursumque Isaac (38) ad filium
 suum: Quomodo, inquit, (39)
 tam cito invenire potuisti fili
 mi, (40) fili mi? Qui respondit:
 Voluntas Dei (41) fuit, ut cito
 occurreret mihi quod volebam.
 Dixitque Isaac: (42) Accede huc,
 ut tangam te, (43) fili mi, et
 probem utrum tu sis filius meus
 Esau, an non. (44) Accessit ille
 ad patrem, et (45) palpato eo,
 dixit Isaac: Vox quidem vox
 Jacob est: (46) sed manus, ma-
 nus sunt Esau. Et non (47-48)
 cognovit eum, quia pilosae ma-
 nus similitudinem majoris ex-
 presserant. (49) Benedicens ergo
 illi, ait. Tu es filius meus Esau?
 (50) Respondit Ego sum. At ille:
 Affer mihi, inquit, cibos de ven-
 atione tua, fili mi, (51) ut be-
 dicat tibi (52) anima mea Quos
 cum oblatos comedisset, (53) ob-
 tulit ei etiam vinum. Quo hausto,
 dixit ad eum: (54) Accede ad me,
 et da mihi osculum (55) fili mi.
 Accessit et osculatus est eum.
 Statimque (56) ut sensit vesti-
 mentorum illius fragrantiam, be-

në: Hinje era e birit tim, por-si erë
 ën are, qi kâ bekuom Zot Zotynë.
 Tÿ të dhashtë ën vóeset së qiellet
 60 e të majm ën dheut e drithë shumë e
 venë; e tÿ sherbëfshinë pópujtë e tû, e tÿ t-u
 ënfálshinë gjindja; ti klofsh zot për-ëmbi
 të tû vëllázënë, e tÿ t-u për-vúfshinë
 bijtë e sat-ame. Ai qi të të mallëkonjë
 65 të jetë mallëkuom, e ai qi të të bekonjë
 të jetë bekuom. E si ëmbaroi
 me e bekuom, sâ memzi ish dâm Jakobi
 ën fáqejt së Izakut përindit vet, erdh
 Ezau i vëllai prej gjâjet së tî. Ashtú
 70 bani edhé ai gjâ të shíshime, e shpû s-et,
 e tha përindit vet: Ëngreu, ati em, e ha
 ën gjajet së birit tit, për-se të më bekonjë
 shpirti ujt. E i tha Izaku, përindi i
 tî: Kush je? E i tha: u jam biri ujt i
 75 pari-lenë, Ezau. Ashtú u maravejuo
 Isaku fort, e tha: Por kush kle ai qi
 kle për gjâ e muo më përú, e u [h]angra
 ën gjithësëj parë se ti vinjee, e bekova,
 e të jetë békúom. E si ggegj Ezau
 80 sjálëtë e përindit tî, thirri ëm një zâ
 të madh, e u hidhënuo fort. E tha përindit
 vet: Edhe muo birrë tand bekó, o ati em.
 E ai i tha: Erdh ujt vëllâ me die-këqia,
 e muor të bekuomitë tat. E i tha Ezau:
 85 Për të vërtetë se ai vjen grishune
 Jakob, e muo më kâ ëngënjem dÿ
 herë: ai më muor të pârëtë e lenë
 tem, e hinje se tash muor të bekuomitë
 tem. E tha përindit vet: E a s-me rúojte
 90 edhé muo të bekuom? E u përgjëgj
 Izaku, e tha Ezaut: hinje, se u e vuna
 zot për-ëmbi tÿ e gjithë vëllázënët tî, e
 atí shtova vënëne e drithëtë; e tÿ qish të
 të banj, bîri em? E tha Izau përindit
 95 vet: E a s-kë edhe për muo një të be-

nedicens illi, ait. (57) Ecce odor
 filii mei sicut odor (58) agri pleni,
 cui benedixit Dominus (59) Det
 tibi Deus de rore coeli, (60) et de
 pinguedine terrae abundantiam
 frumenti (61) et vini. Et serviant
 tibi populi, et (62) adorent te
 tribus. esto dominus (63) fra-
 trum tuorum, et incurventur ante
 te (64) filii matris tuae. Qui male-
 dixerit tibi, (65) sit ille maledic-
 tus. et qui benedixerit tibi, (66)
 benedictionibus repletur. (67-
 68) Vix Isaac sermonem imple-
 verat, et egresso Jacob foras,
 venit Esau (69-70) coctosque de
 venatione cibos intulit patri,
 (71) dicens Surge, pater mi, et
 comede (72) de venatione filii
 tui, ut benedicat mihi (73) anima
 tua Dixitque illi Isaac. (74) Quis
 enim es tu? Qui respondit: Ego
 sum filius tuus (75) primogenitus
 Esau Expavit (76) Isaac stupore
 vehementi, et ultra quam credi
 potest, admirans, ait: Quis igitur
 ille est, (77) qui dudum captam
 venationem attulit mihi, et comedi
 (78) ex omnibus priusquam tu
 venires? Benedixique ei, (79) et
 erit benedictus Auditis Esau (80)
 sermonibus patris, irruit cla-
 more (81) magno, et consternatus,
 ait (82) Benedic etiam et
 mihi, pater mi (83) Qui ait, venit
 germanus tuus fraudulenter, (84)
 et accepit benedictionem tuam.
 At ille subjunxit: (85) Juste voca-
 tum est nomen eius (86) Jacob
 supplantavit enim me en altera
 vice: (87) primogenita mea ante
 tulit, (88) et nunc secundo surri-
 puit benedictionem meam. (89)
 Rursumque ad patrem: numquid
 reservasti (90) ait, et mihi be-
 nedictionem? Respondit (91-92)
 Isaac: Dominum tuum illum
 constitui, et omnes fratres ejus
 servituti illius subjugavi: (93)
 frumento et vino stabili vi eum,
 et tibi (94) post haec, fili mi,
 ultra quid faciam? Cui Esau:
 (95) Num unam, inquit, tantum

kuom, o ati em? Edhë muo më bekô,
 se edhë u jam biri ujt. E ëngriti Ezau
 zanë e ti e klau. E ju përgjëgj Izaku,
 përinti i ti, e i tha: Hinje se ën së
 100 majmit së dheut anshtë të bekuomitë tat
 e ën vóeset së qiellët përsipëri.

benedictionem habes pater? (96-99) mihi quoque obsecro ut benedicas Cumque eulatu magno fleret, motus Isaac, dixit ad eum: (100) In pinguedine terrae, et in rore coeli desuper erit benedictio tua.

Note

It has been shown that Biblical texts such as the foregoing were translated not only from the Vulgate, but partially from the Greek version as well directly or indirectly (i.e. from secondary translations). It is therefore advisable, in comparing the Albanian Biblical text, to consult, aside from the Vulgate, the Greek original too.

1. *birut vet* = *birut të vet* 'to her son': in such syntagms the homogeneous conjunctive article is almost always lacking in Buzuku and other older authors (cf. §§ 66-67).
2. *u gjegjshë* (Aor. sigmatic I sg cf. § 229, No. 4) = *unë gjegja* 'I heard': cf. *-shë* ~ *-ç* ending in § 229, No. 1, as in *pushë* (pa-shë) 'I saw'.
3. *flut* (Imperf. 3 sg.) = *fliste* ~ *flitte* 'he spoke'; *tue i thashunë* = *tue i thanë* 'saying to him'.
4. *bjërëmë ën gjâjet sote* = *bjer-më prej gjojet (gjahut) tand* 'bring me from your venison'.
7. *pa gjegj fjalesë sime* = *po gjegje fjalën time* 'now listen to my word': *pa* = *po* + Pres. Ind. (habitual, § 178).
11. *e t-ja shpyësh e të hae* = *t'ia shpesh e të hajë. të hae* (Pres. Subj. 3 sg.).
- 12-13. *parë se vdes* = *para se të vdesë* 'before he dies' the conjunction is lacking (cf. v 6)
15. *leshëtâr* 'hairy'.
16. *muo në më prehtë* = *mue nësë më prek* 'if he touches me': *në* + Pres. Opt. with hypothetical function (cf. § 190), *ai mos kujtonetë* (Pres. Subj. 3 sg., Medio-Pass.) = *mos të kujtohet* 'that he does not notice, think': with *-n-* augment instead of *-h-* (cf. § 236, No. 2)
17. *se u duo ta qeshinj* = *se unë due (dua) ta qesh* 'I want to betray (lit. mock) him'.
18. *të mallëkuom-të* (n.) = *mallkim-i* 'damnation', *të bekuom-të* (n.) = *bekim-i* 'blessing'.
19. *kloftë ëmbi muo* = *qoftë mbi mue (mua)* 'may (it) be upon me'.
20. *gjegj zanut tim* = *ndëgjô zanin tim* 'listen to my voice or counsel'.
21. *ujtë* or *ytë* = *shko 'go!'*: this verb has not survived
26. *mâ d-madhut* = *mâ (më) të madhit* 'of the bigger': *d-* < *t-* (t-madhut) with regressive assimilation; *ëndaj* = *ndaj* 'near'.
27. *e bani me u ënvëshunë* = *e bani me u veshë* 'she put it on'. *bani* 'made, did' stands in a causative function here
28. *birrë e saj* = *birin e saj* 'her son (Acc.): *birre* < *birnë*.
29. *i ëngjëroi* (Aor. 3 sg.) 'surrounded': *ëngjëronj* 'surround, wrap' from *givarë*.
- 31-32. *që ajô trajtuom kish* = *që ajô kishte gatue* 'which she had made, formed'.
35. *mâ plaku* = *mâ i vjetri* 'the older': *plak* 'old' used adjectivally; *thae* = *thë* 'you said': cf. § 214, No. 3, for the transformation of *ae* > *ë*; *ëngreu* = *ngrehu*, *çou* 'arise'.
38. *qish kafshë kle këtâ* 'what was that (lit. this thing)'. *këtâ* (n.) 'this'.
39. *kaqë shpjert* = *kaq shpejt* 'so soon'.
42. *pa m-u afërô* = *po m'u afrô* 'now come close to me'

- 43 *pa m-a je biri em Ezau* = po a më je biri im Ezau 'whether you are my son Esau'
- 46 *ma diorte* – por duert 'but the hands' Ital *ma* 'but'
- 50 *bjere gjellen en gjajet sote* – bjer gjellën (ushqimin) nga gjoja (gjahu) yt 'take the food from your venison'
- 51 *e u të [h]jā* që unë të ha 'that I may eat': the phoneme *h* is unstable in initial position, cf *ana* instead of *hana* 'the moon'
- 52 *angre* = hangri 'ate' in Arberesh, as generally in Old Albanian, Present *ha*, Aor *hangra* ('hengra'), Participle *ngrane* ('ng'rene') (cf the double forms in Aor and Part in §283, a)
53. *e i përū venë* – i përuni venë 'and brought him wine'
56. *tue thashune* = tue thanë (Gerund), the double participial forms *thashunë* and *thanë* are usually not interchangeable *thane* occurs in the construction of the Admirative *profeta në te thaneke* 'if the prophet had said'
- 59 *ën vòeset së qiellit* – prej vesës së qiellit 'from the dew of heaven', *te majm-te* (n.) – pjellori-a 'fruitfulness' cf *i. e majmé* luxurious, fat
62. *tÿ t-u ënfálshine gjundja* – ty të adhurofshin gjundja 'may the peoples honor you'.
63. *tÿ t-u per-vúfshine* – ty t'u nënshtrofshin 'may they submit to you'.
- 65 *ai qí të të mallëkonjë* – ai që ka për të mallkue ty 'those who will curse you'.
67. *sā memzi ish dām* = porsá u ndá or mezi ishte largue 'he had just left'.
- 70 *e shpū s-et* = i pruni or i shpuni (shpuri) te jatit 'and brought to his father'.
- 75 *i pari-lenë* 'the first-born': most probably a loan-translation of *primo-genitus*; *lenë* (le-në) a Participle with the ending *-ne* parallel with *-te* and *-më*: *tue klenë letë* (Perfect Gerund), *u maravejuo* – u çudit, u habit 'he was surprised'.
- 77-78. *u angra ën gjthesëj* – e unë hangra nga të gjitha 'and I ate of it all', *parë se ti vinjee* – para se ti vjishe ~ vije 'before you came'
80. *ëm një zā të madh* – me një zā (rë) të madh.
- 81 *u hidhenuo* = u idhnuë 'became angry'
83. *me dia-këqia* 'malicious, treacherous': *diekëq-e* adj 'evil-minded', pl. *diekëqi-diekëqia*.
- 85 *vjen grishunë* = quhet 'it is called' periphrastic form with the verb *vjen* 'it comes, i e. will' + Participle
86. *ka ëngënjyem* (Perfect): *ka ngënjye* 'has lied, betrayed'
87. *të párete lene* (n) 'the right of the first-born'
- 89-90. *a s-më ruojte edhë muo te bekuom?* = as më rucjte per muc një bekim? 'have you not kept a blessing for me too?'
- 93 *e tÿ qish të hany* = e çka të bëj (bëj) për ty 'what should I do for you'; *drithëtë* (n.) = drithin 'the grain (Acc)
- 97 *ëngriti* (Aor.) = ngriti 'raised', cf *ëngreu* (Imperative, v. 71).
98. *e klau* = e qau 'and wept', cf Arbëresh *kljanj* 'idem.'
101. *per-sipëri* = për sipri 'from above', cf *për fundi* 'from below'.

Luka Matranga (1567-1619)

Të tetë të lumetë = The Eight Beatitudes

("E mbsuame e Krështerë", 1952, 2 Kopie, fol. 68v.)

- 1 lumtë atá që janë vabëk shpirti pse i-tirëja ishtë perëndia e qiellvet.
- 2 lumtë atá që janë të butë se atá kanë të trashigónjënë dhënë.
- 3 lumtë atá që klânë pse kanë të jënë fëqierë.
- 4 lumtë atá që kanë ù e et për ligj pse atá kanë të jënë glirë.
- 5 lumtë atá që kanë lipisì se atá kanë të jënë lëpisurë.
- 6 lumtë atá që janë qëruarë zúmëret pse atá kanë të shóhënë tënëzonë.
- 7 lumtë atá të mbaqëruamitë pse kanë të klùhënë bilj të tinëzót.
- 8 lumtë atá që psónjënë të përzëna për ligj pse i-tirëja ishtë perundia i qiellvet.

Note

This text is taken from *La "Dottrina Cristiana" albanese di Luca Matranga*, edited by Matteo Sciambra. Roma, 1964

1. *lumtë* = të lumë 'happy'; *që* = që 'which, who' (cf. § 151, No. 1), *vabëk* = varfër 'poor', *shpirti* (Dat) 'in spirit'; *i-tirëja ishtë* = e tyrja është 'theirs is'.
2. *kanë të trashigónjënë* = do të trashëgojnë 'they will inherit'. cf. Arbëresh Future 182, No. 3, to which it should be added that the auxiliary verb *kan* is inflected throughout.
3. *klanë* = qajnë 'weep': 3 pl. Present, according to the facts of Com. Alb. could also be Aor.; *fëqierë* = ëngushëlluom (Buz) 'comforted'
4. *ù* = Geg ù-ja, Tosk uri-a 'hunger'; *kanë të jënë glirë* = do të jenë ngirë 'they will be satiated'. Future Passive, in which *glirë* 'satiated' is meaning-bearing.
5. *lipisì* = mëshirë 'pity, mercy, compassion'; *lëpisurë* 'pitied' Participle from the verb *lipisinj* 'pity'.
6. *qëruarë* = dëlirë 'cleansed, purified': Participle from *qëronj* 'cleanse, purify'; *zúmëret* (Abl.) = zemre 'in heart'; *të shóhënë* = të shohin (cf. § 221, No.); *tënëzonë* (Acc. cf. § 146, No. 2).
7. *të mbaqëruamitë* = të paqësúemit 'the pacifiers': with participial formant *-mmbaqëruam* from *mbaqëronj*; *kanë të klùhënë bilj* = do të quhen bij 'they will be called sons'. sg. *bir-t* pl *bilj* in modern Arbëresh as well.
8. *psónjënë* = psónjë 'they suffer', *të përzëna* = salvime, përndjekje 'persecutions'. *për-zë* 'expel, persecute'; *perundia* = perëndia 'God': exchange of *ë'u*, a known phenomenon also in the contemporary dialect of Piana, from where Matranga originated, cf. above v. 1,6 *zúmëret*.

Pjetër Budi (1566-1623)

Dy urdhënime më të mbrápënat = The Last Commandments

("Doktrina e Kërshtenë", 1618, p. 69)

- 1 Gjakoni mbet e i tha se, ndër këtë të dý, bukur na kallëzón e na mson në qi jo veçesé fort të rúhemi e aspák të mos e bájme mkatnë e kurvënisë me vëpëra e me të báme, po ashtú endé as me të deshëruom e të kujtuom, as me ndónjë arrësye me mos e lakëmuom grúonë e shoqit e

5 të fqinjësë, as vājzënë, as djālënë, as sherbëtórrë as sherbëtórrënë, as
 kálinë, as kánë, as ndōnjë kafshë plangut e të shtëpies tij: për-se aj i
 përlevduom qi bukur i di, e i sheh, e i njuh jo veçesë vëpëratë e të
 bāmētë tona, po ashtu endë gjithë të kujtuomitë e mendësë e të shqisesë e
 deshírrë e helmuom e vullëndetnë e zëmëresë sanë. aj kështu do e i áshtë
 10 pëlqem qi na fajtórëtë e helmuom të jëmí gjithëherë dlírm e mpastruom,
 jo veçesë gjithë mkáteshit e palavísh së korpit helmuom mbë
 këtë jetë, po ashtu endë má tépërë ansósh së shpírtit, qi s-janë tjetër
 veçesë deshíretë e këqia të zëmëresë e të kujtuometë e pã udha e të pã
 arrësye të mendësë e të shqisesë sanë. E kështu tue bãm gjithëherë
 15 kishnjimë me u gjetunë ndë të madh gazimën e ngushëllim të shpírtit e
 ndë hír të tinëzót për gjithë jetë të jëtësë.

1. *Gjakoni mbet e tha* = xhakoni u përgjigj 'the apprentice replied' *mbet* lit. 'remained' has only a modifying function here, *nder ketò te dý* 'each of the two (commandments)'.
- 2-3. *mson në* = na mëson 'instructs us', *jo veçesë* 'not only' .. *po ashtu endë* 'but also': conjunctions for adversative clauses (cf § 301), *mkatnë e kurvenisë* = *mkatin e kurvisë* 'the sin of unchastity', *me vëpera e të bame* 'by acts': synonyme termini
4. *me të deshëruom e me të kujtuom* (n) = me dëshurë e me kujtim 'by desire and by thought'; *as me ndōnje arrësye* = per kurrfare arsyeje 'in no case', *me mos e lakëmuom grüone* – *mos me e lakmue gruen* 'not to desire woman' *me mos* instead of *mos me* + Participle, cf also the variants of the prohibitive forms *te mos* + Subjunctive and *mos të* + Subjunctive (§ 188, No 2)
5. *sherbëtorrë* from *sherbëtorë* (Acc) = *sherbëtorin* 'the servant', *sherbëtorene* = *sherbëtoren* 'the (f.) servant'.
6. *as ndonje kafshë plangut e te shtëpies* = asnjë send nga plangu e shtëpia 'nothing of farm and house'
7. *aj i përlevduom* = 'the much-glorified', i c. God, *bukur* (adv.) = exactly
- 8-9 *të kujtuomitë e mendësë* – kujtimin e mendjes 'the intention'; *deshírrë* from *deshírne* (Acc.) – *dëshirin* 'the desire', *helmuom* 'ill-natured' lit. poisonous: *i, e të helmuom* adj. without gender marker for f as in Mod. Alb. *e helmüeme*.
10. *do e i áshtë pëlqem* = *don dhe i pëlqen* 'he wants and pleases him'.
11. *dlírm e mpastruom* – *dlírun e pastruom* 'completely pure': the author frequently uses synonyme termini, such as this, for greater expressivity or intensification.
12. *mkáteshit e palavísh* (Abl) = prej mkatesh e palavish 'from sins and indecencies': cf *fjalë palavi* 'obscene words', *endë* = edhe 'also'.
13. *ansósh* = asósh 'from those'
14. *të kujtuomete e pã udha e të pã arrësye* = kujtimet e gabüeme e të paarsýeshme 'the incorrect and illogical thoughts'.
- 15-16. *të shqisesë sanë* = të shqises sonë 'of our sense'; *kishnjimë me u gjetunë* (Geg Conditional, cf. § 189, No. 1) = do të gjëndeshim 'we would find ourselves'; *gazimën* = *gazmënd* 'joy'.

Pjetër Bogdani (1630-1689)

Fragment from "End of the World"

("Cuneus Prophetarum", 1685, Scal.IV.Lig.IV)

1 Mbas-si të jetë shëkulli gjithë djëgunë me zjarm, ka me u kulluem dheu
me gjithë të tjerë elementa mb-atë mendyrë posi janë kjanë kūr u
krijuenë prej Sinëzót. Qielltë kanë me pushuem e nukë kanë me u siellë
kështú. Ashtú endë djelli, e hana, e yjtë kanë me pushuem i-sillidó mbë
5 vend të vet, e kanë me pasunë nji shkëlqim mã të madh se si e kanë sod.
Ashtú endë gjithë eleméntatë, qi janë dheu, ajri, újëtë e zjarmi kanë me
u bãm mã të kulluem se janë, e nukë kanë me pásunë mã ató ndërrime
posi mpari; nukë ka me lem mã nierī mbë shëkullit, as peshk ndë dët, as
zog nd-ájrít, as bār, as gjeth mã ka me u rritunë përmbi dhët. Nukë
10 kanë me kjanë mã vjettë, múejtë, dittë, as natë, po gjithëherë dritë.
Nukë ka me kjanë mã borë, ákullë, shī, brëshënë as baltë, as të ftófëtë,
as të nxëtë, po nji paq e pushim të gjithë káfshëvet.

Ka me kjanë dheu qëruem prej zjarmit së madh asó ditëje qi ka me
árdhunë, posi ari ndë furrë, pa ndonji gand, posi tash dúketë se áshtë
15 újëtë. Újëtë ka me shkëlqyem posi nji diell me rrëzetë vet, endë ndë
Limbit ka me kjanë këjò dorë dritëje; e kështú endë zjarmi ka me kjanë
fort i ndriçim e ka me ndrítunë endë ájrinë. Këtá të përtrim thonë
dotórëtë se ndë çast ka me u bãm mbas gjyqit. Mbas-si të jenë
eleméntatë qëruem e kulluem prej zjarmi, ka me u kulluem aj bram e
20 ajó flliqëshitī, hī e plúhënë, pëshkëve e rrshinë, me gjithë sa dorë plehi qi
të shpëtonjë zjarmit, e ka me rrjedhunë e me gjetunë vend ndë thelbtë
dheut, nd-atë shpellë të érrëtë, shtëpia e dënuemet e niërzet këqive,
kurraj për të mos dalë andýj, po gjithëherë tue u ziem asó flake n-
zjarmi, tue mallëkuem atī të birrë e biri t-átënë.

- 1 *mbas-si të jetë . . gjithë djëgunë* = mbasi të jetë djegë fare 'afterwards it will be completely burned'; *ka me u kulluem* = do të kullohet 'will purify itself' (cf Futur § 182).
- 2-3 *mb-ate mendyrë* 'in that way'; *posi janë kjanë* = si janë qenë 'as they have been'; *kjanë* from *klane* Geg, from where Bogdani originated, another characteristic of which is the construction of the Perfect with *jam* instead of *kam*; *kanë me pushuem* – kanë me u ndalë 'they will remain standing, i.e. come to a standstill'.
5. *i-sillidó m.* 'every', *e-sjadó f.* with palatalization of ll > j (cf. § 151, No. 2); *pushuem, pásunë* Participles in *-m* and *-në*, retained in Geg only in the respective adjectives (cf § 75)
8. *posi mpari* = si së pari ~ mã parë 'as earlier'
9. *mbë shëkullit* (Abl) = më shekull, në bote 'in the world', cf also *ndë dët* – në det 'in the sea', *nd-ájrít* = në ajër 'in the air'
10. *vjettë* 'years', *dittë* 'days'. *-të* is the pl morpheme
12. *të ftófëtë* = të ftohtë 'cold'
13. *pushim të gjithë káfshëvet* = pushim i të gjithë káfshëvet 'rest of all beings'.

- 14 *qeruem* (Part) = purified; *asó ditëje* (Abl) = në atë ditë 'on that day'
 15 *pa ndonji gand* – pa ndonji njollë 'without any spot (without error)'
 16 *me rrëzete vet* – me rreze të veta 'with its beams'
 17 *kejó dorë driteje* (Abl.) = kjo lloj drite 'this type of light'.
 18 *endë* – edhë 'also', *te pertrim* (n.) – përtrimje-a 'renewal'
 19 *ndë çast* = në moment 'immediately', *mbas gjyqit* 'at the Last Judgment'
 20. *bram-i* – fundërrri-a 'remainder, dross'
 21. *flliqeshi-a* 'dirt, impurity'; *pëshkëve-ja* = peshkve-ja 'pitch', *me gjithë sa dorë plehu* – me çdo lloj plehu 'with all sorts of garbage, dross'
 23-24. *në thelbtë dheut* = në thelb të dheut 'in the core (heart) of the earth' cf. *te m* v 16 above; *e mërzet këqive* – e njërzëve të këqij 'evil people' *këqive* with inflection of the adjective (cf. §81, No.), *kurraj per te mos dale andýj* = per mos të dalë kurrë andýj 'so that they will never emerge from there' *per te mos dalë* Future with purposive function (cf. §316)
 25 *ati të birrë e biri t-átënë* = ati të birin e biri të jatín 'the father the son and the son the father'. *birrë* Acc from *birnë*.

Socrates' Wife

("Cuneus Prophetarum", Scal. II. Lig. I)

- 1 Sokrati kje martuem e pat një grue gjarpënushë. Këjó, sa-dohërë qí i urti letërrar kthente ndë shtëpít' vet, e prit me një furí, sa burri tue him ndë shtëpí, i dukej se po hinte ndë Ferrë. Një here kje aqá përkujdësunë prej së shóqëjet, sa tue mos múnjtunë me duruem má, duel jashtë
- 5 shtëpíjet, gjithë farmakuem, e bani me ndénjunë mbë të dälëtë shtëpísë mbë një selí. E shóqëja, tue pám ndénjunë mbë deret, muer një kusí me ujë të túrbullë e ja derdhi për-mbí kryet t-shojt', t-sillí me zëmërë të fortë kthej atë mëni ndë gaz, tue thanë se kush nuk' e dijti se mbas bumbullimësh vjen brëshënë e shí. E me atë gumezí pushtëj atë kujdës.
1. *grue gjarpënushë* 'a poisonous woman' *gjarpën-ushë* with the function of a qualitative adjective 'snake-like', which Bog translated into Italian with the word *serpentina*, evidently as a calque from the Alb., *sa-dohërë qí* = çdohërë që 'every time that . . .'
 2. *i urti letërrar* – dijetari i urtë 'the intelligent scholar' with prepositive adjective to intensify the idea of 'intelligent', *prti* (Imperf) – priste 'expected', *me furí* = furishëm 'furious'.
 3. *tue him* (Gerund) = 'entering'.
 4. *kje aqá i përkujdësune* = qe aq i përkujdesun 'was so sad, worried'; *múnjtunë* = mujtë, mundë (mundur) 'could'.
 5-6 *bani me ndénjune* = u ul me ndeje 'he did, made (it) and sat down': bani + Infinitive (Initial); *mbë të dälëtë shtëpísë mbë një selí* 'in the entrance of the house over a chair'. *të dalë-të* (n.) — the connective morpheme attached to the first noun should be noted.
 7. *të shojt* = të shoqit 'to the man', with the transformation of *qit* to *jt*.
 8. *kthej atë mëni ndë gaz* 'transformed anger into a joke, laughter'; *kush nuk' e dijti* 'one should have known'; *mbas bumbullimësh* 'after the thunder'.
 9. *gumëzi-a* 'joke'.

Jul Variboba (1725-1788)

Kënka e të zgjuarit = The Song of Awakening

('Gjella e S. Mëris Virgjir, 1762)

- | | |
|--|--|
| <p>1 Zgjou, bër, jo më gjum
Zgjou se më fjëjte shum,
Jeta ime, via m-u zgjo,
Zgjou se bëre ninó.</p> <p>5 Vjen një leg pekurâr
Pruçësión të vizitâr.
Gjegj si losën, si këndonjën,
dhën e dëtin gjëmonjën.
Karamunxa e fiskaroljë</p> <p>10 Surdulina e rusinjoljë
Mír bukur u ngualâr.
O çë vjersh! të rikriâr.
Gjegji, bër, e ju gëzó,
Me kto duarz i bekó.</p> <p>15 Ruaj rigalje sã të suall,
Gjith mëndrën e rëzuan.
Nga me dór këtë qëngje
Ç-ësht e bardh si një skamëngje.
Ç-ë tenera kjo gjiz,</p> <p>20 Ruaj e suall kî kaçapris.
E kaciqen me ktë dhî
E suall kî buzëzi.
E grastatin pjot lesh
E suall kî këmbalësh.</p> <p>25 Ç-ësht i ëmbël kî gual!</p> | <p>Erth Nikola e t-e suall.
Miljekoci suall një rashk
Ngreu, bër, t-e hãm bashk.
Një manure pratënerë</p> <p>30 E një zok si kaçuljerë
E një t-égërih pëllumb
E suall Ngjisku me një tumb.
Via, bër, zgjou, pravój,
Pekurarët békój.</p> <p>35 Erth edhe një lëg divote
Tue kënduar parambote.
Rúaji, bër, e i gëzó.
Zgjou se bëre ninó.
Vjen Gjúdita me një gjel,</p> <p>40 Zû fill ajó kangjël.
Ifigjenia suall një kopull,
Një lakruar e një trogopull.
Suall Malita një kapua
E e motra një pagua.</p> <p>45 Pes brac xagarele
Suall e vea Rutíçele.
Suall e bilja ca gështenja.
Qirierina edhe mëllenja.
Suall Rakélea një bres</p> <p>50 Se t-e ngjeshënj nd-at mes.</p> |
|--|--|

Note

The foregoing text is taken from the 1st edition: *Gjella e S. Mëris Virgjir* ('the life of the holy Virgin Mary). Roma, 1762. The poet here transfers the scene of the shepherds' visit to the Christ child from Bethlehem to his own birthplace in Mbuzati (S. Giorgio). Accordingly, the shepherds are well-known people of Mbuzati and the gifts which they bring are local products. Mary tries to wake her sleeping son so that he may accept the gifts. Var utilizes a large number of Calabrian loanwords, which other poets later avoided. Characteristic phonetic features of the Albanian dialect in which Var and, later, De Rada - wrote are stressed or long *e* tends to openness, so that it sounds like a slightly nasalized *a*, *h* is sounded *gh* [ɣ], a cacuminal fricative, *l* is palatalized to *lj*. Var's language represents precisely the dialect of Mbuzati as spoken in the 18th century.

3. *via m-u zgjo* = 'get up (to me)!'. cf. Ital *via* (interj.)

4. *bëre ninó* 'you have slept'.

5. *vjen një leg pekurâr* = *vjen një grup delmere* 'a group of shepherds is coming'
Ital *pecorato*

- 6 *pruçesión* 'procession'; *të vizitâr* = *të vizitajnë*. Calab *visitari* 'visit'.
- 8 *dhën* . instead of *dheu e dëti gjëmonjë* 'earth and sea thunder'. *karamunxe* = *gajde* 'bagpipe', Ital *cornamusa*; *fiskaroljë* = *zamare*. Calab. *fiscarulu* 'life'
- 10 *surdulina* Calab 'a kind of flute', as also *rusinolje*, *ngualar* 'agree, correspond', Calab *nguagliari*, *mir bukur* = *shumë bukur* 'very beautiful'
- 12 *te rikriâr* = *të argëtohes*h 'amuse oneself'.
14. *duarz* = *duar të vogla*. -z suffix is widely used in Arbëresh as a f diminutive
- 15 *ruaj* = *shikô* 'look', *rigalje* = *dhurata* 'gifts'
16. *mëndren* = *grigjen* 'the flock, herd' Ital *mandra*, *i rëzuan* 'brought here'
- 17 *nga* = *perkit* 'touch'
- 18-19. *ç-është*, *ç-ë* = *si është* 'as is'; *skamengje* = *bashkë pambuku* 'small heap of cotton', *tenera* = *e butë* 'soft', *gjuz* = *gjuzë* 'cheese curds'
20. *kaçapris* = *bari* 'herdsman'.
- 21 *kaciqe* = *edh* 'kid'.
22. *buzëzi* = *zeshkân-i* 'browned', *buzë* 'lips' -zi 'black'
23. *grastatin* = *edhin ose qëngjin moták* 'yearling kid or lamb' Ital. *castrato*
24. *këmbalësh* 'with feet tied with wool'
25. *gual* = *djathë* 'cheese'.
27. *rashk* = *dorëz djathi të njomë* 'piece of soft cheese'
- 29 *manure pratënerë* = *një gogël, forme djathi të thate* 'a form of hard cheese'
30. *zok kaçuljerë* = *zog shepkë* 'snipe'
- 31 *ëgërith pëllumb* = *pëllumb i egër* 'wild dove' the diminutive suffix *-th* is generally attached to adjectives in Arbëresh
32. *tumb* = *kind of cheese curds*.
- 35 *nje lëg divote* = *një grup grash të devoçme* 'group of pious women'
- 36 *parambote* = *këngë* 'songs'
- 37 *e i gezô* 'make them happy'
- 40 *kangjël* = *kind of folksong*
41. *kopull* = *shapkë* 'cap'.
42. *lakruar* 'vegetable cake' *trogopull* = *cjap* 'ram' Gk. τραγόπουλο.
- 43 *kapua* = *kapôsh* 'fatted chicken'
44. *pagua* = *pallua* 'peacock'
45. *pes braç xagarele* = *pesë kutë gajtana* 'five lengths (ca. yard) of braid': Calab. *zagarelle* or *zaharedde*.
46. *e vea* = *e veja* 'the widow'.
48. *qirierina e mëllenja* = *gushakuça e mëllenja* 'robins and blackbirds'.
- 49 *bres* = *brez* 'belt'.
50. *se t-e'ngjeshënj nd-at mes* = *që të të ngjesh atë mes* 'so that I may encircle your waist'.

Jeronim De Rada (1814-1903)

Kangjelji I. = Song I

("Milosao", 1836)

- | | | | |
|----|---|--|--|
| 1 | Ljjs jeta kishë ndërruar,
Uj të rī ndë dejtīt
Kaljthëruar te dit e rē:
Por lumbårdh e Anakreontit | | Rrusht pak skalankūr
Dheut ēn i kīn hjē:
20 Ljulje ljuj të ghāpura,
Nd-era i tundēn e pērzien,
Nd-at ninulj qēshēnjēn:
Sī atō ljulje qieli:
Ti rúaje e sē kuljtoje |
| 5 | Rronej Tēmp e mōçēme.
Nd-uj njē dit vate te malji
E s-u pruar sī kish zakōn.
Vet çē atē s-e thajti bora,
S-e pērgjaku ākuli | | 25 Njē mbuīn njērēzish.
Kalēzoret mbē dhemat
Mbajn kangjelje. Ka i ghōj
Aghiena ndër time mōtēra
Kishj' arrēn; e mēma ime |
| 10 | Se m-u resht njera çē rā
Tek e bardha shpia ime.
Kūr te drita dheu me shpī
U zbulua je dejtī
Sī gharea çē delj pēr sīsh, | | 30 Emērin tim thoj pēr ndē shpī.
Njē gharē m-u rrodh te kurmī
Sī gharēa mbrēmjes te shtrati
Kūr vajza e ngroghēt
Ndien pēr të pārēzēn |
| 15 | Mua mē zgōi, tue fluturuar
Qēljqevet finēstērēs.
M-u patakxa e rúata jashtin: | | 35 Sist çē i frighen. |

Note

The First Song is taken from the first edition *Canti di Milosao*, figlio del despota di Scutari Napoli, 1836

Regarding the orthography, it should be noted that De Rada relies not only upon the vocabulary of his own dialect, but also takes words and linguistic forms from other neighboring Arbëresh dialects. It is thus necessary to depend upon his orthography. In most cases he, like Variboba, substitutes the cacuminal [ɣ] for *h*, *lj* [ʎ] stands in contrast to *l* which may be realized as alveolar [l] or dental-velar [ʎ], i.e. depending upon which dialect the word is taken from

1. *ljjs* = qarr 'oak'; *jeta* = bota 'the world', *kishë ndërruar* (plupf.) = kishte ndërruar 'had changed'.
2. *ndë dejtīt* = në det 'in the sea'
3. *kaljthëruar* (Part) 'dyed blue'. Pres. *kaljtherōnj* 'dye blue', *te dit e rē* = te dita e re 'in the new day'
4. *lumbårdh* = lumbardhë-a, pëllumb-i 'dove'.
5. *rronej* = rronte 'lived'. *rronej* (Imperf.) cf. De Rada (1871), p. 81, *Tēmp* = në Temp.
6. *nd-uj* . . . *vate* = shkoi pēr ujē 'went to the water'
7. *s-u pruar* = nuk u kthye 'did not return'. Pres. *pruem* (cf. § 253, No. 5), *zakōn* (Acc.) = zakonin 'the custom'.
8. *vet* = veç 'but, however'; *s-e thajti* = nuk e thau, nuk e griu 'did not freeze'. Pres. *thanj* Aor. *thajta* (cf. § 202)
10. *m-u resht* = më iku, më fluturoi 'went out, fled'. *m-* is a pronominal hypocoristic form, cf. the expression *m'u sēmue* ('sēmur) *djalī* '(my) son became sick to me'; *njera çē rā* = deri qē ra, u ul 'until she lay down, rested'

- 13 *je* (conj) = edhë 'also'
 14 *gharëa* = hareja, *gëzimi* 'the joy', *per vish* = nga sytë 'by the eyes'.
 16 *qëlqevet fînësterës* = nëpër xhama te dritares 'through the window panes'
 17 *m-u pataksa* = brofa 'jumped up', *ruajta* - këqyra 'looked' Pres *ruan*
 Aor *ruata* or *ruajta* (cf. v. 8 above), *jashtin* - jashtë 'outside', here Acc. i e a
 hybrid form *jasht-i* or other case forms are not attested
 18 *pak shkallankūr* = gati pjekur 'almost ripe'
 19. *dheut ën* 'our land' assimilation from *dheut-t-ën* (cf. De Rada, 1871, p. 61),
i kin hje - i kishin hje 'embellished' *me, të, i ka hje* 'it suits me, you, him or it
 becomes me, you him'
 20 *lujle lju të ghâpaura* = lule liri të hâpura 'opened flax flowers'
 21. *nd-era i tunden e përzien* = nëse era i tund e përzien 'if the wind moves and
 mixes them': Pres *tundenj-tunden-tunden*, etc. (cf. 221, No 2)
 22. *nd-at nmulj* = në atë përkundje 'in that swaying'; *qëshenjen* (Pres) - qeshin
 'they laugh' (cf. De Rada [1871], p. 78), *lâgënjën* 'they moisten, water'
 24. *ti ruaje* (Imperf.) 'you looked' (cf. §211, No., De Rada, p. 81 *lanja, laja*), *e se
 kujtoje* (Imperf) = e s' kujtonte 'and she did not notice'
 25 *nje mbuin njërezish* 'a milling crowd' Calab. *mbuuna* 'din'.
 26. *kaleçoret mbë dhemat* = kallëzit ndër duaj 'the ears in sheaves'.
 27. *mbajn kangjelje* = këndonin kangjelje 'sang songs': Imperf *mbajn* lit 'held', *ka
 i ghol* = nga (dheu) i huaj 'from abroad, foreign parts' *i hoj* in Com Alb i, e
 huej (huaj) in diphthongized form, cf. also *hojë-a* 'frightening form for
 children', actually foreign country, foreign parts.
 28. *aghuena ndër time môtera* = atcherë te time motra 'then to my sister'
 29 *kishj' arrën* (Plupf) = kisha arritur 'I had arrived'
 30. *thoj* (Imperf) = thoshte 'she said'
 31 *m-u rrodh te kurmi* = më përshkoi nëpër trup 'flowed through my body'
 32 *mbrëmjes* = në mbrëmje 'at evening'
 33. *vajza e ngroghët* = vajza e ngrohtë 'the girl warmed'
 34. *për të parëzën* - për të parën herë 'for the first time'.
 35 *sist çë i fryhen* - sisat që i fryhen 'the breast which expands' Pres Medio-
 Passive *fryhen* (fri-h-en) with -h- augment instead of -n- (cf. §236, Notes).

Hasan Zyko Kamberi (2nd half of the 18th century)

Trahani (Semolina)

- | | |
|---|---|
| <p>1 More shokë dë këtë alëm
 drejtë vete çupa e djem,
 se pun'ë ti s'hyn dé kalëm;
 dritë kush gjeti trahanë!</p> <p>5 Aferim ç'bëri dëngozi
 muar qumësht prej kosi,
 me miell e nakatosi:
 dritë kush gjeti trahanë!
 Fort ka qënë i ditur,</p> <p>10 s'ka qënë donjë i mitur,
 dritë kush e ka gjëturë,
 dritë kush gjeti trahanë!
 Tetë muaj gjithë ç'janë,
 që e ziejnë e hanë;</p> | <p>15 fukarasë u ban hajanë;
 dritë kush gjeti trahanë!
 Çpejt dë mëngjës pa griturë,
 dose plak dose i miturë,
 e kërkojnë pa griturë;</p> <p>20 dritë kush gjeti trahanë!
 Të mjëretë hizmeqarë
 do t'ecinë duke qarë,
 cili për derr e cili për d'arë;
 dritë kush gjeti trahanë!</p> <p>25 Edhe rixhâl e ajanë
 për trahanë bënë denë
 gjer e pjekënë si kafënë;
 dritë kush gjeti trahanë!</p> |
|---|---|

- D'atë shtëpi që s'ka trahán,
 30 gjithë ajó shtëpi po qan,
 po Zotynë bëftë dermán!
 dritë kush gjeti trahanë!
 Si trahani gjellë ku gjen,
 kur të hash, bárkunë ta nxen,
 35 si vera t'ep qejf e të nxen;
 dritë kush gjeti trahanë!
 Trahanë kur e ndërtojnë,
 me qumësht e trazojnë,
- me gjalpë e përvëlojnë,
 40 dritë kush gjeti trahanë!
 Trahanë ta shtiesh dë tas,
 të kesh edhe búkënë has,
 piper' e zi t'ja bësh takás,
 dritë kush gjeti trahanë!
 45 Trahanë ay që merr vesh,
 është për dë rixhál peshqësh,
 kur ta ziesh, ta bësh përshtësh,
 dritë kush gjeti trahanë!

Note

Kamberi lived in Starje, Kolonja region, Southern Albania, and wrote poems of a religious and social character, as well as war songs and love songs with popular elements — all in Arabic script. His poem *Mevludi* (the birth of the Prophet Muhammad) brought him great fame. K. died at an advanced age, having previously entered a Şufi order.

The foregoing text is taken from the study by Osman Myderrizi in *Buletin për shkenca shoqërore*, Tirana, I (1955).

1. *dë* = ndë 'in'; *além* = botë 'world'.
3. *s'hyn dë kalém* = s'bëhet llogari 'one may not count'.
4. *dritë kush* = pastë dritë 'may it have light (deliverance)'; *trahanë* (Acc.) from *trahan-në* 'semolina'.
5. *aferim* = bravo!
7. *nakatosi* = përzjeu 'mixed'.
10. *donjë* = ndonjë 'someone, anyone'.
15. *fukarasë i ban hajanë* = u mban jetën, i mban gjallë të váfërit 'supports the poor in life'.
17. *çpejt* = shpejt 'soon'.
18. *dose* = ndose 'or'.
21. *hizmeqarë* = sherbëtorë 'servant'.
25. *rixhál e ajanë* = njerëz të shquar dhe parësi 'intelligence and authority'.
31. *bëftë dermán* = i ndihmoftë 'may He help'.
37. *ndërtojnë* = gatojnë 'prepare'.
42. *të kesh has* = të kesh mëri 'may you not like'.
46. *peshqësh* = dhuratë 'gift'.
47. *ta bësh përshtësh* = 'crumble it'.

Naim Frashëri (1843-1900)

Këndó, ëngjëll, urtësinë = Sing, angel, the wisdom ...

("Istori' e Skënderbeut", I, 1898)

- | | | |
|----|--|---|
| 1 | Këndó, ëngjëll, urtësinë
edhë gjithë mirësinë,
Skënder-Ben' e trimërinë,
q'i dha Shqipërisë dritë. | dhe me dritët të uruar
shko përpara mej' e ndritmë,
20 të shoh gjithë ç'kanë shkuar.
Që kur ngrehu gjithësinë
Zot' i math e i vërtetë,
ka bërë dhe Shqipërinë
e Shqiptarët në jetë. |
| 5 | Të lumtë goja, këndonja,
me gjuhë t'ëmbëlë si mjaltë
Skënder-Ben' e math tregona,
Trimnë burrë, Zotn'e naltë. | 25 Shqipëria kurdoherë
ka qënë shumë e lëvduar,
ka pasur burra të ndjerë,
trima t'urt' e të dëgjuar.
Pati mbretër' e të parë |
| 10 | kordhëtari i vërtetë,
kombinë duke nderuar,
dhe Shqipërinë për jetë,
nga gjiri i Perëndisë
pa m'i sill nër mënt të mija, | 30 fort të mëntshim e të mirë,
burra trima, Shqipëtarë,
që kan' emrë të pavidrë.
Ishte vënt' i Perëndisë
që së pari Shqipëria |
| 15 | t'i ap dritë Shqipërisë
nga shpirt' i ndritshim i tija.
Ëngjëll i bukur pa xbritmë, | 35 mëmëdhëth i urtësisë,
që del sojë mirësija. |

3. *Skënder-Ben* = Skënderbenë.7. *math* = madh; *dh* becomes voiceless in final position8. *trimnë* (Acc.) = trimin 'the hero'; *Zotn'* = *Zotnë* (Acc.), i.e. without elimination of *-n-* before *-t-*; *naltë*: Geg for *lartë*10. *kordhëtari* 'saber-fighter'.14. *pa m'i sill* = po m'i sill 'now bring me', *nër mënt* = ndër mend 'in memory, remembrance'.16. *i tija* = i tij, i.e. of Skanderbeg's soul.17. *pa xbritmë* = po zbrit-më 'come down to me'.18. *me dritët të uruar* = me dritën e bekuar 'with blessed light'.19. *shko përpara meje* = më prij 'lead me'.20. *gjithë ç'kanë shkuar* = çdo gjë që ka shkuar 'all that has happened'.21. *ngrehu gjithësinë* = krijoi, ndërtoi gjithësinë 'created the universe'.30. *mëntshim* = mendshëm 'intelligent'.32. *emrë* = emër; *pavidrë* = pavdekshëm 'immortal'.35. *mëmëdhëth* = mëmëdhë 'motherland', with *-th* diminutive suffix, here hypocoristic.

Zëmëra

- 1 Retë kur bënenë sterrë
edhe era kërcëllimë,
dheu bënetë skëterrë
edhe qjelli vetëtimë,
5 zë një shi me rëmbim shumë
që xbret nga ret' e mbyt dhenë,
bie qiejshit si lumë,
pa vete të gjenjë denë;
10 vinë përrënjt' e rrëketë,
edhé uj' i trumbulluar
vë përpara ç' gjë të jetë
e ç'gjen mb'udhë duke shkuar;
ashtu edhe Zëmëra ime
nxjerr gjëmim e vetëtima,
15 zjarr e flak' e mallëngjime,
derdh gjaknë me psherëtima.

1. *bënenë* = bëhen 'become'; *bënenë* (Pres. Ind. Passive) with *-n-* augment instead of *-h-* (cf. 236, no. 2); *sterrë* 'dark'.
3. *skëterrë* = darkness.
5 *zë një shi* = fillon të bjerë shi 'it begins to rain'.
6. *xbret* = zbret 'comes down'.
7. *qiejshit* = prej qiejvet 'from heaven': Abl. pl. (cf. § 50, No. 3).
8. *denë* = detin, with elimination of the *-t-* before *-n-*.
9. *përrenjtë* 'brooks'; *rrëké-të* 'pouring rain or waters'.
10. *trumbulluar* = turbulluar 'muddied'.
11. *ç'gjë të jetë* 'every existent thing'.
16. *gjaknë* = gjakun.

Zef Schirò (1865-1927)

Nata e madhe = Christmas Eve

- 1 Ng-e harrónj: ish Nata e madhe,
e te darka, si ngà vit,
e përitur me haidhī,
triezën t-ënë të gëzój,
5 t-e gëzój si buka e kripa,
motërtáta na kish jardhur,
kalogrëza plakarushe
si një vidhez e pā ftesur.
I Skjirónjëvet më i móçëmi
10 prindi jim e dēj përkrahu
te të krëmtet. Bashk të di
janë edhé te jeta e ftet
me gjërín çë po vëldojën,
me atë lule shpejt të veshkur
15 e vëlláuthit t-im të tretit.
Tek i húaji dhë ku jemi
na nani, për jū po flasëm,
o të dashur, e ju kemi
si të gjáll përpara sivet,
20 se edhé ktu na mblen te trieza
buka e drithit çë bën Fusha
e te qëlqezit e thielm
shkëlqën vera e Llazit t-ënë.

Note

This extract about a family festival, taken from the first edition of the collection "Te Dheu i Huaj" (1900), represents the literary tradition of the Sicilian Arbëresh. Schirò later modified this work, as he did with almost all his writings in Albanian, in order to conform to the standardization of the literary language and literary content of the motherland. This tendency was followed after Schirò by other Arbëresh writers of Calabria and Sicily

1. *ng-e* = nuk e
2. *si ngâ vit* = si çdo vit 'as every year'.
3. *me haudhi* = me gëzim 'with joy'
6. *motertata* = motra e tatës 'aunt on the father's side'; *na kish jardhur* (Plupf) = na kish ardhur 'had come to us'.
7. *kalogrëza* = mungesha 'the nun'; *e pā ftesur* = e pafāj 'innocent'.
12. *e fiet* = e vërtetë 'true, i.e. in the other life'.
13. *vëldojen* = lëvdojën (metathesis).
15. *e vëllauthit* = e vëllathit 'of the small brother'
16. *tek i huaaj dhë*: cf. the title of the volume of poems, *Te Dheu i Huaaj*
20. *na mblen te trieza* = shkëlqën në tryezë 'shines on the table'
21. *çë bën Fusha* = që bën Fusha (place name near Hora e Arbëreshëvet, the poet's native village)
22. *te qëlqezit e thielm* = në gotat e pastra 'in clear glasses'
23. *Llazi* = name of a family member, Lazarus

Ndre Mjedja (1866-1937)

Lissus I (1921)

- 1 Neper kodra të stolisuna me vneshta
 Ku vilet arit xhixhiloshin në dielli,
 E rrotull fushen tui kaditun, prilli
 Edhë lulzonte kur kish himun vjeshta,
- 5 Nder ullishta gjelbrore qi kah Kreshta
 E terthores s'Merqijës vishin nji filli,
 Ku Velja e rrmbyeshme qi perkët te qielli
 Ambel me hyjzit mban kuvende t'shpeshta,
- Darsmore të Bahtit, t'Aferdites shkoshin
- 10 Veshun me gunza e krah't e bardh' t'shpervjelun
 Vashat e Ilirve me koshere n'kryc.
- E ngrehshin valle dora dora, e kndoshin
 Kreshnik't e Ilirvet e anmiqt e ngelun:
 Gadhnjyes Bardhylin e Perdiken thye.

Note

Lissus, the classical name of contemporary Lezha, is the title of the twelve sonnets about the past of this ancient city under the Illyrians. Kreshta, Merqija, Velja are place names around Lezha.

2. *vilet arit* 'golden grapes': *arit* instead of *ari*, Abl. (cf. § 50, No. 3); *xhixhiloshin* (Imperf.) = xixillonin 'gleamed'; *në dielli* (Abl.) = në diell.
3. *rrotull* 'all around'; *tui kaditun* (Gerund) '(like) spreading incense': liturgical term from OCS кадити 'perfume with incense'.
4. *kur kish himun* = kur kish hy 'when had entered'.
5. *gjelbrore* = të gjelbëra 'green'.
6. *terthores* 'through the hillside, mountain slope'; *vishin* (Imperf.) = vimin 'they came'; *nji filli* 'in rows, ranks'.

- 7 *rrmbÿeshme* = rrëmbÿeshme 'steep'.
 8 *mban kuvende t'shpeshita* 'frequently converse': *mbaj kuvend* (inchoative) 'converse'.
 9. *darsmore* 'bride's maids, wedding guests', *Bahti* 'Bacchus'.
 10. *gunza* 'bodice'; *t'shpervjelun* 'turned up'.
 11. *me koshere n'krye* 'bearing small baskets on the head'.
 12. *ngrehshin valle* = vallëzonin 'danced'.
 13. *e ngelun* 'fallen'.
 14 *gadhnyes* = fitues 'victor'; *Bardhyli* 'king of the Illyrians', *Perdika* 'king of the Macedonians'; *thye* = mundun 'conquered'.

Gjergj Fishta (1871-1940)

Deka = Death

("Lahuta e Malcis", from the cycle *Oso Kuka*, 1904)

- 1 Kish t'a diej, ç'ka aj Oso Kuka,
 Qi tue i shkue s'âsht sande buka.
 S'po i shkon buka as mishi i dashit:
 Kot nget trÿezës â ndëjë per rrashit,
 5 Tue perdredhë njatô musteqe!
 Thonë, ká pá nji anderr t'keqe.
 Anderr t'keqe, thonë, ká pá
 Mbramë, qi shkoi, porsá ká rá.
 Ká pá n'anderr se prej Rjeket
 10 Kënka nisë nji hije deket
 Ndezun flakë, si flakë lugatit,
 Qi, tue hecun fushës e shpatit
 E nper kneta e nper zallina,
 Fill po vîte kah Vranina.
 15 Kúr n'Vraninë ajô ká mrrî,
 N'Xhebehâne, paska hî,
 Edhé i dhânka zjarrë barotit,
 Kur ká dhanun zjarrë barotit,
 Ka plasë kulla e ká marrë gjâmë
 20 Asht dridhë toka per nen kâmë,
 Ká ushtue Lqëni, mali e lumi,
 Edhe Osos po i del gjumi.
 Pá ket anderr Oso Kuka,
 E prandëj nuk po i shkon buka,
 25 S'po i shkon buka as mishi i dashit
 Kot nget trÿezës â ndëjë per rrashit.
 Po, s'han bukë, veç sá me thânë;
 I lán duert e del m'njânë ânë,
 Per urë voters pshtetë m'njân'n brî,
 30 Tue mendue, duhân tue pí.

- 1 *kish t'a dhej* = kisha te dij 'would like to know' (modal construction, Opt.).
2. *sande* = sonte.
3. *s'po i shkon buka* 'he is not hungry'.
- 4 *nget* (prep with Dat) – afër, i.e 'at table', *à ndëje per rrasht* 'reclines'.
5. *nyatò* (nj-atò) (cf 129, No 3)
- 6 *kà pà nji underr* (durative) 'had dreamed'
8. *porsà kà rà* 'as soon as he had lain down'
10. *kënka nisë* (Admir. Perf) = qenka nisë; *hye deket* 'shadow of death'
11. *lugát* 'vampire, evil spirit'
13. *kneta* = këneta 'marsh'; *zallina* 'beaches, shores'
14. *po vite* = po vinte.
15. *kà mrrí* = ka mbërrijtë 'has come, arrived'
- 16 *Xhebehâne* 'arsenal'
- 19 *kà marre gjâmë* = ka gjemue 'has thundered'
20. *kâmë* = kambe. për nën k. 'underfoot'
23. *pà* (Aor.) = pau
27. *veç sa me thânë* 'only a little'
28. *i lân ... e del m'njânë anë* 'washes his hands (sign that he had finished his meal) and leaves the table, to the side'.
- 29 *per urë voters* = pranë votrës 'near the hearth', *pshtete m'njà'n bri* 'leaning on one side'.

Tallazet e Oqeanit

- 1 Deti kje me nám deri kah mjesnata. Si dúelem në Kënáll t'Irlandës, filloi era e filluen tallazet me t u turrë avullores, e cilla, si nji kolós, përkundej madhnúeshëm mbi 'to, kah i çajte me forcë 16 milsh n'orë. Kah mjesnata mbërrijtem në Queenstown, ku ndëjem nja tri orë.
- 5 Atëherë u nisem per Amerikë. Ishte e diele. Udhtarë mbrendë ishín 911, detarë 294. Era frÿjte pá dá e tallazi vijte tue u shtue sa má këthellë qi i u fúteshim Atlantikut.
T'ëjten (26.II.1922) u shkreh nji thellim i përfrigúeshëm. Prite Zot, rrezikun, se shka kam pá atë ditë! Endé më përqethet shtati, sa herë
- 10 më bjen ndër mend ajó duhi. Qiella tue vetue e tue bumbullue, era tue ulurue, deti tue gjumue e tallazet sa malet tue u plandosë herë për ballë, herë për kíç, herë për bri t'avullores: tash tue u dyndë, thue, deri ndër rë përpjetë, tash tue u karrani shul në teposhte neper rrjedhë shkumbúese, si po të dojshin me e përpim e me e lëshue pingúl në fund të detit. Kriste
- 15 avullorja, krisëshin makinat, rrapllojshin gota, shishe, çinija, karriga e tavolina, a thue se ishte banda e Frano Ndojës tue na përcjellë në vorr ...
Kur himë në limá të New-Yorkut na dúelen përpara dhetë vapore të vogla e u rreshtuen pêsë kah balli më njenën anë e pêsë kah kíçi, më
- 20 tjetrën, e filluen me e shtým avulloren për me e afrue molit. Kah i kqyrshem prej së naltit ashtú krye më krye, tue e shtým avulloren, më dajshin si dhetë derkuca tue thithë më nanën dosë: merre me mend se shka áisht nji transatlantik.

Note

Extract from one of Fishta's letters wherein he describes his first visit to the USA

1. *kje me nâm* = qe fort mirë 'was good, peaceful', *si duelem* = mbasi dolëm 'when we entered'.
2. *me i u turrë avullores* = me sulmue avulloren 'to attack the ship'.
3. *kah i çajte* (Imperf.) = ndërsá i çante 'while it broke them': *kah* + *Pres.* or *Imperf.* may replace the Gerund in Geg (cf. § 198), see also the example below.
6. *fryjte pá dá* = frynte pandërprejme, pandá 'blew uninterruptedly', actually *pa ndá* 'without separation'.
7. *këthellë* = thellë 'deep'.
8. *u shkreh një thellim* = plasí një shtrëngatë (tufán) 'a sea-storm broke'.
10. *duhi* = cf. *thellim*.
11. *tue u plandosë* 'hurling itself'.
12. *kiç* 'stern'; *për bri* 'on the side'; *tue u dyndë* 'raising'.
13. *tue u karrani* 'falling down': *Pres. karranihem*, *shul në teposhte* 'straight down (in the abyss)'; *rjedhë shkumbëse* 'foaming whirlpool'.
14. *si po të dojshin me e përpim* 'as though they wanted to swallow it'.
15. *rraplojshin* = rrapëllonin 'made a din'; *çinija* = pjata 'plate'.
16. *banda e Frano Ndojës* 'Frano Ndoja's band' which played on various occasions in Shkodra at the beginning of this century; it would also play to accompany burials.
18. *vaporre* 'steamer', from which the loan-translation *avullorë* 'idem'
20. *me e afrue molit* = për ta afrue molit 'in order to bring it close to the quay'
21. *më dajshin* = më dukeshin 'they seemed to me'
22. *derkuca* 'piglet'.

Asdreni (Aleks Stavri-Drenova 1872-1947)

E Bukur' e Dheut

- 1 Që lart nga reja ka pikuar!
Shëndrit si gur margaritari,
Si pika e vesës e kulluar;
Agim mëngjezi, dritë ari,
- 5 Magji' e prallës pa treguar.
Një buzët ngjyrën e qershijve,
Një syt' të káltërtit e qiellit,
Një lesht' të verdhit e kallijve;
Fytyr' e saj si drita e diellit,
- 10 Dhe trupi hiri i perëndijve!
Mburim e krua bukurije!
'Saj i unjet madhëria e mbretit,
Kur del, le gjyrmë prej shkëndije;
E bardhë porsí shkumba e detit,
- 15 Ndë pamjet një verbim magjije!
Del soje drita e vërtetë,
Fytyra e saj shkëlqën si korë,

- Si reze ndrit që prur gjith jetë;
 Sikur mban qiellin, yjt' me dorë:
 20 E Búkura është e Dheut vetë!
 Të gjith' i faln shpirt e zemër
 Se shembëll, shoqe s'ka në botë,
 Nër Lulet Lule është më emër;
 Kushdó q'e sheh s'kuxon të thotë:
 25 Se nuk' është ëngjëll, por është femër!
 Lúani i fortë krejit zbutet
 Kur hijet i sheh dhe bukurinë;
 Dhe murgu shenjtit kur i lutet
 Shigjetë e përshkón të zinë:
 30 Si hyll prej qiellit kur çkuptet.
 Dhe mbreti qoft'a punëtori
 Për 'të shpesh zemra u reh të dyve;
 Fetari qoft'a vjershëtori
 U merret mendja, drita e syve:
 35 Demón, që gjyqin shpejt ta mori.

Note

E Búkura e Dheut 'the beautiful of the earth' mythological female figure, symbol of beauty.

1. *ka pikuar* 'has descended from above'. *pikón* 'it drops, drips'
5. *magji' e prallës* - *magjia e përrallës, pa treguar* = se patreguar 'unutterable': the article of the adjective is omitted
7. *të kaltërtut* (n.) - *kaltërsia* (f) 'blue'
8. *të verdhut* = *verdhësira* 'yellow'
11. *mburim* = *burim* 'spring, source'
12. *'saj* = *asáj, i unjet* = i ulet, perulet 'bows, leans'
13. *gjyrmë* - *gjurmë*.
15. *verbim* 'blindness, delusion'.
17. *korë* = *kore, konë* 'altar, icon'.
18. *reze* = *rreze*.
24. *s'kuxón* = *s'guxón* 'does not dare'
26. *krejt* = *krejtësisht*
29. *te zinë* (Acc) 'the poor, unhappy'.
30. *çkputet* = *shkëputet*
31. *qoft'a* = *ose, apo* 'or'.
35. *gjyqin* = *gjykimin* 'the understanding, intellect'.

Faik Konica (1875-1942)

Të përdóruarit e të dy dúarve (1905)

- 1 Më të shumën e punës e bëjmë me dorën e djathtë: penda, palla, drápëri etj. janë nën' urdhër të dorës së djathtë, dhe dora e mëngjerë s'ka tjetër dóbi përvéc të japë herë-herë një ndihmë të vogël.

- Për shumë veta, dora e mëngjerë — e dobëtuar nga të mos punuarit —
- 5 arrin të jetë një pjesë po thua e pa-nevojshme e trupit. Po kjo e ngjarë vjen nga zakoni: natyra nukë na shtrëngón të përdorim vetëm dorën e djathtë, ne duam e mësóhemi të rojmë pa sherbim të dorës së mëngjerë. Eshhtë themeluar n'Ingli një shoqëri, qëllimi i së cilës është të bëjë propagandë për të përdóruarit e të dy dúarve. Kjo shoqëri quhet:
- 10 *Ambidextral Culture Society* dhe punón pa pushim për të përhapur mendimet e saja. Disá ditë më parë, një mjek i njohur, *Sir James Sawyer*, foli botërisht (në degë të Londonit t'asáj shoqërie) përmí “të përdóruarit e të dy dúarve pas mendímeve të një mjeku”. Ja një shkurtim i atij përfjalimi:
- 15 *Sir James*-i tha se, në nisje, njeriu është i zoti të përdorë të dy dúartë; po këtë zotërim e humbét më tutje, më tepër nga të leftuarit dhe nga të shkruarit. Po sicilidó prej nesh munt t'a fitojë për-së-ri *dydjathësin*, domethënë fuqin për të përdorur lirisht të dy duart. Ndofta kurrë s'do t'arrijmë gjer sa të mos vijë më mbarë një dorë se tjátëra, po munt
- 20 t'arrijmë t'a mësojmë dorën e pa-pëlqyer gjer sa t'a përdorim aqë lirisht sa dorën e pëlqyer. Ç'duhet bërë për të mjaftuar këtë dëshirë? Duhet, thotë *Sir James Sawyer*, ató punë ku vetëm një dorë është e nevojshme, t'i bëjmë herë me të djathtën herë me të mëngjerën. Duke marë atë zakón, në pakë muaj do të mundim t'i përdorim të dy duart mjaft mirë,
- 25 në pakë vjet t'i përdorim fare mirë. Për t'arrijtur këtë funt, më e lehta mënyrë është të shkruajmë me dorën e mëngjerë ditë për ditë ca herë. Sikúr njeriu të mësohet të shkruaj lirisht me të dy duart, do të bëhet i zoti i dorës së mëngjerë për ç'do gjë tjátër. Po përvéc shkrimit, janë edhe udhë të tjera për të fituar *dydjathësin*: duke mbajtur shkopin,
- 30 umbrellën a dufekun me dorë të mëngjerë, duke nëmëruar të holla, duke mbajtur dorën në taskë të mëngjerë të jelekut, duke ngrënë, duke qepur etj. me atë dorë.
- Po ç'dobí të jetë njeriu i zoti të përdorë aqë lirisht dorën e mëngjerë sa të djathtën? Dobia është shumë e madhe, thotë *Sir James Sawyer*-i:
- 35 Për të çlodhur dorën e djathtë duke punuar ca me 'të, ca me të mëngjerën.

Note

Konica, the founder of Albanian journalism — especially through his articles in the newspaper “Albania” (1897-1908), is considered one of the most talented stylists in Albanian literature, characterized as well by a permanent irony, sometimes to the point of sarcasm. This posture is also noticeable in the foregoing selection in his commentary on a minor event in the chronicle of his time

3. *tjátër* = tjetër (pl. *tjerë*, with mutation).

4. *e dobëtuar* = e dobësuar ‘weakened’ (cf. the analogical parallelism *patur/pasur* ‘having had’); *të mos punuarit* (n.) = papunësia ‘the idleness, inactivity’.

5. *e ngjarë* = ngjarje ‘event’.

7. *të rojmë* = të rrojmë.

8. *Ingli* = Angli
9. *të përdôurrit* = përdorja 'the use, custom'.
12. *përmi* = përmbi.
14. *përfjalimi* = ligjëratë 'speech'.
16. *zotërim* = zotësi 'talent, mastery, ability'
16. *humbët* from *humbàs* 'lose': basic verb *humb* 'idem' (cf. \emptyset -class § 253, No. 3), *te leftuarit* = luftimi 'war, struggle'.
17. *siclidó* = gjithicili 'everyone' (cf. the indefimte pronouns, § 154).
18. *dydjathtësi* 'a loantranslation by K. from *ambidextrous*.
19. *gjer sa të mos vijë më mbarë* 'more advantageous for us' *më-të-t vjen mbarë* 'it is handy for me, advantageous for me' (impersonal verb)
- 20-21. *dora e pa pëlqyer* = dora e mëngjerë; *dora e pëlqyer* = dora e djathtë
30. *umbrellën a dufekun* = çadrën apo pushkën 'the umbrella or the rifle'
31. *taskë* = xhep.
32. *jelék* 'jacket'.
33. *ç'dobi* 'what is useful'.

Fan S. Noli (1880-1965)

Marshi i Krishtit (1943)

- 1 Hosanna, o çlironjës, Mesí, hosanna!
Shtroni udhën me lule, dafin' e hurma,
Brohoritni trumbeta, timpane, zurna,
Thirr e zbras, o gurmás: Hosanna, hosanna!
- 5 Kryetrim, që lëftón, triumfón për atdhë,
Shpëtimtár, kryemjék, kryeshnéjt, kryefë,
Pasuri, dhe liri, dhe fuqi ti na dhe,
Lum e lum, Galilé: Hosanna, hosanna!
O i biri i Davidit, i Miri Bari
- 10 Ti na prin dhe na rrit në luáth e vërrí,
Ti na ruan, na mpron, dhe për ne bëhesh fli,
O njerí-Perëndí: Hosanna, hosanna!
Përmi Dhé, përmi Fron, përmi qjell u-bekófsht,
Përmi djall dhe tirán, përmi Ferr mbretërofsh,
- 15 Me peán dhe tamján, dhe këmbán' u-këndófsht,
Drit' e gas, rrofsh e qofsh: Hosanna, hosanna!
O i fort' o i urt' o i ëmbël Jesús,
Plot me bes' e me shpresë të biem mi gju,
T'adhurojmë me zëmër këtë e tëhú,
- 20 Gjithëkúnt e pa funt: Hosanna, hosanna!
Hosanna, o çlironjës, Mesí, hosanna!
Shtroni udhën me lule, dafin' e hurma,
Brohoritni trumbeta, timpane, zurna,
Thirr e zbras, o gurmás: Hosanna, hosanna!

Note

The figure of Christ here, like that of Moses in the poem "Mosiu në mal", symbolizes the person of the poet in various roles: as bishop, politician and writer. In this way the liturgical epithets receive a new, profane semantic context.

Fjala e Rabinit

("Israilitë dhe Filistinë", 1907)

1

Kryerabin

Fol më kthjellët, zoti Rabin, njerëzia nuk të marrin vesh.

Rabin

Do t'ju them një përallë të vogël që e pashë me syt' e mi. E nëmëronj
5 për përallë, se s'është gjë për të besuar, po e besónj, se u bë më këtë
Botë.

Të gjithë

Eja, thúajna.

Rabin

10 Mbanj nër mënt se para 30 vjeç u bë një konferencë si kjo prapë për
këtë qëllim. Më kot u kundreshtuash dhe atëhere, se s'ish e para herë që
e pësonja po kush të dëgjón? Thanë e kuturisë, dhe për *belá* më
dërguan mua bashkë me të nxehin Aház. Vamë në krye-qytët të
Filistinëve, na pritnë me gaz e me mall, ftuan pópullë të gjithë në një
15 tempull të math tek ishin ngrehur madhështore statujat e Moloh-ut dhe
të Dashurisë (*Kupidón*). Në mest të atyre dy statujave ish një hedhër,
andëjaza do të flisnim. *Bota* gjithë ish mbledhur.

I pari desh të fliste Ahazi. U nis të hipënj maj hedhrës, po ç'goditi?
Me një copë heresh qëndrojt, një bujë doli nga krahëror' i statujes së
20 Moloh-ut, që i ndehu dorën Ahaz-it dyke thënë "merr' i këtót!" Dorën
Molohu e kish plot monedha të florinjta. Ahaz-i i habitur i merr, dhe
prapë u nis të hipënj maj hedhrës. Atëhere statuja e Dashurisë ngri
këmbën dhe trokiti maj trúallit. Dy vajza me bukuri të hýjeshme u
hothnë nga trúalli që u ça dhe i dúallë përpara Ahaz-it, e múarrë në
25 pëlqi që të dyja dhe e puthnin cladó nga njëra faqe dyke thënë: "Eja
hipë të na flaç!" Po tani me çdo çapë që bënte Ahaz-i që të hipënj,
statujë e Moloh-ut i çpinte grushte florinj, dhe statujë e Dashurisë nga dy
vajza më të búkura dhe me të púthura, më të ëmbëla. Kur hipi lart shtiri
sytë rrotull, iu múarë mëntë, ish trullorur. Gjithë bota bërtisnin: "Eja,
30 thúajna! Më së fundi do të nisnjë" thoshin ca të tjerë! Ahernaj Ahaz-i i
përqafoi gjith' ató vajza dyke thënë: "S'kam gjëkafshë për të thënë!
Jam Filistin'!"

Note

This drama was written by Noli in the earlier phase of his literary career. He later standardized his Albanian to a large extent, particularly in the liturgical texts and in his translations.

4. *nëmerónj* = *njeh*, *mbaj* 'reckon, consider'.
11. *kundreshtuash* = *kundërshtova* 'opposed, resisted' Aor I sg with *-sh* ending (cf. § 229, Notes)
12. *pësonja* = *pësoja* (Imperf.) 'underwent, incurred' (cf. *-nja* ending instead of *-ja* § 211, No.); *kuturisnë* (Aor.) = *guxuan* 'dared', *për belà* = *për rrezik* 'unfortunately'
14. *pritnë* (Aor.) = *pritën*, *pòpullë* = *popullin* *pòpullë* < *pòpullnë*, *math* = *madh* with devoicing in final position.
16. *hedhër* = *seli* 'seat': Gk. *ἔδρα*; *andëjaza* = *prej andëj* 'from there to here'
18. *po ç'goditi?* = *po ç'ndodhi?* 'well, what happened?'
19. *bujë* = *zhurmë* 'din, noise'.
20. *ndehu* 'stretched out': *ndeh*, *ndëj* 'stretch out, spread out, extend'
23. *maj* = *majë*, *maje*: prep. with Dat. equivalent to *në*, *mbi*
24. *dùallë* = *dolën*, *dùallë* < *duallnë*, Aor with elimination of *-n-* before *-ll-* (cf. § 229, No. 4), *mùarrë* = *morën* *mùarrë* < *muarne* with assimilation of *-m-* > *-r-*: *marr në pëlqi* = *marr për krahu*
25. *të flaç* < *të flatsh* (Pres Subj.): *të na flaç* 'so that you may tell us something'.
26. *çpinte* (Imperf.) = *shpinte*, Pres. *shpie*

Ernest Koliqi (1903-1975)

Gjo' Mala, muziktár i pagdhendun = Gjo' Mala,
Primitive (Unskilled) Musician

("Zámárja me gjashtë bira", 1936)

1 — Sa vjeç ásht? — *pýeta dashamirët dukagjinas qi më përcjellshin ndër ëndje të mija.*

Ai thotë se i ka kapërcye të njiqindat.

U ul plaku kundruell meje. Hapi qepallat, u përpóq disí të nxjerrë 5 jashtë kokerdhokët e sývet si kaçamilli atá të vett për të shikue... Lëkura e fytyrës dukej si e ëndun me fije bimore. Goja pa dhámbe kishte humbë vizatimin natyruer në nji shtrëmbënim vijash të holla të panjëhuna. Në at gojë vùni zámáren, mbasi e nxori nga xhepi i mitanit.

Gjo' Mala filloi me nji notë të naltë e të hollë në gjasim të nji 10 thirrjeje, së cilës i përgjegjen tinguj të shumllojshëm qi gufojshin herë pështjellúetas shllunga shllunga dhe herë qartas fjollë fjollë në nji shkëmbim të parreshtun valësh të gjána e valësh të ngushta. Muzikitari i pagdhëndun nuk dinte me zgjedhë nji themë melodike e m'e shtjellue në varjacjone a m'e dredhë në shëndërrime të ndryshme. Jona e tij s'kishte 15 as fillim as mbarim, as nuk kishte kurrfarë përpjestimi, ashtú si nuk kanë as kanga e prronit, as symfonija e pyllit, as cingrimi ngazelluer i zogjvet në të zbardhun të ditës.

Ajó lloj muzike (nësë mund të quhet muzikë) nuk më bëni përshtypje. Vargu monoton i tingujve të saj, gërshetue pa rend e pa vend, nisi me

20 m'a lodhun veshin. Ashtë duket së pari. Por dal-kadalë atò zâne qi ngjiten e zbresin, qi kumbojnë e shuhen, qi marrin hove të paprituna për t'u këputun në një dridhje të hollë e të zgjatun, ta depërtojnë shpirtin ...

Kur pushoi e gjúejta me shum pýetje:

25 Kush të ka mësue me i ra kaq mirë?

— Prej vedit, lum zotnija, tue rúejtë dhënt në vetmi.

— Me çfarë drújet e bane at zámare?

· I bájme me drú shtogut e ulzet.

Atëherë ia hodha edhe një pýetje shporuese:

30 — Ti dishká shef kur i bjen zámáres ...

· I kam sýt mbyllë, zotni; si mund të shof me sý të mbyllun?

-- Dishká shef me sý të shpirtit ... Shka shef? Thúejma.

— Hijet qi zbresin, zotni. Kurrjá tjetër veçsë hijet qi janë kah na mbulojnë mue edhe malet.

Note

Koliqi was a folk-poetry scholar, he also described, in literary style, singers and folk-instrument musicians, such as *Gjo'* (Gjon) *Mala* from Dukagjin a master of the *zamarja*, a kind of double-reed wind instrument or double flute. Linguistically, the terms and expressions in the descriptions of tones should be noted

2. *ëndje* = wanderings.

5. *e ëndun* (adj.) 'woven'.

7 *natyruer* 'natural': Geg adjectival form *natyruer* m. - *natyrore* f

8. *mitán* 'folk-costume jacket'.

10. *gufojshin* (Imperf.) alternates in literary Geg with *gufoshin* 'arose'.

11. *pëshjtjellúetas* = *pëshjtjelltas* 'in confusion': *pëshjtjelló* 'bring into confusion' *shtjelló* 'bring into order' (cf. v. 14).

14. *m'e dredhë* (infinitive) = 'turn, twist', *jona* 'the aria'

16-17 *cingrimi gazelluer* 'the joyful twittering'.

21. *marrin hov* 'gather speed, momentum'

24. *gjeje me pýetje* 'pose insistent questions'.

26. *prej vedit* 'by oneself (without another's help)'.

28. *drú shtogut e ulzet* (Abl. def.) 'of elder and maple wood'

30. *dishká shef* = *diçká sheh*: with substitution of *-h-* in final position and before voiceless consonants by *-f-* in Geg.

Migjeni (Millosh Gjegj Nikolla 1911-1938)

Kangët e pakëndúeme

Thelltë në veten teme flejnë kangët e pakëndúeme
të cilat endë vúejtja as gëzimi s'i nxori,
të cilat flejnë e presin një ditë má të lumnúeme
me shpërthye, m'u këndue pa frigë e pa zori.

Thelltë në veten teme kangët e mia jesin ...
e unë jam vullkani që fle i fashitun,

por kur t'i vijë dita të gjitha ka me i qitun
në njëmijë ngjyra të bukra që nuk vdesin.

Por a do të vijë dita kangët me u zgjue?
Apo ndoshta shekujt me ne prap po tallen?
Jo, jo! Se liria filloi me lulzue
dhe e ndej nga Dielli (alegorik) valën.

O kangët që fleni reliket e mija
q'ende s'keni prekun as një zemër të huej,
vetëm unë me ju po kënaqem si fëmija
unë -- djepi i juej; ndoshta vorr' i juej.

Note

Migjeni, one of the most successful poets of modern Albanian literature, was an innovator in Albanian poetry through his introduction of subjective human feelings (Cf. A Pipa, *Albanian Literature: Social Perspectives*, p. 132). This poem is taken from the collection, Migjeni, *Vepra* (Prishtina, 1980)

Jakov Xoxa (1923-1979)

Fjala e priftit të Trokthit = The Priest of Trokthi's Speech

Në kishë ra qetia. Edhé gratë, edhé pleqtë, sikur lëshuan veshë të tjerë për të dëgjuar priftin e Trokthit, i cili, për të kënduar e përrallitur, s'kishte shok ç'mban fusha në mes të lumenjve.

Perëndia, i paçim uratën, si bëri në pesë ditë tokën, diellin dhe yjet, dritën, ditën e natën, bimët, malet, kafshët e gjithë ç'na sheh e nuk na sheh syri, të gjashtën, si pa që këto të mira do të shkonin kot, ra në mendime të thella e më në fund i dha udhë të krijonte robin. Me të thënë e me të bërë, se s'është më kot perëndia perëndi, i paçim uratën! Dhe atjë tek rrinte, buzë lumi, duke krúajtur kokën si të fillonte e si të mbaronte me këtë xhiz të ri, që s'ia kishin zënë dora e syri ndonjëherë e që duhej të ishte i ndryshëm e fare tjetërsój nga kafshët e shpesët e shtërpintjë e mizat që pati jaratisur mbi dhë, vendosi ta gatúante sipás fytyrës së vet, që shikonte të pasqyrohej në faqen e ujit, as me dy këmbë e pa duar, si shpesët, as me katër këmbë si kafshët, as me veshë të gjatë si të gomarit, me nder nesh, as me veshë të vegjël si të miut, as me bisht të gjatë si të majmunit, as me dhëmbë të mëdhënj si të derrit, po njeri, si veten, me dy këmbë e me dy duar e me mend në kokë, që s'ia kishte dhënë gjer atëherë, jo nga harresa, po se nuk ia kishte dashur qejfi, asnjë krijese. U kërrús dhe mori nga bregu i lumit një dorë baltë, e gatoi sa e gatoi, e punoi sa e punoi sipás shëmbëlltyrës së vet e më në fund i fryu në hundë, dhe balta (o çudi e zotit) mori jetë, qëndroi më këmbë e iu fal krijuesit për gjithë atë botë drite e bukurish që i vuri përpara syve. Por, ndërsá robi mbeti i kënaqur nga krijësi, perëndisë s'iu bë qejfi hiç nga prodhimi i tij. Njeriu, që doli nga

këtò duar të urúara, ishte i zi, si djalli, dhe perëndia vari turinjtë nga pakënaqësia. Edhe njeriu lëshoi buzët, duke bërë ç'bënte krijësi i tij. Kur ngriti sytë i githfuqishmi, që ta shikonte dhe një herë përpara se ta ksebënte, mbeti edhe më i pakënaqur. Njeriut, si brumë akoma i palidhur e i papjekur mirë, i kishin mbetur buzët ashtú, të shpërvëshura e të várura, të trasha e të fryra si dy copa mishi të zier edhe mbasi perëndia i kishte shpënë në vend buzët e tij. Kjo e kishte bërë robin e tij më të shëmtuar, lëkura e trupit dhe e fytyrës skrop e zezë, sytë e bardhë, që dúkeshin si të zgurdulluar, buzët e trasha të shpërvëshura jashtë, për t'i bërë tavë, ndónëse dhëmbët e bardhë, dalë përpara, të kallnin datën. Nga inatí e mori prej veshi dhe e flaku jashtë nga qielli e përpósh në tokë. Njeriu i parë ra atjë, në atë vend ku sot i thonë Arabí, evgjitëri. Që mahere u shtua xhizi i evgjitëve.

Po perëndia, që s'i lë kurrë punët përgjysmë siç i lëmë ne, robt e tij, u ul prapë e mori një dorë dhë. Ishte djegur një herë, me prodhimin e parë, andáj shkoi te lumi dhe filloi ta lante baltën ...

Note

The text comes from the novel *Lumi i vdekur*, 6th edition, Tirana, 1977. Xoxa is one of the most prolific writers of socialist realism, with a rich language based on folk speech, as is evident here.

Adem Gajtani (1935-1981)

Fragmente nga kronika e qytetit tim = Fragments from the Chronicle of my City

Gishtat e kodrës së blertë
e thyen hanën pogaçe
e yjt djemt e zjarrtë t'diellit
u ulën me hangër darkë:
shëj se nata â shtri mbi qytët
e erdh pushimi i dëshiruem.

Korrtarët kthehen mbasi kanë shkundë
me staravicë të dorës mollat e djersës.

Buka

(janë mbushë hambarët e syve tanë me drithë)
gjaku i jetës â fitue!
Krypën e blejmë
dhe zemrat e gjana i kemi.
Miq, konaku asht i çelun për ju.
Tekembramja prora kemi me pasë
bukë e krypë e zemër!

Nuk e dij se ç'ka vu në krye kodra:

plis bore, apo plis reje?
Dhe qe — nji yll u lexón shókëve
nën hijen e këtij plisi, kronikën e qytetit tim.

Note

This fragment from a poem by the recently deceased author Adem Gajtani is taken from the collection *Panorame e letërsisë bashkëkohore shqipe në Jugosllavi* (Prishtina, 1965). The new poetry of the Kosovars enriches modern Albanian literature both linguistically and in terms of content by means of special characteristics originating in their own modern history, their folk tradition and their cultural contacts with other ethnic groups in their region.

GLOSSARY

Forms or variants printed in *italics* are those which have been accepted as norms by the framers of the current official language in Albania.

This glossary does not pretend to the status of a dictionary; many words have meanings additional to those listed here, particularly as used in special or idiomatic phrases, and the student who plans further work with Albanian should obtain a good dictionary as soon as possible.

A

- | | |
|--|--|
| <p>a interrogative particle
 a either, or
 afër prep. with Dat. near, by
 afërm-it, të (pl.) relatives
 afrój approach, come close
 agón it is dawning
 agrár-e agrarian
 ai (m.) he, it, that
 ajet (ëhet) it swells
 ajër-ajri air
 ajó (f.) she, it, that
 ajrós air, ventilate
 akademi-a academy -\emptyset
 akoma yet, more, still
 alkool-i alcohol -e
 Alpe-t the Alps
 ambël, i-e (i-e ëmbël) sweet
 ambël (ëmbël) mildly, sweetly
 ambëltore-ambëltorja (ëmbëltore)
 confectionery -\emptyset
 amë-a, e (e ëma) mother t'ama-t
 (t'ëma-t)
 amë-a (ëmë-a) queen bee -a
 amforë-a amphora -a
 amullt, i-e standing, stagnant
 amvisë-a housewife -a
 anas-e native, aboriginal
 andáj consequently, hence, therefore
 (cf. prandáj)
 andëj that way (cf. atëj)
 andërr-andrra (ëndërr-ëndrra) dream
 andrra (ëndrra)
 andërrój (ëndërrój) ~ shoh andërr
 dream (v.)
 anë-a area, side -a ~ -ë
 anglëz-i Englishman -ë
 Angli-a England
 anglisht English
 aní now, well, so then</p> | <p>anije-a ship -\emptyset
 ankím-i complaint, grievance -e
 ankohe-m complain
 ankój complain
 antikítët-i antiquity -e
 apó either, or
 ar-i gold
 arbërësh-e arbënësh-e Albanian
 árdhuna-t, të (të árdhura-t) (pl. f.)
 income, wages
 arë-a field arna ~ ara
 argjande-t (ergjënde-t) (pl. f.) silver
 jewellery
 arí-u (cf. arushë)
 arkë-a chest, box -a
 arkeologjik-e archaeological
 armatós arm
 armatosun, i-e (i-e armatosur) armed
 arsimór-e educational
 arsyë-arsýeja understanding, reason -\emptyset
 arsyëshëm, i e arsyëshme reasonable
 arsyetój reason, justify
 artë, i-e golden
 artikull-i article artikuj
 artist-i artist -ë ~ -a
 arushë-a ~ harushë-a bear, she-bear -a
 arrë-a walnut -a
 arrij arrive, reach, achieve
 as not
 as - as neither-nor
 asgjá (asgjë) nothing
 askúsh none, no one
 asnjánës-e neuter
 asnjeri no one
 asht-i bone eshtna (eshtra)
 ashtë-a beech-wood -a
 ashtë in that manner, thus
 ashtuqúejtun, i-e (i-e ashtuqúajtur)
 so-called
 askúnd nowhere</p> |
|--|--|

atá (m) they, those
 atdhetar-i patriot -ë
 atdhë-u fatherland
 atdhedashës-i patriot -Ø
 atëj there, on the other side, beyond
 atë-i father etën (etër), 1 jati the father
 atëherë then
 atjë there
 Atlantik-u Atlantic Ocean
 ató (f.) they, those
 atý there
 atý, ku there, where
 automobil-i automobile ~ -a
 avis ~ *avit* approach
 avull-i steam, vapor avuj

B

babë-a (m.) father -a
 bagëti-a domestic animals, cattle -Ø
 bāj (bëj) make, do
 bajrak-u flag -ë
 bajraktar-i tribal leader -ë
 baltë-a mud
 ballë-i forehead -Ø
 ballkón-i balcony -e
 banesë-a dwelling, house -a
 banój dwell, inhabit, live
 banór-i inhabitant -ë
 bār-i grass barna (bārera) medicine
 barakë-a barrack -a
 bardhësh-e whitish
 bardhë, i-e white
 bardhë-t, të the white
 bari-u herdsman -Ø ~ barij (barinj)
 bark-u stomach barqe
 barkas ~ bārkazi flat on one's stomach
 barkë-a boat -a
 barkëz-a small boat -a
 barnatar-i herbalist -ë
 barrë-a load -Ø
 bashkatdhetar-i compatriot -ë
 bashkë together
 bashkëlufëtär-i fellow combattant -ë
 bashkëpunim-i cooperation -e
 bashkim-i unity -e
 bashkój unite
 batis destroy, finish
 bé-ja oath -Ø
 beg-u ~ *bej-beu* bey beglerë ~ *bejlerë*
 bel-i waist -a
 belbëzój stutter
 benzinë-a gasoline
 berbër-i barber -ë
 berk-u diaphragm berqe
 besë-a oath, word of honor, faith
 besëlidhje-a alliance -Ø
 besim-i belief -e
 besnik-e faithful, loyal, honorable
 besnik-i-a (besnikëri-a) faithfulness,
 loyalty, honor -Ø
 besój believe
 bestytini-a superstition -Ø
 bestytës-e superstitious
 betim-i (cf. bé-ja)
 bërtas shout
 bibliotekë-a library -a
 bie bring
 bie fall, fall upon, get into
 bie ngusht get into difficulties
 bie, 1 play, 1 bie violinës play the
 violin
 bijë-a daughter -a
 bilë even
 bimë-a plant -Ø
 bimësi-a vegetation -Ø
 binjók ~ *binjak-u* twin -ë
 bir-i son bij
 birë-a hole -a
 bisedë-a conversation -a (cf. kuvënd-i)
 bisht-i tail, handle -a
 bishtatundës-i wagtail -Ø
 bjerr lose
 bjeshkë-a alps -ë
 blegë-a shepherdess -a
 blegëron bleats (sheep)
 blej buy
 bletë-a bee -Ø
 borë-a ~ *dëborë-a* snow -na (-ëra)
 botë-a world *bota* ~ *botë* (Geg botna)
 botëkuptim-i mentality, world-view -e
 botim-i publication -e
 botój publish
 hotore-botorja department of roads -Ø
 brë-u fir brej
 bredh run, hop
 breg-u coast, shore, hill brigje
 bregdetar-e coastal
 brej gnaw
 brekushe-t kind of wide trousers
 brenda within, inside (cf. mbrenda)
 breshën-i (breshër-breshri) hail
 brez-i belt -a
 brî-ni ~ *brî-u* (brî-ri) horn -na (-rë)
 brumbull-i drone, dung-beetle brumbu
 brumôs ~ brumój knead, form

brymë-a frost, hoar-frost
bubullón ~ *bumbullón* thunders
 buj ~ *bunj* spend the night
 bujár-e generous
 bujari-a generosity - \emptyset
 bujarisht generously
 bukë-a bread - \emptyset
 bukëpjekës-i baker - \emptyset
 bukur, i-e beautiful; e *Bukura e Dheut*
 the Beautiful of the Earth
 bukuri-a beauty - \emptyset
 bulón ~ *bulëzón* it buds, it sprouts
 bunón ~ *burón* it springs, it swells up
 burg-u prison burge
burgós ~ *burgój* arrest
 burréc-i little man -a
 burrë-i man, husband -a
 burrni-a (*burrëri-a*) manhood, valor - \emptyset
 buzë-a lip; margin - \emptyset

C

ca some (cf. *disá*)
 cak-u goal, limit caqe; caqe themelore
 points of the compass
 caktój determine
 caktuem-e, i-e (i-e *caktuar*) fixed
 appointed
 cekët, i-e shallow
 cicërrón twitters (bird)
 cilësi-a quality - \emptyset
 cili-cila which (m.-f.)
 cingërrón freezes strongly
 coftë, i-e dead (of animals)
 copa-copa in two, in pieces
 copë-a piece; unity -a
 cub-i robber -a
 cubni-a brigandage - \emptyset
 cung-u stump cungje
 curril-i jet of water -a

Ç

ç' cf. *çfarë*, *çka*
 çaj split
 çaj-i tea
 çakáll-i jackal *çakëj* ~ *çakáj*
 çaráp-i ~ *çaráp-i* sock -ë
 çarmatós disarm
 çashlje-a ~ *çëshlje-a* question, matter,
 case - \emptyset
 çdokúsh everyone
 çekán-i hammer -ë
 çelik-u steel çelique

çelnik-u steel
 çelnikós steel, temper
 çement-i ~ *çimento-ja* cement
 çerdhe-çerdhja nest - \emptyset
 çerék-u quarter -ë
 çfaq ~ *shfaq* reveal
 çfarë what
 çka (Geg *shka*) what
 çlidh untie
 çlodhem rest
 çmend drive mad
 çmoj value
 çohem get up
 çoj send
 çorbë-a soup -a
 çuet awake, alert
 çvesh cf. *zhvesh*

D

dac-i tomcat -a
 dal go out, come out
 dalje-a exit - \emptyset
 dallëndyshë-a ~ *dallëndyshe*-*dallën-*
dyshja swallow -a ~ - \emptyset
 dallój distinguish, discern, note
 dam-i (*dëm-i*) harm, damage -e
 damkós stamp, mark
 damtój (*dëmtój*) harm
 dardhë-a pear, pear tree -a
dasmë-a ~ *darsmë-a* wedding -a
 dash-i ram, bellwether desh
 dashuni-a (*dashuri-a*) love - \emptyset
 dashur-it, të pl. lovers, loved ones
 daulle-daujlja drum - \emptyset
 degë-a branch - \emptyset
 degëzój ramify
 dekór-i splendor, decor -e
 dele-delja sheep *dele* ~ *dhen*
 derdhet overflows
 derë-a door dyer
 deri (*gjer*) up to, until
 derisá (*gjersá*) until, as long as
 dervish-i dervish -a
 derr-i wild boar -a
 deshifrim-i decipherment -e
 det-i sea *dete* ~ *detna* (*detra*)
 detár-i seaman -ë
 detyrë-a duty, task -a
 dëbój expel
 dëfrëj amuse
dëgjój cf. *ndëgjój*
 dëmshpërblim-i indemnity -e

- dërgoj send
 dërrasë-a board -a
 dëshmitar-i witness -e
 dëshmój witness (v.)
 di know
 dibran-i native of Dibra -ë
 dicila — dicila someone, anyone
 diçkà ~ dishkà something
 diel-a, e Sunday të -a
 diell-i sun dijej
 diellor-e solar
 dies-i learned man, savant - \emptyset
 dijetar-i scholar, savant -ë
 dikáh to some place or other
 dikúr once, long ago
 dikúsh someone, anyone
 dimën-dimni (dimër-dimri) winter
 dimna (dimra)
 dimnoj (dimëroj) overwinter
 diplomat-i diplomat -ë
 diplomatik-e diplomatic
 dirgjem descend
 disá (ca) several, some
 disesi approximately as
 disí somehow
 diskutim-i discussion -e
 dita-ditës from day to day
 ditë-a day dit ~ ditë; ditë pushimi
 holiday
 ditën during the day
 djalë-i boy djem ~ djelm
 djathë-i cheese
 djathtë, i-e right; djathtas to the right
 dje yesterday
 djeg burn
 djelmëni-a (djemuri-a ~ djalëri-a) youth
 djeshëm, i/e djeshme of yesterday
 dobishëm, i/e dobishme useful,
 advantageous
 dordhanë (m. f.) generous
 dorë-a hand duer (duar)
 dorështrejtë avaricious
 dorëz-a handle, latch -a
 dorëzanë-i guarantor -ë
 dramë-a drama -a
 drapën-drapni (drapër-drapri) sickle
 drapinj (Geg drepën)
 dredh twist, turn
 dredhøj make a curve
 dredhun, i-e (i-e dredhur) curly,
 twisted
 drejtësi-a justice, righteousness - \emptyset
 drejtim-i orientation, direction -e
 dreq-i devil -ën (-ër)
 dridhem shiver
 dridhje-a shivering, throbbing - \emptyset
 dridhuna-t, të (të dridhura-t) pl.
 shivering
 dritë-a light -a
 dritëz-a small light -a
 drithë-i grain drithna (drithëra) kinds
 of grain
 drom-i road -e
 drù-drumi (dru-ri) wood druj (drunj ~
 drurë)
 dru-ja tree - \emptyset
 drue (druaj) fear
 dry-ni ~ dry-ni lock bolt -na
 due (dua) want
 duhán-i tobacco
 duhet, më I must, it is necessary for
 me
 duke particle for participle cf Geg
 tue
 duket, më it seems to me
 duqe-t (pl. m.) saddle-bags
 duresë-a patience -a
 durim-i patience -e
 durój be patient, endure
 Durrës-i (Albanian city)
 durrësák-u native of Durrës -ë
 dy two
 dyfish double
 dyfishøj double (v.)
 dyke cf. duke
 dyll-i wax
 dyllvësh-i earwax
 dymijë two thousand
 dyqind two hundred
 dysh-i the number two -a
 dyzët (Geg katërdhjetë ~ katërdhetë)
 forty

DH

- dhallë-i buttermilk
 dhamb-i (dhëmb-i) tooth -ë
 dhanë ~ dhanun, i-e (i-e dhënë) given
 dhe and
 dhë-u earth dhena (dhera) districts,
 lands
 dhemb, më it hurts me
 dhi-a nanny-goat - \emptyset
 dhimbet, më I feel sorry for
 dhimbje-a sorrow, grief - \emptyset
 dhjetë (Geg dhjetë) ten

dhjetór-1 December
 dhomë-a room -a
 dhuratë-a present -a

E

e and
 eci ~ ec ~ ecën walk, go
 edhë and, also, even
 egër, 1-e wild të egër (*egër*) m. të egra
 ëjte-ëjtja, e (e enjte-enjtja) Thursday
 të -
 ekonomi-a economy -
 Elbasán-1 (Albanian city)
 elbasanas-1 native of Elbasan -
 elemént-i element -e
 emën-emni (emër-emri) noun, name
 emna (emra)
 emërtim-i designation, denomination
 -e
 endë yet, still
 enë-a receptacle, vessel -
 erë-a wind; aroma, odor erna (érëra),
 1 vjen erë it stinks
 erret becomes dark
 et-1 ~ *etje-etja* thirst
 etnografik-e ethnographical
 ethe-t (pl. f.) fever
 ethet it is covered (cow)
 Evropë-a Europe
 evropián-i European -ë

Ë

ëmbëltore cf. ambëltore
 ërrtundë-a ~ ortundë-a clay pot -a

F

fabrikë-a factory -a
 fakultët-1 faculty -e
 falemendent thanks!
 falënderoj thank
 falje-a pardon, forgiveness -
 famë-a fame
 familje-a family -
 faqe-faqja face, side, cheek -
 faqekúq-e red-cheeked
 fare quite, very
 farkëtár-i smith -ë
 farkëtój forge
 farmaci-a pharmacy -
 farmák-u poison farmaq

farmakós poison
 farós ~ farój destroy, exterminate
 fatzi-u misfortune fatzéz-të
 fejesë-a engagement -a
 fejój affiance
 femnór-e (femëror-e) feminine
 fëmijë-a child -
 fierák-u native of Fier -ë
 figurë-a personalty -a
 fik-u fig fig
 fill-1 thread fije
 fillim-1 beginning -e
 fillój begin
 fillór-e elementary
 firmój sign
 fis-1 race, stock -e
 fisnik-e generous
 fitim-1 gain, profit -e
 fjalë-a word -
 fjali-a sentence, clause -
 flak throw
 flakë-a flame -
 flakëroj throw away
 flamur-1 flag flamuj
 flas speak
 fle ~ flë (Geg flëj) sleep
 flokbardhë-e white-haired
 flori-ni ~ *flori-u* gold-piece -j (-nj)
 flutur-a butterfly -a
 fluturim-1 flight -e
 fluturimthi in flight, quickly, on the
 wing
 fluturój fly
 folë-ja nest -
 fonde pl. funds
 forcë-a strenght -a
 formój shape, form
 fosil-1 fossil -e
 fqj-ni ~ *fqj-u* neighbor fqij ~ *fqinjë*
 frat-i friar fretën (fretër)
 frë-ni (fre-ri) bridle frëj (frerë)
 frigë-a ~ *frikë-a* fear, fright
frikësój ~ frigój threaten frighten
 fruth-i measles
 fryj blow
 fsháj sigh
 fshat village -ra
 fshatár-i peasant -ë
 fshatçe in the village manner
 fshesë-a broom -a
 fshehësi-a ~ *fshehtësi-a* secret -
 fshehtë, i-e hidden; fshehtas in a
 hidden manner

fshehur, i-e hidden; fshëhuras in a hidden manner
 fshij sweep
 ftohtë-it, të (Geg të ftohtë-it) cold
 ftue-ftoni (ftua-ftoi) quince ftoj (ftonj)
 fund-ı end, depth -e
 fundit, i-e last
 fundos ~ fundoj sink, send to the bottom
 fuqi-a force - \emptyset
 fuqishëm strong, powerful
 fushë-a field -a
 futbóll-i football -e
 futë-a black kerchief worn by mourners -a
 fyemje-a (fyerje-a) offence, insult - \emptyset
 fytyrë-a figure -a

G

gazetë-a newspaper -a
 gdhin it dawns
 gegë-a (m.) Geg - \emptyset
 gënjëj lie
 gërmim-i excavation
 gërshanë-a (gërshtë-a) scissors - \emptyset
 gërthás shout
 gërryëj scoop out, erode, scratch
 gëzim-i joy -e
 gllënjëkë-a gulp -a
 gogël-gogla ball gogla
 gojë-a mouth - \emptyset
 gotë-a glass -a
 gradë-a degree - \emptyset ~ -a
 gramatikë-a grammar -a
 grek-e greek
 Greqi-a Greece
 greqisht in Greek
 greqishte-greqishtja Greek
 grindje-a quarrel - \emptyset
 grish ~ gërshás invite
 grue-ja (grua-ja) woman gra
 grunore-grunorja wheatfield - \emptyset
 grup-i group -e
 gur-i stone -ë (Geg gurë-ı, pl. gur)
 gurishtë-a stone quarry, tales -a
 gusht-i August
 guxim-i courage, bravery
 guxoj dare, have courage

GJ

gjá-ja (gjë-ja) thing -na (-ra)
 gjá e gjázë (gjë e gjëzë) riddle
 cf. kashë e lashë

gjahtar-ı cf. gjuetar
 gjak-u blood; gjaqe blood vengeance
 gjalpë-i butter
 gjallë, i-e living
 gjallnesë-a life -a
 gjallnoj live
 gjanë, i-e (i-e gjerë) broad
 gjanosh-e broad-shouldered
 gjarpën-gjarpni (gjarpër-gjarpri) snake
 gjarpij (gjarpinj)
 gjarpnoj (gjarpëroj) wind in and out
 gjashtë six
 gjashtëdhjetë sixty
 gjatë, i-e long
 gjegjem reply; consent
 gjej find
 gjel-ı rooster -a
 gjelbër, i-e green
 gjelbërim-ı verdure -e
 gjellë-a meal - \emptyset
 gjendje-a condition, situation - \emptyset
 gjeograf-ı geographer -ë
 gjer cf. deri
 gjer tani until now
 gjerman-e German
 Gjermani-a Germany
 gjermanisht German
 gjesh cf. ngjesh
 gjetje-a find - \emptyset
 gjetun, i-e (t-e gjetur) found
 gjeth-ı leaf, foliage -e
 gjëkafshë something
 gjëmón ~ gjimón (moti) thunders (the weather)
 gjëndem cf. gjindem
 gjësendi something
 gjı-ni (gjı-rı) breast; gulf, bay
 gjına ~ gjıne (gjınj)
 gjı-u bay gjıje
 gjılpanë-a (gjılperë-a) needle -a
 gjımnáz-ı gymnasium -e
 gjindem ~ gjëndem find myself
 gjıni-të (gjıri-të) relatives
 gjıni-a (gjıri-a) relationship
 gjınkallë-a cıcada -a
 gjıthanshëm, i/e gjıthanshme many-sided
 gjıthçká ~ gjıthshka everything
 gjıthçmós cf. gjıthçka
 gjıthditën all day
 gjıthëcılı - gjıthëcıla each, every
 gjıthëküş every, all
 gjıthfarë all kinds
 gjıthkúnd everywhere

gjithmonë always
 gjithnjë always
 gjithsa^{herë} every time
 gjithsi ~ gjithsesi completely, exactly
 like
 gjog-u grey (or white) horse -a
 gjoja ostensibly, allegedly
 gju⁻ⁿⁱ (gju-ri) knee gjuj (gjunjë)
 gju^{ej} (gjuaj) hunt
 gju^{et}ar-i ~ gju^{ht}ar-i hunter -ë
 gjuhësi-a linguistics
 gjujas ~ gjuⁿjaz-i kneeling
 gjumosh-e sleepyhead
 gjurmë-a trace, track - \emptyset
 gjurmim-i research -e
 gjurmoj track, follow, pursue
 gjurmues-i researcher -e
 gjysagjël-i half-chicken -a
 gjysmë-a half -a

H

ha eat
 hamendun, i-e (i-e hamendur) thought-
 ful
 hanë-a (hënë-a) moon
 hanë-a, e (e hënë-a) Monday të -a
 hap-i step -a
 hapësi-a space - \emptyset
 hapësinë-a (hapësirë-a) infinity of
 space, universe - \emptyset
 hapët, i-e open
 hapun, i-e (i-e hapur) open
 hartim composition -e
 harxhit spend squander
 hedh ~ hjedh throw, launch
 hekurt, i-e iron
 hell-i spit, skewer, lance hej
 hem both ... and
 hep-i opening, split in a rock -e
 heq ~ hjek pull
 herdhe-t testicles cf. loqe-t
 heret ~ herët early
 herë-a time - \emptyset
 heroik-e heroic
 hershëm, i/e hershme early
 heshtoj be silent
 hi⁻ⁿⁱ (hi-ri) ashes
 hijeshëm, i/e hijeshme ~ i hieshëm:e
 hieshme handsome
 hipi ~ hyp ~ hip climb
 histori-a history - \emptyset
 historiän-i historian -ë
 historik-e historical

hithë-a nettle -a
 holla-t, të (pl. f.) money
 hollë, i-e thin, slight; discerning
 hollësi-a gift, talent, subtlety - \emptyset
 hollësi-a detail, particular hollësi ~
 hollësina (hollësira)
 hollój thin
 hotël-i hotel -e
 hù⁻ⁿⁱ (hu-ri) pole huj (hunj)
 huà^{-ja} loan, debt: jap huà I loan
 hudhër-hudhra ~ hudër-hudra garlic -a
 huej, i-e (i-e huaj) foreign
 huej (huaj), të pl. foreigners
 humb ~ humbàs lose
 humbôn sinks, slides
 hundë-a nose
 hung^rôn ~ hungërit howls (dog, wolf)
 hurdhë-a water-hole -a
 hurp-i gulp -a
 hy(j) (Geg hÿ) enter
 hyll-i (yll-i) star hyj (yjc) ~ hyjçz

I

idhët, i-e bitter
 ije-t (pl. f) loins
 ikⁱ ~ ik ~ ikën flee
 ilirish^{te}-ilirish^{tja} Illyrian
 im-ime my
 industri-a industry - \emptyset
 industrializim-i industrialization -e
 industrializoj industrialize
 institút-i institute -e
 interesim-i interest, concern -e
 Itali-a Italy

J

ja either, or
 jam I am
 janár-i January
 jap ~ ap give
 japonéz-e Japanese -ë
 jashtë pre. with Dat. outside
 jashtëm, i/e jashtme outer, external
 jatra^a-jatroi physician - \emptyset
 javë-a week - \emptyset
 jetë-a life -ë
 jetik-e old, essential, vital
 jetim-e poor
 jetój live
 jo not; jo vetëm not only
 jorgán-i quilt -a
 ju you (pl.)

juej (juaj) your (pl.)
jug-u south

K

kablllo-ja cable -Ø
kaciq-i kid -a
kaç-i weaver keç
kafë-ja ~ kafe-kafja coffee
kafshatë-a mouthful -a
kah ~ kaha whither, where
kah cf. nga
kakarís cackle (chicken)
kalá-ja castle -Ø cf. kështjellë-a
kalë-i horse kual ~ *kuaj*
kalim-i passage -e
kalimthi on the way, passing through
kalis temper, forge
kall-i ~ kallí-ni (kallí-ri) ear of grain
kallëz ~ kallij ~ kallinj
kallnór-i (Geg) cf. janár
kam have
kam ndërmënd intend
kambë-a (këmbë-a) foot -Ø
kamish-i pipe -a
kandet, më it pleases me
kandërr-kandrra insect kandrra
kangë (këngë) popullore folksong -Ø
kangëtar-i (këngëtar-i) singer -ë
kangëtare-kangëtarja (këngëtare-këngëtarja) female singer -Ø
kanún-i Albanian customary law -e
kap catch
kapërdij swallow
kapruell-kaprolli (kapruall-kaprolli)
roebuck kaprój
karafil-i carnation -a
karkaléc-i grasshopper -a
karrige-ja ~ karnkë-a chair *karrige* ~
karrika
kasáp-i butcher -ë
kasapçe in a butcher's manner
kat-i storey -e
katallán-i cyclops katalláj (katallanë)
katër four
katërdhjetë forty (cf. dyzét)
katrór-e square
katue-katoni ~ *katoi* (katua-katoi)
cellar; stable, stall katoje
katúnd-i village -e
katundár-i villager -ë
keq, i/e keqe evil të këqij (këqinj) m.,
të këqia f.

keqësój aggravate
keramikë-a ceramic -a
këhá hither, closer to me
këllás insert
këmbëj exchange
këndëj on this side, hither
këndim-i reading, singing -e
këpurdhë-a mushroom -a
këput ~ këpus pick, snap off
këqyr gaze
kërkesë-a request, demand -a
kërmill-i snail kërmij
kërthizë-a navel -a
këshillój advise
kështjellë-a fortress, castle -a
kështú in this manner
këtullë, i-e such as this
këtú here
kile-kiłja kilogram -Ø
kilogram-i kilogram -ë
kilometër-kilometri kilometer kilo-
metra
kínsë as though, pretended
klithmë-a cry, scream -a
klub-i club -e
kodër-kodra hill kodra
kohë-a time -Ø (Geg kohna)
kokë-a head -a
kokërr-kokrra grain kokrra
kokëtrashë-e blockhead
kolëgj-i college -e
koloni-a settlement, colony -Ø
kombëtar-e national
komënt-i comment -e
komision-i commission -e
konóp-i string, cord -ë
konstrukt-i construction -e
kontribút-i contribution -e
kopë-ja herd -Ø
kopsht-i garden kopshtij-e (kopshtin-
je ~ qipshte 'orchards') *kopshte*
koqe-koqja grain; pimple -Ø
korb-i raven -a
korçar-i native of Korça -ë
korçarçe in the Korça manner
Korçë-a (Albanian city)
korr reap
korra-t, të (pl. f.) crops, harvested
grain
korrik-u July
korrilë-a crane -a
kos-i yogurt
krah-u (Geg krah-i) arm, side, wing -ë

krahaqafë shouldered
 krahas parallel
 krahasim comparison -e
 krahasój compare
 krahinë-a district, area -a
 krahól-a bodice -a
 krap-i carp krepën (krepër)
 kravatë-a necktie -a
 krejt quite
 krenár proud
 krijim-i creation -e
 kripë-a ~ krypë-a salt
 kripore-kriporja salt-pit - \emptyset
 krismë-a roar -a
 kritikój criticise
 krue-kroni (krua-kroi) source kroje
 (kronje)
 krunde-t (pl. f.) bran
 krushk-u best man, wedding guest
 krushq
 krután-e native of Kruja -ë
 krye-kreu ~ krye-kreja head
 krena ~ krenë (krera ~ krerë) heads,
 tribal chiefs
 kryeinxhinër-i chief engineer -ë
 kryej complete
 kryem, i/e kryeme complete
 kryeministër-kryeministri prime minis-
 ter kryeministra
 kryeqendër-kryeqendra center - \emptyset
 kryeqytët-i capital -e
 kryer, i-e complete
 kryesekretár-i chief secretary -ë
 kryesisht mainly, essentially, prin-
 cipally
 kryesój lead, preside
 kryetár-i chairman -ë
 krypë-a (cf. kripë-a)
 kryq-i cross kryqe ~ kryqa
 kryqazi transversely
 kthej return, turn
 kthesë-a turn, curve, bend -a
 kthim-i return -e
 kthjell brighten
 kthjellój clarify
 ku where
 kudó everywhere
 kufi-ni (kufi-ri) border kufij (kufinj)
 kujdesem take care; seek
 kujtesë-a remembrance -a
 kujtim-i memory -e
 kujtój remind, remember, think
 kukull-a doll -a

kulác-i flatbread kuleç
 kulturë-a culture -a
 kullë-a anvil -a
 kullós pasture
 kunát-i brother-in-law kunetën (kunc-
 tër)
 kundër prep. with Dat. against
 kundërshtim-i conflict, contradiction,
 contrast -e
 kunorë-a (kuroër-a) wreath -a
 kunj-i ~ kuj-i wedge, peg -a
 kuptój understand
 kuq, i e kuqe red
 kuq-të, të the red
 kuqëlemët, i-e reddish
 kuqëlój blush, become reddish
 kur when
 kurdis repair, wind up
 kurdó each time
 kurdohere always
 kurm-i body -e
 kursë while
 kurthë-a trap -a
 kurrgjá (kurrjë) nothing
 kurrkund cf. askund
 kurrkúsh no one
 kusi-a kettle - \emptyset
 kush who
 kushdó someone, anyone, whoever
 kusht-i condition -e
 kushtój dedicate
 kushtuar, i-e dedicated
 kuvënd-i conversation; assembly -e
 kuvendój consult
 kuvertë-a deck -a
 kuzhinë-a kitchen -a
 kvintál-i quintal (200 lbs.)
 ky (m.) -- kjo (f.) this
 kym-i group -e

L

lâ (lë) leave, let, abandon
 lag moisten, wet
 lagje-lagja neighborhood - \emptyset
 laj wash
 lajm-i news -e
 lajmój ~ lajmërój inform
 lak-u trap, noose leqe
 lakën-lakna (lakër-lakra) cabbage
 lakna (lakra)
 lakim-i declension -e
 lakmi-a desire - \emptyset

lakó*j* decline, bend
 lakuriq-i bat -a
 lamë-i (lëmë-i) threshing-floor
 lamij ~ lamije (lëminj ~ lëmënj)
 lanë ~ lanun, i-e (i-e lënë) abandoned,
 left
 lang-u (lëng-u) juice, liquid langje
 (lëngje)
 langue-langoni (langua-langoi) hunting
 dog langó*j*
 larg prep. with Dat. far, far from
 larg far away
 largësi-a distance - \emptyset
 largët, i-e distant
 lartë, i-e high; lart above
 lashta-t, të (pl. f.) grain (when on the
 stalk)
 lashtë, i-e ancient, antique
 lashtësi-a antiquity - \emptyset
 latinishte-latinishtja Latin
 legjendë-a legend -a
 leh bark
 lehtë, i-e light, easy
 lej cf. lind
 lejuëshëm, i/e lejuëshme permitted
 lepur-i hare lepuj
 leqe-t e kambës calves of the legs
 lesh-i wool
 leshtë, i-e woollen
 leshtëk-e woollen
 letër-letra letter letra
 letërshkëmbim-i correspondence -e
 letrár-i ~ letrór-i literary man -ë
 lëbardhet becomes whitish
 lëkurë-a pelt -a
 lëkurtár-i furrier -ë
 lëngim-i typhus
 lëpis-e (lëpirë-e) (boot-)licking
 lëshó*j* leave
 lëviz move
 lí-a smallpox
 librár-i book dealer -ë
 librari-a bookshop - \emptyset
 lidh tie
 lidhje-lidhja union - \emptyset
 lidhun, i-e (i-e lidhur) bound
 lig, i/e ligë bad, evil; thin; sick; weak
 të ligj (m.), të liga (f.)
 ligëshiti-a cowardice, weakness - \emptyset
 ligj-i law -ë
 ligjdhënësi (ligjdhënësi) lawgiver - \emptyset
 lind be born
 lindje-a east; rising - \emptyset

liri-a freedom - \emptyset
 lis-i tree, oak -a
 livádh-i meadow -e
 lodhun, i-e (i-e lodhur) tired
 lojë-a game lojna (lójëra)
 lokál-e local
 lopár-i cow-boy -ë
 lot-i tear -ë
 luán-i lion *luanë* ~ luaj
 luej (luaj) play; move
 luftár-i ~ *luftëtár-i* warrior, soldier -ë
 luftë-a war -a
 luftó*j* combat
 lug-u trough lugje
 lugát-i ghost lugët
 lugë-a spoon - \emptyset
 luginë-a valley -a
 luks-i luxury -e
 lule-lulja flower - \emptyset
 lulón ~ lulëzón blooms
 lumë-i river lumëj (lumënj)
 lumnó*j* glorify
 lumtun, i-e (i-e lumtur) happy, lucky
 lundrim-i navigation -e
 lundró*j* navigate, sail
 lutje-a prayer, request, petition - \emptyset
 lyej smear
 lyp demand, beg
 lypet ~ lipset it must
 lyrë-a cooking fat
 lyrós grease

LL

llogari-a account, calculation - \emptyset
 llogaris ~ llogarit calculate, count
 lloj-lloj any kind

M

mâ (më) particle for comparative and
 superlative; mâ andëj (më tutje)
 furthest
 mace-macja cat - \emptyset (Geg micë-a pl. -a)
 madh, i/e madhe large të mëdhëj
 (mëdhënj) m. të mëdhá f.
 madhështór-e proud, majestic
 magjik-e magic
 maj-i May
 maje ~ majë prep. with Dat. over,
 above
 maje-a ~ *majë-a* point, peak maje ~
maja
 majtë, i-e left; majtas to the left

- makinë-a car, machine -a
 mal-1 mountain -e
 malësi-a mountains -Ø
 mall-1 nostalgia
 mall-i wares, goods mallna (mallra)
 mallkim-1 curse, malediction -e
 mars-i March
 martesë-a marriage -a
 martë-a, e Tuesday të -a
 martoj marry
 marr take
 marrë, i-e imbecile, stupid
 mashkullor-e masculine
 mat ~ mas measure
 matanë ~ më atë anë beyond
 material-i material -e
 mazë-a cream
 mbaj keep, maintain, hold, sustain
 mbar carry
 mbarë all together
 mbarë, i-e good, favorable
 mbarë-a, e favorable issue të -a
 mbaroj finish
 mbarset becomes pregnant
 mbas (pas) prep. with Dat. after,
 behind
 mbasdreke cf. pasdreke
 mbasnesër (pasnesër) day after to-
 morrow
 mbath put on (shoes, socks), shoe (a
 horse)
 mbes remain
 mbesë-a niece -a
 mbërrij arrive, reach
 mbërritje-a arrival, coming -Ø
 mbi prep. with Acc. on, about
 mbiemën-mbiemni adjective mbiemna
 mbikëqyr ~ mbikqyr watch, oversee
 mbikëqyrës-i custodian -Ø
 mbin rises (seed)
 mbishkrim-i epigraph, inscription -e
 mbishkrimor-e epigraphic
 mbjell sow
 mbledh collect; add
 mbledhje-a meeting; addition -Ø
 mbramë, i-e last
 mbramë (mbrëmë) last night, last
 evening
 mbramje-a (mbrëmje-a) evening -Ø
 mbramjet (mbrëmanet) in the evening
 mbrapa ~ prapa prep. with Dat. behind,
 afterward
 mbrej (Geg brej) yoke
- mbrenda (brenda) prep. with Dat. in-
 side, within
 mbret-1 king mbretën (mbretër)
 mbrëmanet cf. mbramjet
 mbroj ~ mproj defend, protect
 mbroje-a ~ mbrojtje-a protection -Ø
 mbulesë-a cover, layer, stratum -e
 mbuluj cover, conceal
 mbushun, i-e (i-e mbushur) full
 mbyll shut
 mbyl ~ mbyls kill
 mbytem drown
 me prep. with Acc. with, together
 with
 megjithatë despite
 megjithëse although
 mekanizëm-mekanizmi mechanism
 mekanizma
 mekanizoj mechanize
 mel-1 millet
 mendimtar-1 thinker -ë
 mendoj think
 menjëherë suddenly
 mes prep with Dat. among, between
 mesatar-e middle
 mesatarisht average
 Mesdhë-u Mediterranean
 mesjetar-e medieval
 mesjetë-a middle ages
 mesnatë-a ~ mjesnatë-a midnight -a
 metër-metri meter metra
 mëmëdhë-u motherland
 mëngjës-1 morning -e
 mënij hate, detest
 mënyrë-a manner, way -a
 mënjatë on the one hand
 mërdhas be cold
 mërkurë-a, e Wednesday të -a
 mësim-1 lesson -e
 mësoj teach; learn (cf. Geg nxã)
 mësues-1 teacher -Ø
 mësyj raid
 mëzat-1 bull mëzetën (mëzetër)
 mi-u mouse mij (minj)
 micë-a (macje-a) cat -a (-Ø)
 miell-i flour miellna (miellëra) kinds
 of flour
 mija (mijëra) thousands
 mik-u friend miq
 milje-a mile -Ø
 ministër-ministri minister ministra
 minus-1 minus -e
 minút-1 minute -a

miqësi-a amity, friendship - \emptyset
 miratój approve
 mirë, i-e good
 mirëpó anyhow, however, nevertheless
 mirëqenie-a prosperity - \emptyset
 mirësi-a goodness, kindness - \emptyset
 misër-misri corn, maize
 misiön-i mission -e
 mish-i meat mishna (mishëra) kinds of meat
 mitologji-a mythology - \emptyset
 mizë-a fly -a
 mjaft enough, quite
 mjaftón suffices
 mjegull-a fog -a
 mjek-u physician -ë
 mjekër-mjekra beard mjekra
 mjekësi-a medicine - \emptyset
 mjekój heal, treat
 mjaltë-i honey
 mjerim-i poverty, misery -e
 mjerisht unfortunately
 mjesá while
 mjesditë-a noon, midday -a
 mjeshtër-mjeshtri master mjeshtra
 mjeshtri-a ~ *mjeshhtëri-a* mastership - \emptyset
 mllef-i rage, anger-e
 moh-u ~ mohi-i negation, refusal, denial -e
 mohim-i denial -e
 mohój deny, refuse
 moj epithet used in calling women or girls
 mollakuqe-mollakuqja lady-bug
 mollë-a apple molla ~ *mollë*
 mollëz-a cheek -a
 monumént-i monument -e
 moré epithet used in calling mens
 mori-a quantity, crowd
 mosmarrveshje-a ~ mosmarrëveshje-a misunderstanding - \emptyset
 mosnjeri no one
 mot-i year, time, weather -e
 moták-u yearling -ë
 motër-motra sister -a; e motra the sister pl. të motrat
 motit in olden times
 motmót full year
 motohem become old
 motór-i motor -a
 mposht repress, subjugate, vanquish
mpreh (Geg *preh*) sharpen

mprehtë, i-e sharp; keen
 muej-i (muaj-i) month - \emptyset
 mulli-ni (mulli-ri) mill -j (-nj)
 mund can
 mundun, i-e (i-e mundur) possible
 mur-i wall -e
 murgjâr-i grey horse -ë
 murmurój whisper
 murój immune
 musták-u moustache *mustakë* ~ *musteqe*
muzë-u ~ muzeum-i museum - \emptyset ~ -e
 mvesh ~ *mëvësh* put on clothes; make responsible

N

na cf. ne
 naltë, i-e (i-e lartë) high
 naltësi-a (lartësi-a) height - \emptyset
 nam cf. nem
 nandë (nëndë ~ nëntë) nine
 nandëdhjetë (nëntëdhjetë) ninety
 nandór-i (nëntór-i) November
 nanë-a (nënë-a) mother -a
 natë-a night net, def. netët
 natyrë-a nature -a
 natyrisht naturally
 ndahem separate; depart
 ndaj divide
 ndal halt, stop
 ndalesë-a stop, halt -a
 ndalim-i stopping
 ndalój stop, delay, impede
 ndërë-i ~ *nder-i* honor
 nderim-i respect -e
 nderój respect
 ndershëm, i/e ndershme honorable
 nderuar, i-e honorable
 ndëgjój ~ ndigjój ~ *dëgjój* hear
 ndër prep. with Acc. among, between
 ndërhyj intervene
 ndërmjemë, i/e ndërmjeme middle
 ndërmjet among, between
 ndërprerje-a interruption - \emptyset
 ndërrój change
 ndërsá while
 ndërtój build
 ndërzehet copulates (sheep)
 ndiej feel
 ndieshëm, i/e ndieshme sensitive
 ndihmës-i helper - \emptyset
 ndihmój help

ndo either, or
 ndodh happens
 ndokush anyone
 ndonëse even if
 ndonjeni ndonjena (ndonjëri — ndon-
 jëra) anyone, someone
 ndonjëherë sometimes
 ndotje-a pollution - \emptyset
 ndrikull-a godmother -a
 ndris ~ *ndrit* illuminate
 ndrymë, i/e ndryme locked
 ndryshëm, i/e ndryshme different,
 various
 ndryshim-i difference, change -e
 ndryshket rusts
ndulket ~ *ndujket* ripens in storage
 (for fruit)
 ndyj soil
ne ~ *na* we, us
 nem (nëm) curse, damn
 nesër tomorrow
 nesërm, i/e nesërme of tomorrow
 neshtrashë-a destiny, omen -a
 në prep. with Acc. in, on, at
 në qoftë se in case
 nën prep. with Acc. under, below
 nënçmój undervalue
 nënkrejçë-a pillow -a
 nënshtetas-i citizen - \emptyset
 nëpër prep. with Acc. through
 nëpunës-i official, employee - \emptyset
 nësá while
 nësë if
 nga prep. with Nom. from
 nga që because
 nga se because
 ngahera sometimes
 ngarkój load, charge
 ngranë-t, të (të ngrënë-t) n. food
 ngre lift
 ngreh build, erect
 ngrin freezes
 ngroh warm, heat
 ngryset becomes night
 ngurrój ~ *ngurr* let solidify, hesitate
 ngushtuem-e, i-e (i-e ngushtuar) reduced
 ngjalë-a eel -a
 ngjan happens
 ngjarje-a event - \emptyset
 ngjesh knead, press; gird
 ngjitem ascend
 ngjyrë-a color -a
 ngjyrós dye

nip-i nephew, grandson -a
 nisem travel, start
 not-i swimming
 nuse-nusja bride, young woman - \emptyset
 nxá (nxë) learn
 nxanës-i (nxënës-i) pupil - \emptyset
 nxehtë-it, të warmth
 nxjerr extract
 nye-neni ~ *nýje-a* knot, joint; legal
 article - \emptyset
 nynyroj complain in whispers

NJ

nja several, approximately
 njeh count
 njelmët, i-e salty
 njeni (njëri) — njena (njera) one (m - f)
 njerëzi-a people, humanity
 njeri-u person, man njerëz
 njëherë once
 një (Geg *nji*) one
 njëjtë, i-e the same
 njëllój equally
 njëllajtë, i-e same, identical
 njëmbëdhjetë eleven
 njëmijë ~ një mijë (Geg *njmyjë*, Arbë-
 resh *njëmily*) one thousand
 një miliard one billion
 njëmilión one million
 një-ni (një-ri) the one
 njëqind (Geg *njiqind*) one hundred
 njësi-a unity - \emptyset
 njësh-i the number one
 njëzët (Geg *njizët*) twenty
nji cf. një
 njësh-i cf. njësh-i
 njoftój inform, make known
 njoh know
 njohur-it, të (pl. m.) acquaintances
 njomet becomes green

O

o cf. ose
 objektiv-e objective
 obórr-i courtyard; farm
 observatór-i observatory -a ~ -e
 observatór-i observer -ë
 orë-a hour - \emptyset
 Orë-a guardian spirit, good fairy
 destiny
 organizój organize
 oriz-i rice

orizore-orizorja ricefield -Ø
 orvatje-a effort, endeavor -Ø
 ose either, or

P

pa prep. with Acc. without
 paanë, 1-e infinite
 pabotuem-e, 1-e (1-e pabotuar) unpub-
 lished
 padyshim undoubtedly
 pafát, 1-e luckless
 pafúnd, 1-e endless, immeasurable
 paguej (paguaj) pay
 pak little; mǎ (më) pak less
 pakësój lessen
 pakëz a little
 pakripë, 1-e saltless, tasteless
 pakujdesi-a carelessness -Ø
palój ~ *palós* fold
 pallto-ja coat -Ø
 panjoftun, 1-e ~ 1-e panjohun (1-e panjo-
 hur) unknown
 papunë, 1-e unemployed
paqe-paqja ~ *pagjë*-a peace
 para ~ përpara prep. with Dat. before,
 in front of
 paradë-a parade -a
 parapamës-i see -Ø
 parashikim-i prediction, prognosis -e
 paravithë-paravithja saddle-cloth -Ø
 parë, 1-e first
 park-u park *parke* ~ *parqe*
 parmendë-a team of oxen -a
 parzëm-parzma breast parzma
 pas prep. with Dat. after (cf. mbas)
pasdreke ~ *mbasdreke* afternoon
 pasi-a visit -Ø
 paskáj, 1-e endless
 pasnesër cf. mbasnesër
 pastër, 1-e clean
 pastërti-a cleanliness
 pasun, 1-e (1-e pasur) rich
 patë-a goose -a
 pashëm, 1'e pashme attractive
 pashók, 1 cf. pashóq
 pashóq, 1'e pashoqe unrivaled të pa-
 shokë m. të pashoqe f.
 pë-ni (pe-ni) thread *pej* (penj) ~ *pëj*
 pedagogjik-e pedagogical
 pelë-a mare -a
 pendohem regret, repent
 pengój hinder

pensionist-1 pensioner -ë
 Perëndi-a God
 perëndim-1 west
 periudhë-a period -a
 pesë five
 pesëdhjetë fifty
 pesëqind five hundred
 petë-a layer, pastry dough leaf -Ø
 petk-u dress -a
 petrit-i falcon -a
 pëgáj (pëgëj) stain
 pëlqën, më it pleases me, I like
 pëllambë-a (pëllëmbë-a) span -Ø
 pëllët (lopa) lows (the cow)
 për prep. with Acc. for, about, through
 përbáj (përbëj) constitute, form
 përbált soil
 përbállë prep. with Dat. opposite, in
 the face of
 përbashkët, 1-e common, joint
 përbërë, 1-e (Geg 1-e përbamë-e) put
 together
 përbúj let spend the night
 përcaktój define
 përciptë, 1-e superficial
 përcáj hack, mince, cut through
 përdór use
 përdorim-1 use, utilization -e
 përdorój use
përgatit ~ *pregatis* prepare
përgatitje-a ~ *pregatitje-a* preparation -Ø
 përgjak bloody
 përgjithësisht in general
 përgjumët, 1-e sleepy
 përháp expand
 përhershëm, 1/e përhershme constant
 përyashta from outside
 përyashtój exclude, exempt, expel
 përkás touch
 përkët, më it belongs to me
 përkój put together, correspond, be
 congruent
 përkrahje-a support -Ø
 përkrye prep. with Gen. over, along
 përkthëj translate
 përkujtim-1 commemoration -e
 përmallshëm, 1'e përmallshme tender
 përmbytje-a content -Ø
 përmblëdh reduce, draw together,
 concentrate
 përpara in front of, before
 përparój advance, proceed
 përpëq-1 omelet -a

përpjekje-a effort, attempt - \emptyset
 përpjetë up, upward
 përsëris ~ *përsërit* repeat
 përsôs perfect
 përshtëndës great
 përskrim-i description -e
 përskruaj (përskruaj) describe
 përtëj thither, that way, beyond
 përuł lower
 përuřim-i consecration, opening -e
 përrue-përroni (përrua-përroi) brook
 përrroje (përronje)
 pëshpëris whisper
 pihem become drunk
 pije-a drink, beverage - \emptyset
 pijetore-pietorja bar, pub - \emptyset
 pik drip
 pikë-a drop; apoplexy - \emptyset
 pikërisht just, precisely
 pikëpamje-a view, viewpoint - \emptyset
 pikoj spray; lick
 pipëtiť be silent
 pishinë-a swimming pool -a
 pjek bake
 pjekun, i-e (i-e pjekur) ripe
 pjesë-a part - \emptyset
 pjesëmarrës-i participant - \emptyset
 pjesëtim-i division -e
 pjesëtój divide
 plačkë-a thing, goods; plunder, pillage
 -a
 plagë-a wound - \emptyset
 plagój wound
 plagôs wound
 plak-u old man; elder (in Kanun)
 pleq
 pleh-u ~ pleh-i garbage plehna (plehra)
 pleqëri-a old age - \emptyset
 pleqërisht in the manner of old people
 pleqni-a council of elders (cf. Kanun) - \emptyset
 pleqnój advise, judge, assess
 plesht-i flea -a
 plot full
 pluhun-pluhni ~ pluhën-pluhni (pluhur-
 i) dust
 plus-i plus -e
 po yes, but; intensive particle; particle
 for progressive verbal forms
 poç-i pot -a
 poçar-i potter -ë
 poet-i poet *poetë* (Geg poetën)
 pohój assent
 politik-e political

politikisht politically
 popull-i people popuj
 pop-i Orthodox priest -a
 popullój populate
 popullor-e folk
 popullsia-a population - \emptyset
 por, po but
 porosit ~ porosis recommend, arrange
 porsá as soon as
 porsia as
 portofol-i wallet -a
 pos prep. with Dat except, apart from
 posi as, like; certainly
 poshtë below, beneath
 poshtnoj (poshtëroj) lower, humiliate
 pra therefore, hence, thus, so
 pranaj ~ prandëj therefore
 pranë prep. with Dat near, by
 praga-t (pl. f.) handcuffs, fetters
 pranverë-a spring -a
 prapa behind, after (cf. mbrapa)
 prapashtesë-a suffix -a
 prapë again
 prapëseprapë ~ prapseprap although,
 despite
 prapój throw back
 prë-ja booty, loot - \emptyset
 prej prep with Abl from (cf. nga)
 prej cut
 prejardhje-a origin - \emptyset
 prek touch
 premë, i-e cut (Geg e preme)
 premtë-premtja, e (Geg e prendë-prend-
 ja) Friday të -e
 prerë, i-e cut; irrevocable, peremptory
 pres wait
 presë-a comma -a
 prift-i priest priftën (priftër ~ priftërinj)
 prij lead
 prill-i April
 prime-t (pl. f.) folk medicine
 prind-i parent prindë (prindër)
 priqe-t (pl. f.) joint inflammation
 proces-i process -e
 prodhim-i production -e
 pronár-i (land) owner -ë
 pronë-a property -a
 prore cf. gjithmonë
 provincë-a province - \emptyset
 prozë-a prose -a
 prush-i glow
 pse why, because
 pulë-a hen -a

pulláz-ı house-top -e
 punē-a work, business, thing -∅
 punēdashēs-i work-lover -∅
 punēdhanēs-i (punēdhēnēs-i) employer
 -∅
 punētór-e laborious, active worker
 punētór-i worker -ē
 punētore-punētorja female worker -∅
 punētori-a working class -∅
 punim-i work, study -e
 punój work
 punonjēs-e workman
 pupël-pupla feather pupla
 purri-nı leak purrij (purrinj)
 pus-i spring, well -a
 pushim-ı pause -e
 pushkē-a rifle -∅
 pushój rest
 pyes ask
 pÿetje-pÿetja question -∅
 pyll-ı forest pyje

Q

qafē-a throat, neck -a
 qafëgjatē-e long-necked
 qaj weep
 qe look!
 qen-ı dog *qenē* ~ qej (qenj)
 qengj-ı lamb -a
 qep sew
qeramikē-a ~ *keramikē-a* ceramic -a
 qershı-a cherry cherry tree -∅
 qershór-ı June
 qes put out, take out, remove
 qesh laugh
 qetēsı-a silence -∅
 qē which, that
 qē tē that, in order that
 qëllim-ı intention, aim, goal -e
 qëndrim-ı staying, behavior, attitude -e
 qëndrój stand firm, hold; sojourn, re-
 main
 qëruem-e, ı-e cleaned, cleansed
 qında (qindra) hundreds
 qindresē-a resistance -a
 qindrój (Geg) resist
 qıparis cypress -a
 qoftëlarg-u devil (epithet)
 qoshe-qoshja corner -∅
 quej (quaj) call, name
 qumēsht-ı milk
 qumēshtore-qumēshtorja dairy -∅

qysh how
 qysh since
 qytét-i city -e
 qytetar-ı city dweller -ē

R

rádio-ja radio -∅
 radhē-a row, line, rank, series -∅
 radhas ~ rādhazi consecutively
 randē, ı-e (ı-e rëndē) heavy
 ranē-a (rërē-a) sand
 ranishtē-a sand-pit, beach -e
 rang-u rank rangje
 rapsodi-a rhapsody -∅
 rast-i occasion -e
 rastësisht by chance
 ratē lying
 re-ja cloud -∅
 realitët-i reality -e
 reklamē-a advertisement -a
 reklamój advertise
 resh rain, fine snow falls
 revistē-a journal -a
 ri, ı, e re new të rij (rij) m. të reja f
 rigón drizzles
 rihet becomes damp
 rishtas recently
 ritëm-ritmı rhythm -e
 rjep (Geg rep) flay
 roga-roga like a stain
 rogē-a plot, stain -a
 roje-a watchman -∅
 rúejtun, ı-e (ı-e rúajtur) preserved

RR

rrafshnaltē-a highland -e
 rrah'rreh beat, pound
 rrajē-a ~ rranjē-a (*rrënjē-a*) root -∅
 rrallē, ı-e rare
 Rranxa-t (place name)
 rrebësh-ı catastrophe, cloudburst -e
 rregull-a rule -a
 rregulisht regularly
 rregullt, ı-e regular, uniform
 rrēj ~ rrej he
 rreng-u wrong, evil, malicious deed
 rrengje
 rresht-ı row, rank, line, series -a
 rreth prep. with Dat around, about
 rreth-ı circle rrathē
 rreth-ı district -e
 rrezik-u danger rreziqe

rrëfëj tell
 rrëmbëj carry off, snatch
 rrëmbÿeshëm, i:e rrëmbÿeshme stormy
 rrënó j destroy
 rrëshiq-i goatskin bottle rrëshekë
 rri sit, stay, remain
 rrit-em grow
 rrjedh flow
 rrobaqepës-i tailor -Ø
 rroj (Geg rroj) live
 rrotull-a circle, disc -a
 rrotull-rrotull all around
 rruej (rruaj) shave
 rrufë-ja ~ rrëfë-ja thunderbolt, lightning
 rrufë-a flu -a
 rrugë-a street -Ø
 rrush-i grape

S

s' not cf. nuk
 sa how much; as, how
 sadó even if
 sajdi-a respect -Ø
 sajdis respect
 saktësi-a accuracy -Ø
 sanë-a hay -a
 sará j-i castle, palace; court of justice -e
 sarkofág-u sarcophagus -ë
 sasi-a quantity -Ø
 sati-a, i-e what, which (for numbers
 or quantities)
 se that
 secili secila every, each
 sejcili sejcila cf. secili
 sejti-a, i-e from which, what material
 sekónd-i second -a
 sekretár-i secretary -ë
 sendegjã something
 send-i matter -e
 sepsë because
 sesión-i session -e
 sëmuhem (sëmurë) become sick
 sëmundje-a (sëmurje-a) illness -Ø
 sëmunë, i-e sick
 sëmurë, i-e sick
 sëmunem cf. sëmuhem
 s1 as, how
 siç as, like
 sidó anyhow, anyway
 sikúr if; how, as
 sikursë as, like
 sintaksë-a syntax -a
 sipërfaqe-sipërfaqja surface -Ø

sipërm, i e sipërme upper
 sitë-a sieve -a
 situatë-a situation -a
 sivjët this year
 sixhim-i rope -a
 sjap-i (cjap-i) billy-goat sjep (cjep)
 sjell turn
 sjell bring,
 sjellshëm, i e sjellshme polite
 sjetull-a armpit -a
 ski-të (pl m.) skis
 skuqet becomes red
 sos finish, reach, achieve, complete
 sot today
 sotëm, i e sotme of today
 spanó-spanoi beardless -Ø
 spango-spangoja string -Ø
 spatë-a axe -a
 spec-i pepper -a
 spirancë-a anchor -a
 sport-i sport -e
 stacion-i station -e
 stërgjÿsh-i great-grandfather -a
 stërkëq worsen
 stërpjék overbake, burn
 stërhóm repeat
 stof-i cloth stofna ~ stofa
 studim-i study -e
 studiój study
 studiues-i scholar -Ø
 stufë-a stove -a
 student-i student studenta ~ studentë
 studenteshë-a female student -a
 suksës-i success -e
 sukull-i dustcloth, rag sukuj
 suljót-i native of Sulh -ë
 sulmój attack
 sy-u eye -Ø
 sykëq-e person with the evil eye
 synohet is intended
 synój aim at, intend
 syza-t (pl. m.) eyeglasses

SH

sharrë-a saw -a
 sharrój saw
 shat-i hoe shetën (shetër) ~ shata
 shatórr-i tent -a
 shë-u torrent shena (shera)
 shëf-i chief -a
 shëj-i ~ shenjë-a sign shëje ~ shenja
 shekull-i century; world shekuj
 shëmbull-i example shëmbuj

- shes sell
shesh-*i* open area, place (in a city) -*e*
shëshazi openly
shëndoshë, *i-e* healthy
shënó_j note down, mark
shërbë_j serve
shëró_j heal
shi-*u* rain shina (shira) rainfalls
shijshëm, *i/e* shijshme tasty
shikó_j observe, watch
shitës-*i* seller - \emptyset
shkabë-*a* eagle -*a*
shkak-*u* cause, reason shkaqe
shkallë-*a* staircase; balcony - \emptyset
shkamb-*i* (shkëmb-*i*) rock shkambij
(shkëmbinj)
shkambór-*e* (shkëmbór-*e*) rocky
shkarkó_j unload
shkel~shklas walk, tread, step
shkelës-*i* transgressor, violator - \emptyset
shkencë-*a* science -*a*
shkencór-*e* scientific
shkëmbë_j substitute, exchange
shklas cf. shkel
Shkodër-Shkodra (Albanian city)
shkodrán-*i* native of Shkodra -ë
shko_j go, pass
shkollë-*a* school -*a*
shkop-*i* stick shkopij (shkopinj)
shkrep come to mind; strike, firt, shoot
shkresë-*a* document
shkrim-*i* writing -*e*
shkret forsaken, alone
shkretnó_j~shkretó_j devastate
shkrij melt
shkrimtár-*i* writer -ë
shkroje-*a* letter (of the alphabet) -*a*
shkruej (shkruej) write
shkuar, *i-e* past
shkuem, *i/e* shkueme past
shkúeme-shkúemja, *e* the past të - \emptyset
shkurt shortly
shkurt-*i* (Geg fror-*i*) February
shkurtó_j shorten
shlidh cf. çlidh
shlodhem cf. çlodhem
shlligë-*a* viper -*a*
shoh see
shok-*u* comrade -ë cf. shoq
shoq-*i* comrade shokë
shoqe-shoqja female comrade - \emptyset ; *e*
shoqja his wife
shoqërór-*e* social
- shoqi, *i* her husband
shpejt soon
shpejtë, *i-e* quick
shpellë-*a* cave, grotto -*a*
shpesh often
shpërbjë ransom, pay off
shpërkó_j gin cotton; scatter seed,
disseminate
shpërláj rinse
shpëtó_j save, escape
shpie carry
shportë-*a* basket -*a*
shqá-*u* Slav shqe
shqarh-*i* marten shqerth
shqetësó_j disturb
shqip-*e* Albanian
shqipe-shqipja Albanian (language)
Shqipni-*a* (Shqipëri-*a*) Albania
shqiptár-*i* Albanian -ë
shqiptó_j utter, pronounce
shquej (shquaj) distinguish, discern;
make definite
shqyej rip
shqyrtím-*i* examination, analysis -*e*
shqyrtó_j analyze, characterize
shregullim-*i* confusion -*e*
shtatór-*i* September
shtatë seven
shtatëdhjetë seventy
shtazë-*a* animal - \emptyset
shteg-*u* path shtigje
shtet-*i* state -*e*
Shtetet e Bashkúara (Geg Bashkúeme)
United States
shtesë-*a* increase, expansion -*a*
shtetëror-*e* state
shitëpi-*a*~shpi-*a* house - \emptyset
shtëpiák-*e* domestic
shtie put in
shtoj expand; add, increase, augment
shtojzovallë-shtojzovallja mountain
fairy, oread - \emptyset
shtrëmbët, *i-e* oblique
shtresë-*a* layer, stratum, social class -*a*
shtresó_j stratify
shtrij spread out
shtrigë-*a* witch -*a*
shtunë-*a*, *e* Saturday të -*a*
shuej (shuaj) put out, extinguish, shut
off
shumë much
shumëkúsh many
shumëzim-*i* multiplication -*e*

shumëzòj multiply
shurdhë, 1-e deaf
shurdhân-e deaf
shurdhòj deafen

T

tagër-tagri right, tax tagra
takòj meet
takón, më it belongs to me
talént-i talent -e
tani now
tash now
te prep. with Nom. near, at, to
teatër-teatri theater teatra
tehú until now
tek cf. te
teket, më I feel like
televizión-i television -e
televizór-i tv apparatus -ë
tepër very, too much
terezi-a tailor -Ø (cf. rrobaqepës)
terr-i darkness
tesha-t (pl. f.) clothes
teshtij sneeze
tetë eight
tetëdhjetë eighty
teto-tëtoja aunt -Ø
tetór-i October
tëllana-t (të lëna-t) (pl. f.) food remains
terheq ~ tërhjek pull out, withdraw
ti you (sg.)
tij, 1-e saj his
tillë, 1-e such
tipár-i characteristic -e
tiranasi native of Tirana -Ø
titull-i title tituj
tjetërkúsh another
tjetërsòj transform, transfer
tjetri tjetra another (m. - f)
tkurr draw together, contract
tokë-a earth, land -a
tokësór-e earthly
torbë-a bag -a
toskë-a (m.) Tosk -Ø
trá-u beam trena (trerë ~ trarë)
traditë-a tradition -a
trajtë-a shape, form -a
transkribim-i transcription -e
tre m. tri f. three
trefish triple
trefishòj triple
tregëtar-i businessman -e

tregòj show, tell
tren-i train -a
treqind three hundred
tretë, 1-e third
tridhjetë (Geg tridhetë) thirty
trim-i brave man, hero -a
trishtim-i gloom -e
trokás knock (at a door)
trupshkurtë small in stature
trýezë-a table -a
tu cf. te
tubë-a group, crowd, band, bunch, -a
tue particle for participle
tul-i flesh
tund shake
turfullòj snort
turí-ni (turi-rí) snout turij (turinj)
turr-i rush -e
turrem rush, set upon
tutje cf. atjë
tym-i smoke
tymtòj go up in smoke
tyne (tyre), 1-e their

TH

thanë ~ thanun, 1-e (1-e thenë) said
thanje-a (thënie-a) proverb -Ø
thark-u pen, fold tharqe
tharm-i sourdough, ferment -e
thatán-e scrawny
thatë, 1-e barren, dry
thej ~ thyej break
thekën-thekna (thekër-thekra) rye
thekshëm, 1 e thekshme piercing
thellë, 1-e deep
thellësi-a depth -Ø
them ~ thom say
themël-i basis, foundation -e
themelòj found, establish
thermë-thermit, të (n.) stab of pain
ther pierce
thertore-thertorja butcher shop
thes-i sack thasë
thërmaqe-t (pl. f.) groats, semolina,
ground rice
thërras ~ thirr summon, call
thi-u pig -Ø
thias obstinately
thikë-a knife -a
thirr cf. thërras
thurrje-a invitation -Ø
thithëlöpë-a toad -a

thue-thoni ~ thoi (thua-thoi) nail thoj
(thonj)
thuhet ~ thonë it is said

U

u (reflexive) myself, yourself, etc
û-ja cf. uri-a
udhë-a path -Ø
udhëheqës-i leader -Ø
udhëtâr-i traveller -ë
udhëtim-i trip, voyage -c
ujdi-a agreement -Ø
ujdis adjust, bring order
ujë-i water ujna (ujëra) waters
ujësjellës-i aqueduct -Ø
ujk-u wolf ujq
ul lower, bend
ulem bend
ullî-ni (ulli-ri) olive ullij (ullinj)
ullishtë-a olive grove -a
unë I
urdhën-urdhni (urdhër-urdhri) order
urdhna (urdhra)
urë-a bridge -a
uri-a hunger
urôj bless
urtë, i-e intelligent, wise, clever
urti-a intelligence, prudence -Ø
ushtâr-i soldier -ë
ushujzë-a ~ ushujzë-a leech -a
uthull-a vinegar

V

vá-u ford va ~ vana
vajguri petroleum
vajzë-a girl -a
valë-a wave -Ø
valixhe-valixhja suitcase, trunk -Ø
valle-vallja dance, folkdance -Ø
vallëzôj dance
varg-u row, range, series, chain; verse
vargje
varg e varg in series
varrôs bury
vathë-t (vëthe-t) (pl. m.) earrings
vazhdôj continue
vdekje-a death -Ø
vdes ~ des die
vë (vë) put, place
ve-ja (vezë-a) egg -Ø
veç except, besides
veçantë, i-e special, particular

veçôj isolate
veçori-a characteristic -Ø
veçuem, i e veçuem secluded
vegël-vegla tool vegla
vegsh-i pot -a
vegjë-të ~ vëkë-t (pl. m.) weaver's loom
vej, i e vejë (i-e ve) widowed
velet, më it nauseates me
vend-i place -e
vendas-e ~ vendës-e native
vendçe in the native manner
vende-vende here and there
vendôs place; decide
venë-a (verë-a) wine -na (-ra)
vepër-vepra work of art, etc. vepra
verbët, i-e (i-e verbër) blind
verbôj blind
verbuem-e, i-e (i-e verbuar) blinded,
dazzled
verë-a summer -a
verës in the summer
veri-u north
verôr-e summer (adj.)
verza-t (pl. f.) pair of gills
vesë-a dew
vesôn dew falls
vesh draw, pull; dress
vesh-i ear -ë
veshë e ngjeshë dressed and girded
veshket (pl. f.) withers
veshun, i-e (i-e veshur) dressed
vetë self
vetëm only, alone
vetëtôn ~ vetôn lightning flashes
vetimë-a lightning -a
vetimthi like a flash
vetmuem-e, i-e (i-e vetmuar) secluded,
lonely
vetull-a eyelash -a
vetvetja oneself, itself
vëllá-u brother vëllazën ~ vëllezën (vël-
lezër)
vëllavrasje-a fratricide -Ø
vëllazni-të (vëllezëri-të) brotherhoods
vëllazni-a (vëllezëri-a) brotherly rela-
tionship
vëmendje-a attention -Ø
vënë, i-e placed
vëngërâsh-e strabismic
vërëj observe
vërri-ni ~ vërri-a winter places vërri ~
vërrije
vështiret, më it nauseates me

vështirë, i-e difficult
 vij come
 vijóq continue
 violinë-a violin -a
 vise-t (pl. f.) places
 vit-i (Geg vjetë-i) year vjet ~ vjete
 vithe-t (pl. f.) flanks
 vizitë-a visit -a
 vizitór-i visitor -ë
 vjedh steal
 vjedhës-i thief - \emptyset
 vjedhtë, i-e (i-e vjedhur) stealing
 vjedhtas (vjédhuras ~ vjédhurazi) secretary
 vjel reap, harvest
 vjela-t, të (pl. f.) harvested fruit, vintage
 vjerr hang up
 vjeshták-e autumnal
 vjeshtë-a autumn -a
 vjeshtës in the autumn
 vjet last year
 vjetë-i year vjet (cf. vit)
 vjetër, i-e old
 vlerë-a value, worth -a
 vlonják-u native of Vlora -ë
 vlonját-e of Vlora
 Vlorë-a (Albanian city)
 vllah-u Aromun, Vlach vllëh
 vllath-i blood-brother, little brother -ë
 vneshtë-a (vreshtë-a) vineyard -a
 vocërr, i-e tiny
 vogël, i-e small të vogjël (vegjël) m.
 vogla f.
 voj-i (vaj-i) oil vojna-t (vájëra-t)
 kinds of oil
 vonesë-a delay -a
 vonë, i-e late
 vorfën, i-e (i-e varfër) poor; orphaned
 vorrój (varrós) bury
 votër-votra (vatër-vatra) hearth -a
 vráj (vrēj) from
 vras kill
 vrimë-a hole -a (cf. birë)
 vroj observe
 vrojtóq analyze, observe clearly
 vrull-i intensity, élan -e
 vuej (vuaj) suffer
 vúcjtje-a (vúajtje-a) pain - \emptyset
 vulós ~ vulóq stamp, mark, check
 vullnét-i will -e
 vumë, i/e vume placed (cf. vëne)

X

xehë-xehja mine - \emptyset
 xixë-a spark, small spark -a
 xixëllón sparkles

XH

xhakón-i deacon -ë (Geg xhakuc-xhakoni, pl. xhakóq)
 xhixhë-a cf. xixë
 xhvesh cf. zhvesh

Y

ylbër-i rainbow -e
 yll-i star yje ~ yjéz (cf. hyll)
 ynë jonë our
 yt — jote your (sg.)

Z

zâ (zë) seize, catch
 zâ-ni (zë-ri) voice zane (zëra)
 zagár-i hunting dog -ë
 zakón-i law, custom -e
 zakonisht customarily
 zanát-i trade -e
 zanë-a oread, mountain fairy -a
 zbath take off shoes
 zbres descend, subtract
 zbritje-a subtraction - \emptyset
 zbulim-i discovery -e
 zbut soften
 zdërgjáj stretch out
 zdrukthëtár-i carpenter, joiner -ë
 zellshëm, i/e zellshme zealous, eager,
 diligent
 zemër-zemra heart zemra
 zemërbutë (m., f.) merciful
 zemërgúr-e unmerciful
 zeshkán-e brunette
 zeshkët, i-e brown
 zezë, e cf. i zi
 zë gjak haemorrhages
 zë qelb festers
 zëvendësóq replace
 zgjat lengthen
 zgjedh choose, select
 zgjohem wake (reflexive)
 zgjoj wake (active)
 ziej cook
 zi, i/e zezë black

zile-zilja (door) bell -∅	zotohem promise, guarantee
zog-u bird zogj	zyrë-a ~ zyre-zyrja office zyra ~ zyre
zoja, e able, capable të zoja-t	zyrtar-e official
zojë-a (zonjë-a) woman -a	
zorshëm, i/e zorshme difficult	
zorrë-a intestine -∅	
zot-i owner, lord, Mr. zotë ~ zota	
(zotërinj)	zhëg-u heat
zoti, i able, capable të zotët (cf. e	zhgarkój cf. shkarkój
zoja)	zhur-i gravel
zotni-a (zotëri-a) gentleman, master	zhurmë-a noise -a
zotni (zotërinj)	zhvesh ~ çvesh ~ xhvesh undress
zotnoj (zotëroj) possess	zhvillim-i development -e
	zhvillój develop

ZH

The following English-Albanian Glossary does not reproduce all of the words included in the Albanian-English one, but aims rather at selectivity and, within the parameters of the vocabulary covered by the book as a whole, at frequency of usage.

A

above nalt (lart)
 academy akademi-a, - \emptyset
 accuracy saktësi-a, - \emptyset
 acquaintances të njohurit
 advance përparoj
 advise këshillój
 after mbas (pas) with Dat
 afternoon mbasadreke ~ *pasdreke*
 again prapë
 against kundër with Dat.
 agrarian agrár-e
 agreement ujdí-a, - \emptyset
 air ajër-ajri
 air (vb.) ajros
 Albania Shqipni-a (Shqipëri-a)
 Albanian (adj.) shqip-e
 Albanian (noun) shqiptár-i, -ë
 Albanian language shqipe-shqipja
 alcohol alkool-i
 alliance besëlidhje-a, - \emptyset
 also edhe
 although megjithëse
 always gjithmonë, gjithnjë, kurdoherë
 among mes with Dat., ndër with Acc.,
 ndërmjët
 amuse dëfrëj
 analysis shqyrtim-i, -e
 analyze shqyrtój
 anchor spirancë-a, -a
 ancient i-e lashtë, i-e vjetër
 and e, dhe
 animal (livestock) bagëti-a, - \emptyset
 animal shtazë-a, - \emptyset
 antiquity antikitet-i, -e
 anyone ndokush
 apple mollë-a, molla ~ *mollë*
 approach afrój
 approve miratój
 approximately as disesi
 April prill-i
 archeological arkeologjik-e
 area anë-a, -ë, zonë-a, -a
 arm krah-u, -ë

arm (vb.) armatós
 armed armatosun, i-e (i-e armatosur)
 around rreth with Dat.
 arrival mbërritje-a, - \emptyset
 arrive arrij, mbërrij
 article artikull-i, artikuj
 artist artist-i, -ë
 as si, porsí, sikursë
 ascend ngjtem
 ashes hi-ni (hi-ri)
 ask pyes
 attack sulmój
 attention vëmendje-a, - \emptyset
 August gusht-i
 aunt teto-tëtoja, - \emptyset
 autumn vjeshhtë-a, -a; in autumn
 vjeshhtës
 avaricious dorështrejtë-e
 awake çuet
 axe spatë-a, -a

B

bake pjek
 baker bukëpjekës-i, - \emptyset
 barber berbër-i, -ë
 basis themël-i, -e
 bear *arushë-a* ~ harushë-a, -a, ari-u, - \emptyset
 beautiful i-e bukur
 beauty bukuri-a, - \emptyset
 because pse, sepse, nga se, nga që
 bee bltë-a, - \emptyset
 before para ~ përpara with Dat.
 begin fillój
 beginning fillim-i, -e
 behind mbrapa ~ prapa with Dat.
 belief besim-i, -e
 believe besój
 belongs, it b. to me më takón
 below poshtë
 belt brez-i, -a
 beyond matanë
 billion një miliard
 bird zog-u, zogj
 bitter i-e idhët

black 1 zi, e zezë
 bless urój
 blind (adj.) i-e verbët (i-e verbër)
 blind (vb.) verbój
 blinded verbuem-e, i-e (i-e verbuar)
 blood gjak-u
 blood-vengeance gjaqe
 blow fryj
 boat barkë-a, -a
 bone asht-i, eshtna (eshtra)
 born, be lind
 both të dy
 box arkë-a, -a
 boy djalë-i, *djem* ~ djelm
 branch degë-a, - \emptyset
 bread bukë-a
 break thej ~ *thyej*
 bride nuse-nusja, - \emptyset
 bridge urë-a, -a
 bring bie, sjell, mbar
 broad i-e gjanë (i-e gjerë)
 brother vëllá-u, vëllazën ~ vëllezën
 (vëllezër)
 brown i-e zeshkët
 build ndërtój, ngrëh
 burn djeg
 bury vorrój (varrós)
 but por, po
 butcher kasáp-i, -ë
 butcher-shop thertore-thertorja, - \emptyset
 butter gjalpë-i
 buy blej

C

calculate llogaris ~ *llogarit*
 call quej (quaj)
 can mund
 capital kryeqytët-i, -e
 carelessness pakujdesi-a, - \emptyset
 carpenter zdrukthëtár-i, -ë
 carry shpie, bie, sjell, mbar
 cat micë-a (macje-a), -a (- \emptyset)
 catch kap
 cause shkak-u, shkaqe
 center kryeqendër-kryeqendra, - \emptyset
 century shekull-i, shekuj
 chair karrige-karrigia, -e
 chance, by rastësisht
 change ndërrój
 characteristic tipár-i, -e, veçori-a, - \emptyset
 cheese djathë-i
 child fëmijë-a, - \emptyset

choose zgjedh
 circle rreth-i, rrrathë
 citizen nënshitetás-i, - \emptyset
 city qytët-i, -e
 clean pastër, i-e
 climb *hipi* ~ hyp ~ hypi
 clothes tesha-t
 cloud re-ja, - \emptyset
 coast breg-u, brigje
 cold ftohtë-it, të (Geg të ftoftë-t)
 collect mbledh
 color ngjyrë-a, -a
 come vij
 compare krahasój
 comparison krahasim-i, -e
 compatriot bashkatdhetár-i, -ë
 complain ankój
 complaint ankim-i, -e
 complete kryej, sos
 complete (adj.) i-e kryer
 comrade shok-u, -ë
 condition gjendje-a, - \emptyset ; kusht-i, -e
 consent gjegjem
 consequently andáj
 constant përhershëm, i-e përhershme
 constitute përbáj (përbëj)
 content përmbajtje-a, - \emptyset
 continue vijó, vazhdó
 conversation bisedë-a, -a, kuvënd-i, -e
 cook ziej
 cooperation bashkëpunim-i, -e
 count njeh
 courage guxim-i
 cover mbuló
 create krijó
 custom zakón-i, -e
 customarily zakonisht
 cut prej

D

dance (vb) vallëzój
 dance (noun) valle-vallja, - \emptyset
 danger rrezik-u, rreziqe
 dare guxój
 darkness terr-i
 daughter bijë-a, -a
 day ditë-a, dit ~ *ditë*; during the day
 ditën; from day to day dita-ditës
 deaf i-e shurdhë
 deafen shurdhó
 death vdekje-a, - \emptyset
 December dhjetór-i

deep	thellë, i-e	educational	arsimór-e
define	përcaktó j	effort	përpjekje-a, -a; orvatje-a, -ø
delay	vonësë-a, -a	egg	ve-ja (vezë-a), -ø
demand	lyp	eight	tetë
deny	mohó j	eighty	tetëdhjetë
depart	nisem	either . . . or	a, ja, apó, ndo, osc
depth	thellësi-a, -ø	emerge	dal në dukje
descend	zbrës, ulem	end	fund-i, -e
describe	përshkruej (përshkruej)	endless	pafund, i-e
description	përshkrim-i, -e	England	Angli-a
despite	megjithatë, prapëseprapë	English, in	anglisht
destroy	shkatërroj, rrënoj	enough	mjaft
determine	aktó j	enter	hy(j) (Geg hy)
develop	zhvilló j	establish	themeló j
development	zhvillim, -e	Europe	Evropë-a
die	vdes	European	evropian-i, -ë
difference	ndryshim-i, -e	even	bile
different	ndryshëm, i-e ndryshme	even if	sadó
difficult	i-e veshtirë, i zorshëm — e zorshme	evening	mbramje-a (mbrëmje-a), -ø, in the evening mbramjet (mbrëmanet)
diligent	punëtór-e	event	ngjarje, -ø
discovery	zbulim-i, -e	every	secili-secila
discussion	diskutim-i, -e	everyone	gjithëkush, çdokush
distance	largësi-a, -ø	everything	gjithçka ~ gjithshkà
distant	i-e largët	everywhere	kudó, gjithkund
distinguish	dalló j, shquej (shquaj)	evil	i keq - e keqe, të këqij (këqimj) m., të këqia f.
district	krahinë-a, -a	except	veç, pos with Dat
district (administrative)	rreth-i, -e	example	shembull-i, shembu
disturb	shqetësó j	exchange	këmbëj
divide	ndaj	exclude	përjashtó j
dog	qen-i, qenë ~ qej (qenj)	exit	dalje-a, -ø
domestic	shtëpiak-e	expand	përháp, shtrij
door	derë-a, dyer	expansion	përhapje-a, -ø
draw on	vesh	extract	nxjerr
dream	andërró j (ëndërró j)	eye	sy-u, -ø
dream (noun)	andërr-andrra (ëndërr-ëndrra), andrra (ëndrra)	eyeglasses	syza-t
dress	petk-u, -a		
dress (vb)	veshem		
dry	thatë, i-e		
duty	detyrë-a, -a		
dwell	banó j		
	E		
each	gjithëcili-gjithëcila	face	faqe-faqja, -ø
eagle	shkabë-a, -a	factory	fabrikë-a, -a
ear	vesh-i, -ë	faithfulness	besniki-a (besnikëri-a) -ø
early	hershëm, i-e hershme	fall	bie
earth	dhe-u, tokë-a, -a	fame	famë-a
east	lindje-a, -ø	family	familje-a, -ø
eat	ha	far	larg
economy	ekonomi-a, -ø	father	atë-i, etën (etër)
		fatherland	atdhë-u
		fear	drue (druaj)
		fear (noun)	frigë-a ~ frikë-a
		February	shkurt-i (Geg fror-i)
		feel	ndiej

feel like, I më teket
 fever ethe-t
 field fushë-a, -a
 fifty pesëdhjetë
 find gjej
 finish sos, mbaroj
 first i-e parë
 five pesë
 fixed kaktuem-e, i-e (i-e caktuar)
 flag flamur-i, flamuj
 flame flakë-a, -
 flee *iki* ~ ik ~ ikën
 flight fluturim-i, -e; in flight fluturim-
 thi ~ *fluturim*
 flour miell-i
 flower lule-lulja, -
 fly fluturój
 fog mjegull-a, -a
 folksong kangë (këngë) popullore, -
 food të ngranë-t (të ngrënë-t)
 foot kambë-a (këmbë-a)
 for për with Acc.
 force fuqi-a, -
 forehead ballë-i, -
 foreign i-e huej (i-e huaj)
 forest pyll-i, pyje
 forty dyzë (Geg katërdhjetë)
 foundation themelim-i, -e
 four katër
 freedom liri-a, -
 Friday e premte-premtja (Geg e
 prende-prendja), të -e
 friend mik-u, miq
 friendship miqësi-a, -
 frighten frikësój
 from nga with Nom., prej with Abl.
 front, in përpara
 frost brymë-a
 full plot, i-e mbushun (i-e mbushur)
 funds fonde

G

game lojë-a, lojna (lojra)
 garden kopsht-i, -e
 Geg gegë-a, -
 general, in përgjithësisht
 generosity bujari-a, -
 generous bujër-e, fisnik
 girl vajzë-a, -a
 give jap ~ ap
 glass gotë-a, -a
 go shkoj

God Perëndi-a
 gold ar-i
 golden i-e artë
 good i-e mirë
 grain drithë-i
 grass bar-i
 green gjelbër, i-e
 greet përshëndës
 group grup-i, -e
 grow rrit-em

H

hail breshën-i (breshër-breshri)
 half gjysmë-a, -a
 hammer çekán-i, -ë
 hand dorë-a, duer (duar)
 handsome i hieshëm -e hieshme
 hang up vjerr
 happens ndodh, ngjan
 happy i-e lumtur (i-e lumtur)
 damage dam-i (dëm-i), -e
 hay sanë-a, -a
 head krye-kreu ~ krye-kreja, krena ~
 krenë (krera ~ krerë); kokë-a, -a
 healthy i-e shëndoshë
 hear ndëgjój ~ ndigjój ~ *dëgjój*
 heart zemër-zemra, zemra
 hearth votër-votra (vatër-vatra), -a
 heat zheg-u
 heavy i-e randë (i-e rëndë)
 height naltësi-a (lartësi-a)
 help ndihmój
 helper ndihmës-i, -
 here këtú
 hero trim-i, -a
 high naltë, i-e (i-e lartë)
 hill kodër-kodra, kodra
 hinder pengój
 hole birë-a, -a
 honor nderë-i ~ nder-i
 honorable i ndershëm — e ndershme
 horse kalë-i, kual (kuaj)
 hour orë-a, -
 house *shtëpi-a* ~ shpi-a -
 housewife amvisë-a, -a
 how si, siç
 how much sa
 hundred njëqind (Geg njëqind)
 hunger uri-a
 hunt gjuej (gjuaj)
 hunter gjuetar-i ~ gjahtar-i, ë

I

I unë
 if nësë, sikur
 in në with Acc.
 in order that që të
 income të ardhuna-t
 inform lajmëroj, njoftoj
 inhabitant banor-i, -ë
 insert shtie, këllás
 inside mbrenda (brenda) with Dat.
 intelligence urti-a, - \emptyset
 intelligent i-e urtë
 intend synoj
 intention qëllim-i, -e
 invitation thirrje-a, - \emptyset
 invite *grish* ~ gërshás
 iron i-e hekurt

J

January janár-í (Geg kallnór-í)
 joy gëzim-i, -e
 July korrik-u
 June qershór-í
 just pikërisht
 justice drejtësi-a, - \emptyset

K

keep mbaj
 kill *mbyt* ~ mbys, vras
 king mbret-i, mbretën (mbretër)
 kitchen kuzhinë-a, -a
 knife thikë-a, -a
 know di
 know (be acquainted with) njoh

L

large i madh e madhe, të mëdhëj
 (mëdhënj) m. të mëdha f.
 last i-e fundit
 late i-e vonë
 laugh qesh
 law ligj-i, -ë
 lead prij, kryesoj
 leader udhëheqës-i, - \emptyset
 learn nxá (nxë), mësoj
 left i-e majtë; to the left majtas
 lengthen zgjat
 lessen pakësój
 lesson mësim-i, -e
 let lá (lë)

letter letër-letra, letra
 library bibliotekë-a, -a
 lie gënjëj
 life jetë-a, -ë; gjallnesë-a, -a
 lift ngre
 light dritë-a, -a
 light (in weight) i-e lehtë
 like, I më pëlqën
 limit cak-u, caqë
 lip buzë-a, -a
 little pak; less më (më) pak
 live jetój, gjallnoj, rroj (Geg rrojoj)
 living gjallë. i-e
 load barrë-a, - \emptyset
 long gjatë. i-e
 look! qe!
 lose humb ~ humbas
 love (vb.) dashurój
 love (noun) dashuni-a (dashuri-a), - \emptyset
 lower *fundos* ~ fundój

M

mainly kryesisht
 make bëj (bëj)
 man burrë-i, -a
 manhood burrní-a (burrëri-a), - \emptyset
 manner mënyrë-a, -a
 many-sided gjithanshëm, i-e gjithan-
 shme
 March mars-i
 marriage martesë-a, -a
 marry martój
 matter send-i, -e
 May maj-í
 meadow livádh-i, -e
 meal gjellë-a - \emptyset
 meat mish-i
 medicine barna (bàrëra) (pl.)
 medicine (science of) mjekësi-a, - \emptyset
 meet takój
 meeting mbledhje-a, - \emptyset
 memory kujtim-i, -e
 mentality botëlkuptim-i, -e
 middle i ndërmjemë — e ndërmjeme
 midnight *mesnatë-a* ~ mjesnatë-a, -a
 milk qumësht-i
 million një milión
 minute minút-i, -a
 Monday e hanë-a (e hënë-a), të -a
 money të holla-t
 month muej-i (muaj-i), - \emptyset
 moon hanë-a (hënë-a)

morning mëngjës-i, -e
 mother e amë-a (e ëma), t'ama-t
 (t'ëma-t); nanë-a (nënë-a), -a
 mountain mal-i, -e
 mountainous region malësi-a, -
 mouth gojë-a, -
 move lëviz
 much shumë
 mud baltë-a
 must, I më duhet
 must, it lypet ~ lipset

N

name emën-emni (emër-emra), emna
 (emra)
 national kombëtar-e
 naturally natyrisht
 native anas-e, vendas-e ~ vendës-e
 near pranë with Dat., afër with Dat.,
 te ~ tek with Nom.
 neighbor fqj-ni ~ fqj-u, fqij ~ fqinjë
 neighborhood lagje-lagjja, -
 neither ... nor as ... as
 nephew nip-i, -a
 nest çerdhe-çerdhja, -
 nevertheless mirëpó
 new i ri — e re, të rij (rinj) m. — të
 reja f.
 newspaper gazetë-a, -a
 niece mbesë-a, -a
 night natë-a, net — def. netët
 nine nandë (nëndë ~ nëntë)
 ninety nandëdhjetë (nëntëdhjetë)
 no jo
 no one asnjëri, askush, kurrkush,
 mosnjëri
 noise zhurmë-a, -a
 noon mjesditë-a, -a
 north veri-u
 nose hundë-a, -
 not nuk, as, s', jo; mos
 not only jo vetëm
 nothing asgjë (asgjë), kurrgjë
 November nandó-i (nëntó-i)
 now tash, tani
 nowhere askúnd

O

oath betim-i, -e, bé-ja, -
 observe vëréj
 occasion rast-i, -e
 October tetó-i

office zyrë-a ~ zyre-zyrja, zyra ~ zyre
 official zyrtár-e
 often shpesh
 oil voj-i (vaj-i)
 old vjetër, i-e
 old age pleqëri-a, -
 old man plak-u, pleq
 on mbi with Acc.
 once dikúr
 one një (Geg nji)
 only vetëm
 open hap
 opposite përballë with Dat.
 order urdhën-urdhni (urdhër-urdhri),
 urdhna (urdhna)
 orphaned jetim-e; i-e vorfën (i-e varfër)
 ostensibly gjoja
 other tjetër
 outside jashtë with Dat.
 over maje ~ majë with Dat.
 over along për krye with Gen
 owner zot-i, zotë ~ zota (zotërinj)

P

pain vúejtje-a (vúajtje-a), -
 pardon falje-a, -
 parent prind-i, prindë (prindër)
 park park-u, parke ~ parqe
 part pjesë-a, -
 participant pjesëmarrës-i, -
 past i-e shkuar, i shkuem — e shkueme
 past, the shkúeme-shkúemja, e, të -
 path shteg-u, shtigje; udhë-a, -
 patience durim-i, -e
 patient, be durój
 patriot atdhetár-i, -ë
 pay paguej (paguaj)
 peace paqe-paqja ~ pagjë-a
 pear dardhë-a, -a
 peasant fshatár-i, katundár-i, -ë
 people njerëzi-a; popull-i, popuj
 pepper spec-i, -a
 perfect përsós
 permitted i lejuëshëm - e lejuëshme
 person njëri-u, njerëz
 personality figurë-a, -a
 pharmacy farmaci-a, -
 physician mjek-u, -ë
 piece copë-a; in pieces copa-copa
 pierce ther
 pity, I më dhimbet
 place vendós

place (noun) vend-1, -e
 play luej (luaj)
 polite i sjellshëm — e sjellshme
 poor 1-e vorfër (1-e varfën)
 possible 1-e mundun (1-e mundur)
 poverty mjerim-i, -e
 preparation *përgatitje-a* ~ *pregatitje-a*,
 - \emptyset
 prepare *përgatit* ~ *pregatis*
 present dhuratë-a, -a
 production prodhim-i, -e
 promise zotohem
 pronounce shqiptoj
 protect *mbroj* ~ *mproj*
 protection *mbroje-a*, *mbrojtje-a*, - \emptyset
 proud krenar
 publication botim-i, -e
 publish botoj
 pull heq ~ hjek
 pupil nxanës-i (nxënës-i), - \emptyset
 put vë (vë)

Q

quality cilësi-a, - \emptyset
 quantity sasi-a, - \emptyset
 quarter çerëk-u, -ë
 question çashtje-a ~ *çështje-a*, - \emptyset ; *pýc-*
tje-pýetja, - \emptyset
 quick 1-e shpejtë
 quite krejt

R

race fis-i, -e
 rain shi-u
 rainbow ylbër-1
 reason arsytëj
 reasonable i arsýeshëm — e arsýeshme
 recently rishtas
 red i kuq — e kuqe
 regret pendohem
 regularly rregullisht
 relationship gjini-a (gjiri-a), - \emptyset
 relatives të afërm-it
 remain mbes
 remember kujtohem
 remind kujtoj
 repair ndreq, kurdís
 repeat përsëris, stërthóm
 replace zëvendësój
 request kërkesë-a, -a
 resist qindrój
 respect ndërim-i, -e; sajdi-a, - \emptyset

respect (vb.) nderój, respektój
 rest pushój, çlodhem
 return kthej
 return (noun) kthim-1, -e
 reveal çfaq ~ *shfaq*
 rich 1-e pasun (1-e pasur)
 right 1-e drejtë
 right 1-e djathtë; to the right djathtas
 rise çohem
 river lumë-1, lumëj (lumënj)
 rope sixhim-1, -a
 road drom-1, -e
 rock shkamb-1 (shkëmb-1), shkambij
 (shkëmbinj)
 room dhomë-a, -a
 row rresht-1, -a
 rule rregull-a, -a
 rule zotnój (zotërój)
 run bredh

S

salt *kripë-a* ~ *krypë-a*
 same 1-e njëjtë; 1-e njëlojtë
 Saturday e shtunë-a, të -a
 savant dies-1, - \emptyset ; djetar-1, -ë
 say them ~ thom
 school shkollë-a, -a
 science shkencë-a, -a
 scientific shkencór-e
 scissors gërshanë-a (gërshërë-a), - \emptyset
 sea det-1, *dete* ~ *detna* (detra)
 seaman detar-1, -ë
 secret fshehtësi-a ~ *fshehtësi-a*, - \emptyset
 see shoh
 seems, it s. to me më duket
 seize zã (zë)
 self vetë
 sell shes
 send dërgój, çoj
 sensitive ndieshëm, 1-e ndieshme
 sentence fjali-a, - \emptyset
 September shtator-1
 series varg-u, vargie; in series varg e
 varg
 seven shtatë
 seventy shtatëdhjetë
 several disã (ca)
 sew qep
 shallow 1-e cekët
 shape formój
 shape (noun) trajtë-a, -a
 shave rruaj (rruaj)

thirst et-1 ~ *etje-etja*
 thirty tridhjetë
 this ky (m.) — kjo (f.)
 thousand njëmijë (Geg njëmijë)
 three tre (m.) — tri (f.)
 throat qafë-a, -a
 through nëpër with Acc.
 throw *hedh* ~ *hjedh*, flak
 throw away flakëroj
 Thursday e ëjte-ëjtja (e enjte-enjtja),
 të-ø

thus këshutë
 time herë-a, -ø; from time to time
 herë pas here
 time kohë-a, -ø (Geg kohna)
 tired lodhur, i-e (i-e lodhur)
 tobacco duhân-1
 today sot
 together bashkë
 tomorrow nesër
 too much tepër
 tool vegël-vegla, vegla
 tooth dhamb-1 (dhëmb-i), -ë
 Tosk toskë-a, -ø
 touch përkás, prek
 trade zanát-i, -e
 tradition traditë-a, -a
 transform shndërrój, tjetërsój
 translate përkthëj
 travel nisem, udhëtój
 traveller udhëtár-i, -ë
 tree lis-1, -a
 trip udhëtim-i, -e
 Tuesday e martë-a, të -a
 turn sjell
 twenty njëzëttë
 twin binjók-u ~ *binjak-u*, -ë
 twist dredh
 two dy

U

under nën with Acc.
 understand kuptój
 understanding arsyë-arsyjeja, -ø
 undoubtedly padyshim
 undress *zhvesh* ~ *çvesh* ~ *xhvesh*
 unfortunately mjerisht
 unite bashkój
 United States Shtetet e Bashkúara
 (Geg Bashkúeme)
 unity bashkim-i, -e
 unknown i-e panjoftun ~ i-e panjohun
 (i-e panjohur)

unmerciful zemërgúr-e
 until derisá (gjersá)
 up përpjetë
 up to deri (gjer)
 upper i sipërm e sipërme
 use përdór, përdorój
 use (noun) përdorim-i, -e
 useful i dobishëm — e dobishme

V

valley luginë-a, -a
 value çmoj
 value (noun) vlerë-a, -a
 vegetation bimësi-a, -ø
 viewpoint pikëpamje-a, -ø
 village katúnd-i, -e, fshat-i, -ra
 villager katundár-i, -ë, fshatár-i, -ë
 visit vizitë-a, -a
 visitor vizitór-i, -ë
 voice zâ-ni (zë-ri), -ne (-re)

W

waist bel-1, -a
 wait pres
 wake (reflexive) zgjohem
 wake (active) zgjoj
 walk eci ~ ec ~ ecën
 wall mur-1, -e
 want due (dua)
 war luftë-a, -a
 warmth nxehë-it, të
 wash laj
 watch *mbikëqyr*, mbikqyr
 water ujë-1
 way, in that ashtú
 weather mot-1, -e
 wedding *dasmë-a* ~ *darsmë-a*, -a
 Wednesday e mërkurë-a, të -a
 week javë-a, -ø
 weep qaj
 west perëndim-i
 what *çka* (Geg shka)
 what? çfarë?
 what? (for quantities or numbers)
 sati-a, i-e
 when kur
 where ku
 which cili — cila
 which (rel.) që
 while ndërsá, kursë
 white i-e bardhë
 who? kush

whoever	kushdó	work (of art, etc.)	vepër-vepra, vepra
why	pse	worker	punëtor-i, -ë
will	vullnët-i, -e	world	botë-a, <i>bota</i> ~ botë (Geg botna)
wind	erë-a, erna (ërëra)	worsen	stërkëq
wine	venë-a (verë-a), -na (-ra)	write	shkruej (shkruaj)
winter	dimën-dimni (dimër-dimri), dimna (dimra)	writer	shkrimtar-i, -ë
with me	with Acc.		
without	pa with Acc.		
witness	dëshimój		
witness (noun)	dëshmitar-i, -e	year	<i>vit-i</i> (Geg vjetë-i), vjet ~ vjete; this year <i>sivjët</i>
wolf	ujk-u, ujq	yes	po
woman	grue-ja (grua-ja), gra	yesterday	dje
wood	drù-druni (dru-ri), druj (drunj ~ drurë); dru-ja, -ø	yet	akoma, endë
wool	lesh-i	you	ti (sg.), ju (pl.)
woollen	i-e leshtë	youth	djelmëni-a (djemuri-a ~ djalëri-a)
word	fjalë-a, -ø		
work	punój		
work	punë-a, -ø		

Y

Z

zealous i zellshëm e zellshme

SUBJECT INDEX

[The numbers in this index refer to **pages**; those in **boldface** indicate the places where the **grammatical phenomena** are exhaustively treated.]

- Ablative 33, 36, 41, 72, 100, 109, 273, 280, 289
Ablaut 75, 205 (cf. Apophony)
Absolute 130
Abstract 19, 27, 38, 78
Accent xvii, 53 (cf. Stress)
Accusative 32, 55, 57, 178, 281, 286
Active 126, **191**, 216
Actual 149, 163
Additive (number) 83, **88**
Adjective 38, **47**; (formation) 48; (declension) 50; (comparative) 59; (superlative) 60
Admirative 126, **163**, 173, 179, 187, 198
Adverb **63**; (comparative) 67; (superlative) 68
Adversative (clause) 242
Affix 93
Affricate 3, 4
Alternation (vowel) 75, 91, 93, **127**, 191, 196, 206, 278 (cf. apophony, metaphony); (consonant) 127, 171, 174, 181 (cf. palatalization, assimilation)
Ambigeneric 19, 24
Analytic(al) 129, 136, 142, 151, 193
Aorist 172, 208, 271; (asigmatic) 186; (sigmatic) 195, 276
Apodosis 252
Apophony **127**, 168, 170 (cf. Ablaut)
Article 11, **15**, (postpositive) 16, 17, (prepositive) 44, 50, 55, 103; (indefinite) 35, 84, 276
Asigmatic 186 (cf. Aorist)
Aspect 148, 150
Assibilation 171
Assimilation 32, 129, 169, 171, 177, 186
Attributive (clause) 248
Augment 178, 191, 285 (cf. Infix)
Auxiliary **130**, 165, 167, 179, 191, 202
Borrowing xiv (cf. Loanword)
Cacuminal 8, 282
Case **32**; (syntagm) 42
Causal (clause) 248
Causative 154
Clause 234, **242**
Change (phonemic) **4**, 7, 297
Collective 19, **25**, 28, 78, 122
Comparative **59**, 60, 67; (clause) 255
Compensatory (length) 14
Complement 233
Composite 49, **76**, 118
Compound 49, 67, 95, 122
Concessive (clause) 254
Conditional 126, **160**, 166, 279
Conjugation 167, 173, 180, **216**
Consonant **1**, 10; (system) 3
Correlation (sound) 3, (temporal degree) 153
Correlative (clause) 243
Dative 36 (cf. Case)
Declension **30**, 33, 38; (morpheme) 32, 40; (definite) 19, 30, (indefinite)
Degree 67 (cf. Comparative, Superlative)
Deliberative 159
Demonstrative (pronoun) 35
Determinate (noun) 15, (adjective) 55, 58; (pronoun) 92
Diacritics xvii
Diminutive 79
Diphthong 1, 3, 7; (diphthongization) 7, 8, 34, **128**, 196
Disappearance 8, 43
Disjunctive (clause) 243
Distributive 88
Doublet 147, 233
Dual 28
Durative 291
Elative 67, 69, 87
Ellipsis 236
Elimination (cf. Disappearance) 8, 32, 126, 297
Emphasis 86, 94, 99, 109, 122, 149, 162, 206 (cf. Expressive)
Enclitic 94, 98

- Ending (case) **31**, 35, 40, 43, 48; (ad-
jectival) 51; (verbal) 172, 188, 195,
208
- Epenthetic 32
- Equality (degree) 118
- Exclamation 58
- Expressive 79, 93 (cf. Emphasis)
- Fossilized (form) 147, 165
- Fricative 3, 4
- Future 152, 156
- Gender **10**, 13, 51
- Gentive (cf. Case) 36, 273
- Gerund(ive) 127, 150, 165, 277, 281,
292
- Greek (loanword) 35, 213
- Habitual 150, 163, 276
- Hybrid 50, 135, 194, 208, 233
- Hypothetical 162
- Imperative 127, 173, 176, 181
- Imperfect 160, 183, 281
- Imperfective 150, 151
- Impersonal 135, 153, 155, 199
- Inalienable 240
- Inchoative 172
- Indefinite (article) **10**, 11, 32; (pro-
noun) 120
- Indicative 173
- Infinitive xii, 126, 129, 152, 155, 165,
173
- Ingressive 160, 172
- Indirect (cf. Speech)
- Indo-European xiii, 91
- Initial 281 (cf. Ingressive)
- Infix 127, 168, 177, 211, 212 (cf. Aug-
ment)
- Instrumental 241
- Intransitive 190
- Italian (loanword) 282
- Iterative 208
- Jussive 154
- Lateral 3
- Latin 13, 277
- Length (vowel) xvii, 14 (cf. Quality)
- Loanword 13, 14, 35, 213, 282 (cf.
Borrowing)
- Loan-translation 76
- Locative 32, 36 (cf. Case)
- Medio-passive 190, 196
- Metaphony 24, **127** (cf. Umlaut)
- Modal(ity) 97, **136**, 148, 153, 237;
(clause) 253
- Mood 159
- Monophthongization 7, 8, **128**
- Morpheme (connective) 42, **44**, 106;
(pronoun) 108; (declension) 32
- Morphology 10
- Multiplicative 82
- Nasal xii, xvii, 1, 5, 7, 10, 15, 168;
(unnasalized) 34
- Necessity (cf. Modal)
- Neuter 5, **11**, 16; (declension) 31, 32,
35, 41; (adjective) **57**; (pronoun) 94,
99 100, 104
- Neutral (vowel) 13
- Nomina agentis 21, 76
- Nominalized (adjective) 38, 85, 102;
(pronoun) 110, 122
- Noun **10**; (formation) 74; (familial re-
lationship) 38, 102, 111; (cf. nomi-
nalized adjective) 102
- Number **82**; (cardinal) 83; (ordinal)
85; (partitive) 87; (multiplicative) 87;
(singular) 27; (plural) 38
- Object (double) 94, **239**, 272; (clause)
247
- Optative 126, 162, 173, 187, 276
- Oral 3, 5, 8 (cf. Nasal)
- Ordinal (number) 82
- Palatalization 3, 23, 24, 53, 129, 191,
280
- Participle xii, 54, 127, 169, 237, 273,
278
- Particle 106, 152, 202; (verbal) 150,
154
- Partitive 152, 154, 196, 202; (verbal)
154; (number) 82
- Passato dubitativo 151
- Passive 91, 191, 216
- Perfect **151**, 162, 277, 280
- Perfective 152, 172
- Periphrastic (verb) 164, 277
- Phonology 1, 8; (phonemic — assimi-
lation) 4
- Pluperfect I 152
- Pluperfect II 152
- Plural 13, 18, 23; (indefinite) 19; (defi-
nite 26, 28)
- Possessive 102
- Possibility (modal) 148, 155, 162, 166
- Predicate 233
- Prefix 38, 52, 77; (verbal) 206, 209
- Preposition 63, **69**
- Present xii, 278; (historical) 163
- Primary (adjective) 38
- Privative 130
- Probability 151

- Prohibitive (particle) 159, 162, 166
 Progressive 130
 Pronoun 39, 90; (personal) 92; (reflexive) 96; (demonstrative) 98; (possessive) 102, 109, 272; (relative) 116; (indefinite) 118, 122; (reciprocal) 121
 Prosody 8
 Protasis 252
 Purposive (clause) 254
 Quality 128 (quantity *long/short*) 6, 7, 8, 82, 93, 108, 168, 171
 Reciprocal 121 (cf. Pronoun)
 Reduplication 66, 69, 91, 210
 Reflexive 95, 96, 193, (reflexive possessive) 110
 Relative 117 (cf. Pronoun)
 Relevance (phonological) 7
 Resultative (clause) 244
 Rhotacism xii
 Sentence 233
 Semantic 54, 147, 192
 Sigmatic 186, 276 (cf. Aorist)
 Singular 13, 113
 Slavic 80, 289
 Sonant 3, 75
 Sounds 1; (shift) 40 (cf. Metaphony)
 Stems 35 (pronominal) 65, 115; (verbal) 191
 Speech (direct, indirect) 256
 Stop 3
 Stress xvii, 3, 13, 19, 20, 91
 Subject 233; (clause) 246
 Subjunctive xii, 97, 126, 268, 279
 Suffix 48, 49, 64, 77, 85, 127
 Superlative 69
 Suppletive (verb) 229
 Synchrony 31, 91, 95, 128
 Syntagm 41, 50, 99; (declension) 43
 Syntax 233; (coordinate clause) 242, (subordinate clause) 245; (indirect speech) 256
 Synthetic 172 (cf. Analytic)
 Temporal (clause) 248
 Tense 148, 151
 Turkish 3, 213
 Umlaut (cf. Metaphony); (in the declension) 39
 Verb 126, 209, (auxiliary) 130; (modal) 136; (tense) 159; (conjugation) 172; (impersonal) 199; (verb formation) 205; (irregular) 228
 Vibrant 2
 Vigesimal (number) 83
 Vocative 36
 Velar 8
 Vowel 5
 Weak (form) 94
 Word-formation xvi, 40, 53, 54, 74, 205
 Word order 39, 43, 55, 58, 99, 112, 162, 245